



# CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 04

*Xin Xing Xiao Yao*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

# Synopsis

---

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: The Terrifying Seal Of Treasure Mountain

---

“I didn’t think you would even know about the Seal of Treasure Mountain our Shi family took possession of a few dozen years ago.” Shi Xiangran laughed darkly.

Immediately putting away her longbow on her back, she continued to run before turning her head towards Jian Chen as she called out to him, “Scoundrel, we have to run!” Even as she cried out to him, she was already running far away with a panicked look.

Jian Chen looked at the frantic girl with some confusion. He was completely puzzled, could the iron chunk in Shi Xiangran’s hand contain some sort of terrifying power?

Despite the confusion, Jian Chen knew that he was completely unaware of whatever secret it might contain. Without any hesitation, he turned and began to run from Shi Xiangran.

“Hmph, with the Seal of Treasure Mountain, you shouldn’t even think about escaping!” Shi Xiangran’s face grew dark as he threw the iron chunk into the air.

As soon as it flew into the air, the iron chunk began to transform into a hundred meter long circumference iron seal as it flew toward Jian Chen’s head at an inconceivable speed.

Jian Chen’s eyes widened as he stared in complete shock at the

base of the pitch black iron seal. He couldn't believe what he was seeing; Jian Chen could swear that he had never once seen or heard about something like this before.

“Just what is this eccentric item?” Jian Chen thought with shock and curiosity.

However, the floating iron seal didn't give Jian Chen any time to think, and immediately came down on Jian Chen with a huge amount of pressure.

It was with a startling realization that Jian Chen had finally figured out the secret behind the iron seal. This was used for smashing people. If anyone were to be smashed by this, then they would take a tremendous amount of damage.

Jian Chen quickly ran outside. The hundred meter long circumference iron seal descended so quickly that before Jian Chen had even run 20 meters outwards, the iron seal was already falling down towards his head.

With an explosive shout, Jian Chen brought his Saint Weapon up against the base of the iron seal in hopes of slowing its descent.

Just then, the density of the iron seal far outweighed the force Jian Chen exerted. With a bang, the seal slammed Jian Chen's body down through the earth, leaving behind an unbelievably deep crater.

In front, the shocked girl saw that Jian Chen had been pressed into the ground. Flustered, she stopped running and immediately cursed out loud, “You scoundrel, how could you be this stupid? I told you to run, but you stood there like an idiot. An idiot’s death! That’s what you deserve!”

“Hmph, you dared to go against our Shi family, so this is where you depart from life and die like the beggar you are.” Shi Xiangran spat as he stared at the crater left behind by Jian Chen. The strength of the Seal of Treasure Mountain was clear to see. Ever since the Shi family had gained control of it, it sat within their secured treasure room, its legend passed down from generation to generation. Up until now, its strength had been unimaginable and never had there been an Earth Saint Master that was able to survive a single impact.

Shi Xiangran lifted his hand, causing the floor ahead of him to start trembling. Immediately, the giant seal began to lift up from the ground. It shrank back down to a chunk the size of his fist, and landed in his hand.

After securing his treasure, Shi Xiangran turned back to the dead, middle aged men behind him and took their Space Belts. Then, with the barrier still activated, he turned to chase after the girl.

Just as the seal left the crater to return to Shi Xiangran, a muddy figure suddenly flew out of the hole like a lightning bolt, and stabbed at Shi Xiangran with his Sword Qi enhanced sword.

Shi Xiangran was extremely shocked, but with his strength as an Earth Saint Master, he could react in time to respond. Holding out



his long spear in front of him, the barrier reactivated once more. With the barrier activated, the silver sword continued to be pushed back farther and farther away from his body.

“You! How did you not die?” Shi Xiangran cried out as he looked at the muddy figure. This type of result wasn’t something he had expected to see.

Seeing how his attack was repelled by the barrier, the muddy Jian Chen could only sigh in disappointment. Quickly kneeling down to the ground, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Shi Xiangran sneered at the sight, “You are the first Earth Saint Master to not die from the Seal of Treasure Mountain, be proud of that achievement. It would seem that the seal has done a good amount of damage to you. Then allow me to use the seal once more to end your life. An Earth Saint Master can’t take a second hit from this, you should have no regrets with your death this time.”

With this, Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. Having learned his lesson, he quickly began to retreat backwards.

The Seal of Treasure Mountain immediately enlarged before flying towards Jian Chen. The overwhelming pressure from the seal almost suffocated Jian Chen. After taking a single hit from the seal, Jian Chen finally understood just how strong this strange seal was. If he were to be smashed by this seal once more, then it would all be over. Even if he didn’t die, he would be forced to his dying breath anyway.



“Damn it all, what kind of an object is this for it to be so strong? And just why haven’t I heard of such a thing before?” Jian Chen cursed as he looked at the giant seal flying towards him. Even when he was in Kargath Library, he had never seen any information about such a thing.

The Seal of Treasure Mountain flew at tremendous speeds, and with Jian Chen’s injuries, he could not run as fast as before. This meant he would not be able to outrun the seal. Even now as he glanced back, the seal was already quickly approaching him.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh!”

Suddenly, a concentrated amount of fire could be heard as a series of golden arrows flew through the air and smashed against the seal.

“Bang!”

Following the loud bang, the iron seal began to shake for a moment before flying at Jian Chen at a slightly reduced speed.

Seeing how the iron seal was about to end Jian Chen’s life, the yellow robed girl immediately stopped running and withdrew her longbow to shoot at the seal with frightening speed. Each arrow allowed Jian Chen another moment to run away to escape from Shi Xiangran.

“You repulsive wench! Wait until I grab ahold of you, I’ll

definitely torture you to death!” Shi Xiangran glared at the girl with a malicious look as he roared and gnashed his teeth in anger.

“Scoundrel, hurry up and get to where I am!” The girl ignored Shi Xiangran and cried out for Jian Chen to follow her.

After hearing the girl, Jian Chen didn’t hesitate any longer and immediately threw himself in her direction as the iron seal followed close behind.

She continued to pull back her bowstring, and arrow after arrow continued to fly at the seal, causing multiple explosions to rock the air.

With the girl’s assistance, Jian Chen finally pulled far away from the the seal and arrived where the girl was.

“Hurry up! The Seal of Treasure Mountain is incomparably strong! If it smashes into a Heaven Saint Master, even they will take on heavy damages! It’s a good thing that Shi Xiangran’s strength isn’t that high, otherwise he’d be able to use the Seal of Treasure Mountain to its fullest potential!” The woman cried as she continued to fire arrows at the seal while retreating backwards.

The Seal of Treasure Mountain’s advance was slowed as each arrow shot by the girl exploded upon impact. At the same time, she and Jian Chen continued to run away from it. After a certain distance, the girl aimed her bow at Shi Xiangran; although her arrow wouldn’t be able to hurt him, the explosive arrows would

still prevent him from moving forwards.

“The Seal of Treasure Mountain can’t get fifty meters out of his reach, otherwise it’ll be uncontrollable.” The girl explained to Jian Chen as if she was very familiar with the treasure.

As the two ran farther and farther away, Shi Xiangran could only watch from afar while being pelted with arrows. They eventually disappeared from sight.

Four hours later, Jian Chen and the girl finally came to a stop ten kilometers away, and found a mountain cave to take refuge in. The cave wasn’t too large, and there were even traces of someone having enlarged the hole.

Sounds of crackling could occasionally be heard from the small campfire lighting up the cave. Jian Chen lay powerless on the ground with a pale face. First, he had been hurt by the girl’s arrows and then fought in a battle with her. Then, before his body had even healed from his wounds, he had been smashed deep into the ground by the giant iron seal. This had caused more damage to his body than he was used to, and had even threatened his life. Right now his entire body was crushed and damaged to a large extent. If a regular Earth Saint Master were to be hit by the Seal of Treasure Mountain, then they would’ve died for sure.

The sounds of clothes being torn could be heard as the girl tended to the wound on her arm behind a large rock. The longbow continued to stay on her back for safety.

“Cough!” Jian Chen coughed twice as two mouthfuls of blood flew out from his mouth. With his current injuries, it was imperative that he heal as quickly as possible. However, with the girl nearby, he wasn’t able to use his Radiant Saint Force to heal himself. If he were to use it, then his secret would definitely be revealed.

Jian Chen didn’t want his secret regarding the Radiant Saint Force to be revealed, since everyone knew that Radiant Saint Masters were completely inept in martial arts. They could be said to be extremely weak. Since he was an Earth Saint Master and his aptitude with the Radiant Saint Force wasn’t bad at all, then there would definitely be a lot of trouble for him if it were to be revealed. If he were to silently endure the pain and try to circulate his inner Saint Force, then his healing factor would be somewhat accelerated.

At that moment, the girl came out from behind the stone with her wounds all dressed. Looking at the muddy Jian Chen, her eyes revealed a rare emotion of worry before quickly being hidden once more. Holding out a single white jade bottle toward Jian Chen, she said, “This is my family’s secret healing panacea. Go and use it.”

# Chapter 302: Legend Of The Ruler

## Armament

---

Taking the jade white bottle into his own hands silently, Jian Chen poured the contents into his mouth. Right now he couldn't use the Radiant Saint Force to heal, so he desperately needed to use medicine to heal. Plus, with his Thousand Immunity, he wasn't afraid of the girl handing him any type of poison.

The contents of the bottle weren't in pill form and was actually in a liquid form which tasted rather bitter. Jian Chen poured the liquid within his mouth in one go and swallowed. The moment it entered his body, a warm sensation traveled through his body slowly before covering every single part of it.

Feeling a great change happen within his body, Jian Chen closed his eyes to allow the healing process to begin. However, he still maintained a strong vigilance to the outside world. Although he and the girl were now on equal terms, but who could guarantee that nothing would happen. Who knew if this girl from a grand and rich family would suddenly strike at him with her sword.

Looking at Jian Chen close his eyes while he healed with a complicated look, the girl walked over to the campfire silently. Sitting down, she held her knees together with both hands and stared at the dancing fire with her bright and intelligent eyes, her thoughts unknown to the world.

The cave descended into an unnatural quiet; only the sounds of the crackling fire could be heard. With the tree branches feeding the fire, it would occasionally let out a snapping sound.

As Jian Chen continued to heal, the girl never struck out at him once. Instead, she sat by the fire and continued to watch the flames dance absent-mindedly.

Four hours later, Jian Chen opened his eyes and crawled up in a sitting position with some effort as his arms leaned against the cold cliff walls.

After these four hours of treatment, he had completely absorbed the healing properties of the medicine. Although he was still far away from being completely healed, he was at the very least stabilized for now.

Noticing the yellow clothed girl sitting by the fire, his eyes latched onto the golden bow on her back. “Could you tell me, just what type of weapon that bow is on your back? How is it possible for it contain so much strength? And the man that was chasing you with the Seal of Treasure Mountain, just what type of weapon was that? It’s plain to see that it’s not your Saint Weapon but the power was completely terrifying.” Jian Chen asked with curiosity as his heart raced to hear the answer.

Hearing that Jian Chen was awake, the girl tilted her head up to look at Jian Chen before immediately turning back to the dancing flames without a word.

Jian Chen didn’t ask again. He knew that this matter was extremely secretive, and if the girl wasn’t willing to tell him, then he wouldn’t beg.

“Those weapons are Ruler Armaments.” After some time, the girl finally spoke.

“The conditions of making a Ruler Armament are very unkind. There aren’t many of them within the Tian Yuan Continent, and it is said that Ruler Armaments are the weapons of Saint Rulers. After a Saint Ruler dies, instead of their Saint Weapon decomposing away into the world, they retain their form perfectly.” The girl slowly began to explain as she held her longbow. Then silently, she said, “This longbow’s name is the Solunar Bow. This is our Huang family’s Ruler Armament that has been passed down from generation to generation and has become our ancient family heirloom for the next generation.”

“If this Ruler Armament was formed by a Saint Weapon, then it is no wonder it’s this strong.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

“The Seal of Treasure Mountain within Shi Xiangran’s hand is also a Ruler Armament. Although it isn’t as strong as my Solunar Bow, combined with his superior strength, he is already a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master. With the Seal of Treasure Mountain, he is much stronger than me even with my Solunar Bow.” The girl explained.

“What is that barrier he has on him?” Jian Chen continued to ask. If it weren’t for that barrier, then he would have killed Shi Xiangran already.

“That barrier was something a Saint Ruler put on him. Its



defensive ability is remarkably strong so even my Solunar Bow is unable to break it.” The girl narrowed her eyes. Regarding the barrier of Shi Xiangran, she felt like having a headache each time she heard about it.

“Is there any way for us to break it or for it to fade away?” Jian Chen asked.

The girl said, “If there is, then I’m unable to do it. If the barrier is attacked with an attack far beyond what it can handle, then it’ll naturally shatter. Other than that, the barrier will fade away with time, but how long it’ll take for that to happen, I don’t know.” Gnashing her teeth, she spoke angrily, “If it weren’t for the barrier protecting Shi Xiangran, I would have shot him dead a long time ago. How vile the Shi family is. For them to use the Gathering of the Mercenaries to steal our Huang family’s Ruler Armament. It’s unfortunate that my fellow family had fallen prey to the evil schemes of the Shi family for the sake of allowing me to run away. Just wait until we’re out, then I’ll have uncle Feng and uncle Yun avenge the death of my family members.” The girl spoke with an angry promise.

Hearing that, Jian Chen laughed , “I’m sure that I heard Shi Xiangran say that he will have men deal with your two uncles, leaving you unprotected.”

Clenching her fists tightly, she spat out, “Abominable Shi family! They continue to try to take our Solunar Bow, they must have planned everything out!”

Jian Chen couldn’t help but to take in some delight from this,

“Shi Xiangran has that barrier protecting him, making him intangible. Along with his Ruler Armament, he has truly come prepared. It would appear that your Huang family’s Solunar Bow is destined to fall into their hands.”

The girl snapped as she flew up with her arms raised as she stared vehemently at Jian Chen, “You should learn to be quiet you scoundrel, or else see what happens when I’m through with you!”

“Haha, all I’m saying is the truth.” Jian Chen had no fear as if he felt secure in his knowledge.

“You...” The girl continued to stare angrily at Jian Chen for a while before finally sighing and walking to the entrance of the cave.

Her departure was what Jian Chen had wanted. Using his hearing to listen to see how far away the girl was, Jian Chen began to use his Radiant Saint Force to heal himself.

The Radiant Saint Force began to gather slowly and illuminated the dark cave in an instant. The Radiant Saint Force began to condense into a milky white light that made the inside of the cave seem as if it was daytime. Within this previously dark cave, the Radiant Saint Force would have caused anyone that noticed it to instantly become awake. The bright light was as fierce as the sun itself, but while it continued to shine brightly, the sight was not intense on the eyes.

Controlling the Radiant Saint Force required the usage of

“Spirit”. With Jian Chen’s spirit increasing in amount and quality after he made the breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master, his “Spirit” had become more refined. It could be used to improve his usage of the Radiant Saint Force to an even higher height, and so not only was the Radiant Saint Force even richer in quality, but the time to make it was less now.

Another two hours later, the Radiant Saint Force had completely healed Jian Chen at a rate that could only be described as miraculous.

Now that Jian Chen’s health was back to normal, he immediately leaped up from the ground and took out a water canteen from his Space Ring. Shedding off his clothes, he began to clean himself.

This source of water was something Jian Chen had planned since the beginning. Since his Space Ring was spacious enough, he had been able to collect plenty of water gourds that weighed at twenty five kilograms each. This was enough for him to last a while even in the most dire of circumstances.

“Hua hua!”

The ice cold water splashed against Jian Chen’s head as the remaining filth flowed away from his body. When the water hit the ground, it made a splashing sound as it scattered in every direction with a sharp and loud sound.

At this moment, the yellowed clothed girl was sitting on a rock right outside the cave entrance with a look of worry. She was

concerned about the words Jian Chen had said to her, the Shi family were definitely prepared this time, and while uncle Feng and Yun were both quite strong, the Shi family had plenty of experts that could fight against those two. If the words of Shi Xiangran could be trusted, then their family had already employed some people to deal with the two. If this was the case, then she would have no one to rely on. In this place, Shi Xiangran still had that defensive barrier so her Solunar Bow wasn't able to do anything against him despite its power. At this moment, the Seal of Treasure Mountain was a Ruler Armament as well, in the case that Shi Xiangran were to use it against her Solunar Bow, then she would have no opportunity to strike at him.

Although it could be said that she could use her Solunar Bow against his barrier, at the very most it would be a stalemate for a small amount of time. She couldn't use the bow forever since it would drain her Saint Force at an incredible rate.

“Hmph, I'll definitely protect the Solunar Bow. If worst comes to worst, I'll have to rely on Mercenary City and wait for the clan to help. I doubt the Shi family would dare to fight against Mercenary City for it.” The girl spoke in an icy tone.

At this moment, a strange sound could be heard inside the cave. Immediately, the girl turned toward the sound confused as she stared within the dark abyss of the cave. “How strange, how could there be any sound? The scoundrel is heavily injured, so he shouldn't be able to move at all.”

With an uneasy heart, she began to quietly move toward the insides of the cave.

At this moment, Jian Chen had just finished bathing himself. Although the girl was walking deeper into the cave, she wasn't leaking any killing intent, imposing aura or any dangerous thoughts. Because of the heavy sounds of the water hitting the ground, Jian Chen had been unable to detect the sounds of her walking in.

Quickly, the girl continued to walk in with a curious expression. Walking in with a cautious attitude, the moment she clearly saw the scene inside, her face immediately froze. In that instant, she could see that Jian Chen had just finished showering and was completely naked.

"Ah! You rotten scoundrel!" The girl was quick to react and shrieked with a loud sound.

"Gua dong!" The gourd that Jian Chen had above his head immediately fell to the floor with a crashing sound as it broke. Quickly, Jian Chen grabbed a set of clothes from within his Space Ring and flew to a dark corner of the cave. Not even caring for the wet droplet on his body, he hurriedly began to dress himself.

By that point, the girl had already covered both her eyes with her hands as she looked elsewhere. Her beautiful face had instantly turned bright as her heart couldn't help but beat wildly.

## Chapter 303: Uniting

---

After walking out, the girl never returned to the inside of the cave. Even Jian Chen who had changed into a new pair of clothes had turned red in the face. He had felt embarrassed to a major degree and even a little angry. He didn't think that the girl wouldn't have any manners and would walk in without making her presence known.

If it weren't for her quick reaction, Jian Chen would have assumed that she didn't have a grudge at all for him seeing her naked body and today would be the day that she would return the favor.

If Jian Chen's thoughts were to be discovered by this girl, then drowning himself in a river wouldn't be enough for the girl.

After putting on some clothes, Jian Chen walked out of the cave where the girl stood not too far away with her back facing him. Even though he couldn't see her face, Jian Chen could see the two sides of her neck were bright red, meaning her cheeks must have been as well.

After being discovered completely naked by a girl as he showered, it was completely hard for Jian Chen to not feel embarrassed. He still managed to hold a serious look on his face as he spoke out, "Hey, how could you be so rude and walk in without a sound to look at me while I shower?" A few years back after accidentally seeing the girl's body, he had suffered greatly from it. Now that the girl had silently and sneakily walked into the cave as he bathed, this was an opportunity that Jian Chen would not dare

to miss.

The girl had initially been embarrassed, but the moment she heard Jian Chen say that she snuck in to look at him shower, her red face immediately grew murderous. No longer feeling ashamed, she turned around to look at him, “Pah, who says I was trying to look at you shower? Do you even have any eyes?”

Jian Chen was speechless. To avoid having water in his eyes, he had shut them, so he didn’t see the girl’s figure. However, he had heard her shriek. With an honest expression, he spoke evenly, “My two eyes can see perfectly fine.”

“Pah, what a scoundrel you are, do you even feel any shame? Let me ask you this, that cave was originally mine, I was kind in allowing you to stay there for now, but then you began to take a shower without even telling me. This was your fault in the first place, so don’t go blaming me!” The girl fired back in order to retain her pride. Before Jian Chen could say anything to use against her, she would have to try to win the argument first.

“This cave had been made by someone else, just when did it become yours?” Jian Chen asked bewildered.

“This is a cave with no owner, but since I was the first to enter, then naturally I would be the owner of the cave!” The girl said confidently. Arguing was a specialty that she was good at.

Jian Chen wasn’t convinced by her words and was left speechless. He knew that if he argued with her, he would lose for



sure. There weren't too many people that he'd met that he couldn't kill and equally less people that were stronger than him. However a fight of words was a different story. The points Jian Chen made were eaten up by her; logic was not something that agreed with her. Her logic was both preposterous and stubborn: the girl could say that one was two and that two was three, and would be very confident in herself. Logic was not something that agreed with her, and the words that Jian Chen had tried to use to win had been eaten up by her.

"You...you win." Jian Chen spoke with a huff. He hadn't planned on letting her win, but who could have imagined that not even two sentences later, she had fully suppressed him with her words and given him no chance to win.

"I've seen your body and you've seen mine. But I've also saved your life, so let's consider this even. If I owe you in the future, tell me." With that, Jian Chen began to walk away without a look back.

"Yo-you rogue!" Upon hearing Jian Chen say that he had seen her body, the girl immediately grew flustered as her mind couldn't help but think back to that one time. Her beautiful face instantly lit up with a reddish hue. Immediately, her good mood after beating Jian Chen shriveled away as she grew both embarrassed and angry.

"Who told you to save me anyways? I didn't ask you. If it weren't for me impeding the Seal of Treasure Mountain, then you would have long since been smashed to pieces by it." The girl said angrily as she tried to find a way to fire back at him.

Hearing that, Jian Chen immediately stopped moving. The situation was like she said; if it weren't for her using her Solunar Bow to control the seal, then he wouldn't have been able to escape from the seal. He didn't want to say that to her, so he continued to walk away.

At this moment, the girl had finally realized that Jian Chen's wounds were completely healed and he was back to normal.

Stunned, the girl couldn't understand just how Jian Chen had been able to recover thoroughly from his injuries in such a short period of time.

"Hey, scoundrel, how did you heal from your injuries so fast?" The girl asked from behind with a hint of anger. Her bright eyes burned with curiosity as she stared at him.

"I had some good medicine on hand." Jian Chen didn't want to answer, but avoiding the question would have made the girl even more insistent on figuring out his secret. For the sake of dispelling her questions and doubts, he would have to carefully think of a reason.

With this, Jian Chen had already moved farther and farther away and nearly made it out of the girl's sight.

Seeing Jian Chen's back, the girl felt a bit indecisive. After biting her lower lip, she shouted out loud, "Stand still you scoundrel, where are you going?"

Quickly, she had caught up with Jian Chen who didn't turn back to look at her. Instead, he spoke calmly, "Just why are you following me?"

"Pah, who's following you?" The girl blinked. "You've killed two of the Shi family experts so there is no way that they'll let you go. With the barrier of Shi Xiangran and his Seal of Treasure Mountain, you won't be a match for him by yourself. If I'm not there with you, then you won't be able to live if Shi Xiangran catches hold of you."

"You're the one that's afraid." Jian Chen said.

The girl's eyes narrowed, "I'm not afraid of anything, you scoundrel. Don't speak any more lies or I'll smash you into several pieces."

"If not for that bow, you aren't even an opponent for me, and even with that bow, you won't be able to beat me." Jian Chen almost seemed to forget about his unhappy state and spoke with the emotionless tone he had before all of this had even happened.

"You..." The girl grew quite angry now as her chest constricted with rage; but there was nothing she could say. Even in the injured state Jian Chen had been, he was still able to kill two Earth Saint Masters from the Shi family in record time before fighting against Shi Xiangran himself. His strength was definitely stronger than her own.

In silence, the girl began to calm down before finally speaking out unwillingly, “Shi Xiangran’s strength you’ve seen for yourself. With his defensive barrier, you have no way of harming him. Furthermore, he has the power to use the Seal of Treasure Mountain whenever he wishes. If any one of us two were to come across him by ourselves, then we will surely eat up a heavy loss or even die. My Solunar Bow can impede Shi Xiangran for some time and control the Seal of Treasure Mountain, and you can personally deal with anyone Shi Xiangran will bring. This is the only way we’ll survive against him.”

The girl hadn’t lost any face from her words, but the way she had cleverly spoken had emphasized just how much she wanted to join forces with him.

Pausing to think, Jian Chen nodded his head in approval of her plan. After killing two of the Shi family experts, the Shi family would definitely not forgive him for this. Shi Xiangran’s defensive barrier was far too strong for the Solunar Bow to break, and if Jian Chen’s azure and violet Sword Qi weren’t enough to shatter the barrier, then Jian Chen would have no other option. Shi Xiangran had been completely unrestrainable, hidden behind his barrier, he could use his Seal of Treasure Mountain to attack relentlessly. At that time, if the girl didn’t use her Solunar Bow to hold back the Seal of Treasure Mountain, then it would have been truly hard for him to run away. Even if he did run away from it, he would still have to waste the entire day running away from Shi Xiangran.

Shi Xiangran’s use of his treasure had rendered Jian Chen helpless, but if the treasure were to fall from Shi Xiangran’s hands, then Jian Chen wouldn’t see him as anyone strong.

To be chased down and killed by someone that he didn't see as worthy would be an unbearable shame to him. So to unite with this girl would be a good plan.

Jian Chen and the girl continued to travel in silence. Not even idle chatter was heard or even an introduction spoken, so neither person knew the other's name. In their hearts, it was as if the other person didn't exist.

On the road, when many competitors saw just how young Jian Chen was and how beautiful the girl next to him was; they were extremely surprised. Previously, there had been two men that were barely Great Saint Masters and even a few Earth Saint Masters that had clearly underestimated Jian Chen. The vast majority of them had been stabbed through the throat by Jian Chen's sword while the small minority had been killed by the yellow clothed girl after they spoke out in a rude manner toward her. One Earth Saint Master had even been blown up by her Solunar Bow and died a miserable and violent death.

While she herself looked quite young, she was no stranger to killing. Despite not being at the level of Jian Chen who was always calm, her expression remained the same during each kill and she delivered each blow firmly. This caused Jian Chen to secretly admire her; for a child of a rich family to be able to do this much was a hard task, especially if she was the highly valued young daughter.

Half a month quickly went by as Jian Chen and the girl traveled without seeing Shi Xiangran. By now, they had traveled far away from the sword like mountains and were now at a mountain range

with grass everywhere.

In this amount of time, Jian Chen and the girl continued to give each other the cold shoulder. They rarely spoke to each other or even chatted at all. The only thing worth mentioning was that in this half a month of time, the both of them had gained a plethora of profit. Each one of them had now a total of a thousand tokens after killing several Earth Saint Masters. Even some of the Great Saint Masters they had killed had at least fifty tokens.

Only a month and a couple days were left with the time limit for the first round rapidly approaching. In this short amount of time, the tokens would all be congregated among the Earth Saint Masters. Very few Great Saint Masters would be able to keep hold of their tokens.

Just as Jian Chen and the girl were climbing on a huge slope, the sounds of battle could be heard to Jian Chen. Looking toward the source, he could see a man with wind Saint Force surrounding his body fighting against two Earth Saint Masters. Not too far away from them was a blood soaked figure that was laying on the ground.

The wind attributed Earth Saint Master was extremely strong. Just by himself, he could fight against two Earth Saint Masters and slowly win. Both of them had plenty of injuries on their body, causing their clothes to be dyed red with blood. The wind attributed Earth Saint Master however didn't have a single scratch on him.

Subconsciously, Jian Chen looked over to where the battered

individual lay. Straight away, he could see a sturdy like build that seemed quite familiar to him. Following a closer inspection, Jian Chen's eyes suddenly flew wide open as a dangerous gleam appeared within. As soon as his eyes widened, a feeling of bloodlust could be felt.



## Chapter 304: Meeting Qin Xiao

---

“Qin Xiao~~~!” Jian Chen roared angrily as his entire figure blurred away from sight. With a lightning like speed, Jian Chen flew toward the three men who were currently fighting. At the same time, an enormous amount of killing intent began to exude from his body, shooting straight into the air.

The girl watched as Jian Chen sped away with a flabbergasted look. She was previously standing right next to him with her golden longbow out. From the days she had traveled with Jian Chen, she had quickly learned his personality, but this was the first time she had seen such a drastic change in him. She hastened after Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s roar was immediately heard by the three combatants. The two bloodsoaked figures were shocked; they hadn’t expected to come across anyone that was familiar with the young lord of the Tianqin clan. The two of them had already used up all of their strength fighting and were immensely relieved to see a new chance at life. The moment they saw Jian Chen run toward them, their happy look froze in place before disappearing from their faces and were instead replaced with looks of utter despair.

The both of them knew Jian Chen and how he was the only foreign friend of Qin Xiao, but while his talent at cultivation wasn’t all that bad, Jian Chen was still young and only a Great Saint Master. Their opponent was an Earth Saint Master and a truly strong one at that with his wind Saint Force. If the two of them combined wouldn’t be able to force him to a disadvantage, Jian Chen wouldn’t be able to.

By this point, the wind attributed Earth Saint Master had noticed Jian Chen. The moment he saw the handsome look on Jian Chen, his face immediately lost his look of confidence. A deep feeling of dread washed over him as he lost all of his desire to fight.

“Hmph, I’ll let you go today.” The Earth Saint Master spat out unwillingly before flying into the air to run away.

Just as the man left, one of the heavily injured men that lost most of his Saint Force immediately lost consciousness.

The other man had no energy remaining either and fell to the ground on his back with a withered expression.

“Qin Xiao, Qin Xiao! How are you feeling, wake up!” Jian Chen quickly arrived at Qin Xiao’s side while calling out his name repeatedly in a frantic manner.

Qin Xiao’s wounds were rather severe and he was covered with blood. Even the surrounding grass beneath him was soaked with his blood. On his body, Jian Chen noticed two terrifyingly deep wounds. Right on his waist, Qin Xiao’s body was nearly cut in two with only around half of his body still connected. The other wound was on his chest where a sword had been run through, causing a severe amount of damage to even his inner organs. Qin Xiao right now was already halfway through the gates of the underworld.

“Quick, use your bow to shoot him down! Don’t let him escape!” Jian Chen roared as he pointed at the rapidly disappearing figure

of the wind attributed Earth Saint Master to the yellow clothed girl.

Coming into view, the girl already had a hand reaching toward her bow in order to kill the man, but the moment she had heard the commanding tone of Jian Chen, her eyebrows narrowed as she dropped her hands. Returning her hands to where they originally were, she spoke with a frosty tone, “I refuse to, why should I listen to you?”

“Bang!” Jian Chen’s fist slammed into the ground, creating a half a meter hole deep into the soft ground. The bloodshot eyes of Jian Chen stared dangerously at the girl as his rage continued to fly into the air. This time, Jian Chen was truly angry.

Seeing the nearly blood-thirsty and animal like visage of Jian Chen, the girl’s heart shook with some fear before stopping in place. In this moment of clarity, she suddenly felt a great deal of regret. When she refused to shoot the escaping person and lost her attention, the wind attributed Earth Saint Master had traveled past the mountain range and out of sight.

“Ji-Jian...Jian Chen.”

Just as Jian Chen was about to use the Radiant Saint Force to heal Qin Xiao’s wounds, a faint sounding voice could be heard as Qin Xiao’s eyes opened just a crack. His mouth trembled slightly as he called out Jian Chen’s name quietly.

“Qin Xiao, hold on! I’ll heal you up in a moment!” Jian Chen

began to control the Radiant Saint Force around the World Essence to heal Qin Xiao. Right now Qin Xiao was in extreme danger, his life was hanging on by a thread and could be cut at any moment.

“Jia-Jian....Jian Chen.” Qin Xiao’s eyes opened a little more as his right arm quavered in an attempt to grab onto Jian Chen’s hands. Slowly placing it on his Space Belt, he began to speak, “H-he.... help..... me br-bring... out.... a gre-green... b-bo-bottle.... out... fr-from... my... Sp-Spa-Space... Belt....” Qin Xiao’s voice was beginning to fade in and out as his voice grew faint. With a faint exhale, his head tilted down and he fell unconscious.

Jian Chen understood what Qin Xiao’s message was right away. Carefully taking his Space Belt without touching Qin Xiao’s wounds, he began to furiously search within the contents before finally taking out three green porcelain bottles.

Just as Jian Chen took out the three bottles and opened them, a sweet smelling fragrance could be detected.

Each bottle contained a thumb sized pill that exuded a faint white glow.

“This...this is?!” Jian Chen cried out in shock and recognition. While the three pellets had a faint powder look on the shell, inside the shell was a pure amount of Radiant Saint Force.

Jian Chen was like a Radiant Saint Master and clearly understood the effects of the Radiant Saint Force. Immediately grabbing the pellets, he placed them into Qin Xiao’s mouth.

After swallowing the pill, Qin Xiao's face began to take a turn for the better in color. Despite the Radiant Saint Force filled pill not being enough to fully heal Qin Xiao, saving his life would be no problem at all. However, Qin Xiao had yet to awaken.

After Qin Xiao's condition was stabilized, Jian Chen let out a breath in relief. Then he turned to the two bloodsoaked men.

He had recognized the two men. One of them was Qin Jue, the one that Qin Xiao had said his father had picked up from the outside world and raised. He was born and raised within the Tianqin clan and had an extremely loyal heart, but right now he was unconscious. The other man also wasn't a Tianqin clan member and was one of the men who had entered the Space Gate to Mercenary City with him. He was the comrade of Tian Zhou, but right now his face was deathly pale as he sat on the ground and ate a healing pill to recover his strength.

Three men quickly came into Jian Chen's line of sight at a quick speed.

The three men were quickly detected by everyone, "Eldest Brother!" Suddenly, a joyous sound could be heard as the slowly healing person looked at the three approaching men and tried to crawl up to meet them.

These three men were unexpectedly Tian Zhou and two other brothers from outside the Tianqin clan.

“Fourth brother!”

“Fourth brother!”

“Fourth brother!”

Tian Zhou and the other two were quick to recognize the bloodsoaked figure and instantly called out in panic as they ran to his side.

“Fourth brother, how are you feeling, who did this to you?”

“Fourth brother, tell us, just which bastard beat you to this state?”

Seeing the bloodsoaked figure of their brother, the other two men were furious. Tian Zhou’s own face was rather unsightly as the three began to look around only to see the unconscious figure of the young lord of the Tianqin clan, Jian Chen, and the golden longbow girl right next to him.

“Who are you!” One of the men roared at the girl. They all knew who Jian Chen was, but not who this new girl was.

The girl looked at the three in disdain as she turned her head arrogantly to the side. It was as if she wasn’t willing to talk or even look at them.

Seeing the attitude of the girl, the other man barked at her coldly, “Naughty girl, we asked you a question, are you deaf?”

After he spoke, the girl’s expression darkened as she stared at them with a hateful glare, “Say one more word and I’ll kill you.” She had guessed that Jian Chen knew these men, and if it weren’t for that, then she would have long since moved against these people. After all, these three men were Earth Saint Masters and would undoubtedly have many tokens with them.

“You...” The man she spoke to growled angrily as a machete like weapon appeared within his hands, “You must be tired of living. I’ll teach you a lesson then!” With that, he flew at her.

“Hey, second brother, don’t be so reckless! You shouldn’t act so soon against a beauty like her.” Immediately, a rather ugly looking man held out his hand to stop the other man from attacking as he looked at the girl with a lecherous gaze.

Hearing this, the second brother was stunned for a moment before realizing what was happening. With a dark laugh, he spoke, “Third brother, you’re the smart one among us! It would be a crying shame for this beautiful woman to die so soon!’ Then, speaking to the girl, he laughed once more, “Little beauty, I’ve changed my mind. Killing such a beautiful person would be a big shame. Why don’t you accompany us for a good time. If you can make this a pleasurable time, then big brother here will let you go.”

The girl’s face froze over in a dark expression.



Hearing this, even Jian Chen's face grew dark. Although he had plenty of complaints about her, he couldn't respect the two for their words now, that the girl and him were both on the same side. Lastly, Tian Zhou and his brothers didn't sit right with him as Tian Zhou had initially caused plenty of trouble for him back then in the Tianqin compound.

"If you don't wish to die, then it would be best for you two to shut your mouths." Jian Chen slowly stood up as he stared coldly at the men in front of him.

"F\*ck, kid. The beauty and us two are talking, since when was it your turn to interfere? Death won't come easy for you." The second brother glared at Jian Chen dangerously. While Jian Chen had a decent friendship with the young lord Qin Xiao who was within the same clan as Tian Zhou, they were the brothers of Tian Zhou and knew that Jian Chen was not a person he liked.

The previously silent Tian Zhou looked on with a dark expression. He had a look full of killing intent directed at Jian Chen; he had already a large amount of complaints about Jian Chen back in Walaurent City and had even started a dispute. If it weren't for the patriarch coming to stop the two, then he would have fought Jian Chen. Even in Mercenary City, he had wanted to hit Jian Chen many times but was held back due to the Grand Elder. However now, there was an opportunity sitting right in front of him, he would naturally not let this go by.

Tian Zhou gave a knowing look at the bloodsoaked man who instantly understood what Tian Zhou was getting at. Pointing at

Jian Chen, he cried out loud, “Eldest brother, second brother, third brother! We were attacked by this heartless kid! This cruel youth wanted to kill our Tianqin clan’s Qin Xiao. The other clans member and I were caught off guard when he struck and were injured severely! If it weren’t for eldest brother coming here so fast, then I’m afraid I wouldn’t be able to meet with you right now.”

Sniffing away his tears, the fourth brother began to moan out loud.

Tian Zhou’s face froze after the outburst as he glared at Jian Chen, “Youngster, you’ve twisted the kindness of my elder brother while holding the esteemed title of being an honored guest, how could you be so devoid of a conscious? Today, I, Tian Zhou, will not forgive you. Third eldest, go and capture the would be murderer of our Qin Xiao.” In Tian Zhou’s eyes, Jian Chen was only a Great Saint Master and didn’t bother to see him as a person worth capturing personally.

“Yes, eldest brother!” Immediately the third brother sprung into action and flew at Jian Chen with his Saint Weapon. From the start, he had never bothered to place this “Great Saint Master” in sight.

With a gleam of light, Jian Chen didn’t bother to say anything since it would all be useless.

“Stop!” Suddenly, a weak sounding voice could be heard as the blood covered Qin Jue awoke when the people were all distracted. With a good amount of effort, he spoke out fragily, “You

misunderstand. We were attacked by an extremely strong Earth Saint Master who was unrelated to brother Jian Chen.”

Tian Zhou’s face turned ugly as he stared at Qin Jue, “What rubbish! Qin Jue, you’ve must of hit your head, you, Qin Xiao and fourth brother were clearly ambushed by Jian Chen, what other person is there?”

Hearing that, Qin Jue’s eyes flashed twice but went silent. He had only just woken up and didn’t hear Tian Zhou’s initial words so he wasn’t clear on the situation. He did know that Tian Zhou desperately wished to make life difficult for Jian Chen. but with his severe injuries, he couldn’t even look out for himself, let alone muster up the strength to help Jian Chen.

At this moment, the third eldest had already reached Jian Chen and sneered right in front of his handsome, white face. With a single movement, his arm reached out to grab Jian Chen’s shoulder with a strength that would shatter even the bones of a Great Saint Master.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed dangerously as the Light Wind Sword appeared in his right hand. The Light Wind Sword had already stopped right next to the man’s throat before the third eldest could react.

This sudden development caused the man to become shocked. Even the arm that was going to grab at Jian Chen’s shoulder instantly stopped as he stood completely still.

“Y-yo-you...” The third eldest kept staring at the sword at his throat in pure speechlessness as his shock caused him to begin to stutter.

A single “Great Saint Master” had unexpectedly been able to bring his Saint Weapon up to his neck without him noticing. For an Earth Saint Master, this was something he was completely shocked to realize.

“You’ve managed to turn black into white with this situation. Do not blame me for being impolite.” Jian Chen glared icily at Tian Zhou as he spoke.

Having been threatened by the younger generation, this made Tian Zhou’s face go dark, “Forward! Kill him and save third brother!” With that, Tian Zhou withdrew his red colored sword and charged toward Jian Chen.

Taking out his own Saint Weapon, the second brother charged toward Jian Chen as well.

At the same time, the third brother that was held hostage against Jian Chen’s sword immediately took advantage of the shift of focus from him to Tian Zhou and the other two. With a swift movement, his hands flew at Jian Chen’s throat in an instant.

With a look of disdain and a sneer, Jian Chen pulled sharply on the sword on the third brother’s neck. In an instant, his head separated from his body as a fountain of blood splurged from his neck and dyed the ground below them with his blood.

“Third eldest!”

“Third eldest!”

“Third brother!”

Tian Zhou and the others cried out in fury and grievance.

“You bastard! I’ll definitely kill you today!”

“For vengeance!”

Tian Zhou and the others roared in anger as they glared at Jian Chen with eyes that could start fires as if they wanted to destroy Jian Chen.

“Whoosh!”

Suddenly, another whistling sound could be heard as a golden ray of light came from behind Jian Chen. In an instant, the lightning like bolt of light speared through the second brother’s chest. Right where the heart should be, only a hole could be seen.

Even after striking through the second brother’s chest, the arrow didn’t lose speed at all and traveled another hundred meters before smashing into the side of a mountain slope and disappearing from view.

Jian Chen turned his head to look only to see the icy cold visage of the yellow clothed girl. In her hands was the golden Solunar Bow with the bowstring looking as if it had just been twanged.

The second eldest was the one that had first insulted her, and with the girl's personality, there was no way for her to forgive him at all. If the third brother hadn't been killed by Jian Chen, then she would have killed him as well.

The second eldest's eyes opened wide as he looked at the golden longbow and the girl wielding it in disbelief. He had never thought that a young and weak looking girl like her would possess such a terrifying amount of fighting strength. That golden arrow had traveled at a speed far beyond what he could detect.

"Bang!" The second eldest's body fell to the ground, dead. After being killed by this weak-looking young girl, he would never be at ease even in death.

Seeing his second brother fall dead, Tian Zhou's face grew alarmed before instantly turning white. Both Jian Chen and this young girl's fighting strength had far exceeded what he had expected. The second and third brother both had a strength that wasn't too far away from his own, but they both had been instantly killed.

The most terrifying thing was the arrow that the yellow clothed girl shot out. They left him in a state of terror; if it had been him that was shot at, there would have been no time for him to dodge

since they were so close. He would have met the same fate as his second brother.

Tian Zhou immediately halted his forward momentum toward Jian Chen. With this sudden change in development, he was suddenly stuck in a problematic dilemma.

Jian Chen turned to look at Tian Zhou with an attentive gaze and taunted, “Were you not saying that you were going to kill me? Just why haven’t you done anything yet then?”

Hearing this, Tian Zhou’s face grew unsightly as he stared at the two with a venomous look. “Brat, I, Tian Zhou, won’t forget this day!” With that, Tian Zhou flew in the opposite direction to flee.

Immediately pulling at her bow, the girl was just about to shoot at the fleeing Tian Zhou when Jian Chen disappeared from his original position and flew toward Tian Zhou.

Halfway to him, Jian Chen’s sword flashed in the light as a concentrated amount of Sword Qi flew at Tian Zhou.

Feeling something peculiar chase after him, Tian Zhou flew to the side and simultaneously used his fire Saint Force enhanced sword to smash at the Sword Qi he couldn’t avoid. With this delay, his traveling speed was much slower than before and so Jian Chen had quickly caught up to him before stabbing at him without hesitation.

After being blocked from his escape path, Tian Zhou could do nothing else but fight Jian Chen. With his Saint Force exploding out from his body, the pressure around them began to escalate as the grass below them began to wither away.

“Ha!” Tian Zhou shouted. With a heavy swing, his giant sword came raining down on Jian Chen.

Without fear, Jian Chen slammed his own Sword Qi enhanced Light Wind Sword against the other. Then, with a shake of his hand, the Light Wind Sword slapped the sword, sending the giant sword flying to the side. With a strong amount of power, the sword immediately stabbed deep Tian Zhou’s chest before the tip came exiting out from his back.

“You-you are an Earth Saint Master? How!?” At that moment, Tian Zhou had been brought to full clarity. The person he had never bothered to look at was not a Great Saint Master, but an Earth Saint Master!

“It’s no wonder! No wonder at all that you were able to kill third brother and chase up to me!” Tian Zhou’s face ashened as he began to feel a great amount of regret. If he had known earlier that Jian Chen was an Earth Saint Master, then he wouldn’t have tried to provoke him.

“How unfortunate, you learned of this too late.” Jian Chen stated emotionlessly as his killing intent went undisguised.



# Chapter 305: Seeing The Ruler Armament Once More

---

Tian Zhou stared at Jian Chen with a dangerous gleam, “Do you mean to kill me?”

Jian Chen laughed, “This is the consequence of your actions. It was you that started all of this and decided that I was in the wrong, and then you wanted to kill me. Do not blame me for returning the favor.” With that, Jian Chen slowly pulled the sword out from Tian Zhou’s chest, causing a river of blood to come pouring out.

Jian Chen’s sword had only pierced through Tian Zhou’s chest two inches away from his heart. While it had run through the chest, it wasn’t a life threatening injury for a man like him.

Knowing that Jian Chen was determined to kill him, Tian Zhou threw away his cautionary attitude and with a serious shout, he roared, “If you wish to kill me, then be prepared to pay a heavy price!” Tian Zhou’s giant sword burst out with light as a fire-like essence began to coil around his sword. The temperature around the two immediately soared higher as even the grass below began to rapidly dry up.

“Go die then!” Tian Zhou howled as his sword transformed into a flaming light that came roaring down at Jian Chen. He knew that as long as the strange, longbow wielding girl was there, he had no chance to escape. No matter where he went, he would die, but he could hopefully drag Jian Chen down with him. Even if he couldn’t kill Jian Chen, he would at least deal a significant amount of damage to him. Right now, there was only a month left until this

part of the competition was over. That meant that this would be the most intense part of the competition. If he could injure Jian Chen at this crucial moment, then even an Earth Saint Master like Jian Chen wouldn't be able to leave this place without harm.

With that single sword strike, a strong pressure flooded the area and pressed down on Jian Chen's body. With this sensation, Jian Chen felt as if he was stuck in a quagmire, and that his own movements had become restricted.

Tian Zhou's sword was undoubtedly using a battle skill.

Jian Chen sneered. He had seen plenty of battle skills, and had even experienced the taste of a tornado-like battle skill before, so a battle skill like this was nothing.

Only if there was no alternative would Jian Chen try to go head to head against a battle skill. But he knew he generally didn't have enough power to go against one. Sliding forward, Jian Chen narrowly dodged the sword and swiftly shot his blade forward towards Tian Zhou's throat.

Before Tian Zhou could even react, the Light Wind Sword was against his neck.

"Even if you try your hardest, your fate won't change. You are not an opponent for me." Jian Chen laughed as he looked dangerously at Tian Zhou. "Tian Zhou, since I am friends with the Tianqin clan, you may give me your final words."

“You truly dare to try and kill me!” Tian Zhou roared with an angry look. After exchanging several blows, he had already figured out that he wasn’t strong enough to fight Jian Chen. Even a battle skill wouldn’t be enough to defeat this twenty year old youth. Knowing that Jian Chen wasn’t a Great Saint Master was truly a fact that he found hard to believe.

Jian Chen sneered, “Do you really think that just because you are a member of the Tianqin clan, I won’t make a move against you? I’ve already shown enough restraint.”

“If you kill me, the Tianqin clan won’t let you go.” Tian Zhou began to show a sliver of fear.

Jian Chen’s glare dimmed as he shook his hand, causing the Light Wind Sword to strike Tian Zhou’s face with a slap. The sharp edge of the sword cut slightly into the man’s face and drew blood.

“You....” Tian Zhou grew indignant as he glared furiously at Jian Chen, yet he made no move to attack him. If looks could kill, then Jian Chen would have been burned to ashes by Tian Zhou’s malicious glower.

Humiliation. This was the biggest humiliation Tian Zhou had ever felt. As a direct member of the Tianqin clan, Tian Zhou held a clear, decisive role of power and status. Even Qin Xiao couldn’t compare to his status. But Jian Chen’s actions had been nothing better than a slap to his face with his palm. This act alone had almost caused Tian Zhou to explode in anger.

“What about me, so what if I kill you? Don’t even bother to threaten me with the Tianqin clan. You are not the representative of the Tianqin clan, and if it weren’t for the sake of brother Qin Xiao, then I would have taught you a lesson back at the Tianqin clan’s compound.” Jian Chen stated. With a fierce glare, he kicked Tian Zhou in the chest; however, whether it was accidental or intentional, Jian Chen had kicked him where Tian Zhou had been stabbed with the sword earlier.

Tian Zhou stifled a groan as he was sent flying five or six meters into the air before finally crashing back down to the ground. Spitting out a mouthful of blood, his face went as white as parchment as his chest began to flow with blood again.

Jian Chen brought out his Light Wind Sword in a flash once more before stabbing at Tian Zhou’s throat with a terrifying amount of Sword Qi. Just as he stabbed down at him, a weak sounding voice came from behind.

“Jian Chen, please, don’t kill him. In the end, he’s my uncle.” Qin Xiao had somehow awoken during their fight, and had struggled to get to where Jian Chen was, his voice a barely audible whisper.

Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword suddenly stopped right in front of Tian Zhou’s face, the chilling feel of the Sword Qi already close enough to touch Tian Zhou’s body. There was no fear in his face; after several years of life or death fights, Tian Zhou was experienced with fatal events. Death had no effect on him.

Biting his lips, Jian Chen stared at Tian Zhou like a starving wolf

and growled, “For the sake of brother Qin Xiao, I’ll spare your life today.” With that, Jian Chen recollected his sword before looking at the Space Ring on Tian Zhou’s finger. Jian Chen loftily grabbed the Space Ring and walked back to where Qin Xiao was.

Tian Zhou crawled up from the ground with a heavy look as he stared icily at Jian Chen’s retreating back. Wordlessly, he tried to address the wound on his chest before walking away. His Space Ring had been taken, and he had been humiliated by Jian Chen, but there wasn’t a single word he could say. Revenge could come later; as long as he lived, he would be able to find an opportunity to wipe out the unbelievable humiliation he had suffered today.

The bloodsoaked third brother stood behind Tian Zhou with a baleful glare as a large amount of killing intent radiated from him.

Jian Chen stopped his movements as he turned his head to look at the third brother, “Who said you could leave?” With a slash of his sword, a burst of Sword Qi flew at the man.

The third brother had already sustained heavy injuries that had taken up the majority of his strength. Thus, he was unable to dodge this blow and was speared through by the Sword Qi.

The originally bloodsoaked third brother fell to the ground slowly as more blood came pouring out of the thumb-sized hole in his throat.

Tian Zhou shook slightly, but he continued to move away without stopping. Quickly, he disappeared past the mountain

ridge.

Jian Chen walked to Qin Xiao's side and inspected his wounds before taking the other two Radiant Saint Force filled pills to feed him.

“No, Jian Chen. One pill is enough, give the other one to brother Qin Jue.” Qin Xiao blocked Jian Chen from feeding him another pill.

Nodding his head, Jian Chen put one pill into Qin Xiao's mouth before turning to Qin Jue and giving a pill to him as well.

With a small amount of hesitation, Qin Jue took the pill into his mouth before closing his eyes to heal. With his innate silence, he had no words to say.

Jian Chen walked to where the yellow clothed girl was and said, “Please look after these two for a moment, I'll go collect a few things from nearby.”

The girl looked at Jian Chen with a skewed look before turning her head angrily to the side without another word.

Jian Chen didn't beat around the bush either, and instead looked around himself. Pushing the tips of toes on the ground, he immediately shot off like an arrow into a specific direction before quickly disappearing from sight.

Seeing how Jian Chen had finally disappeared, the longbow wielding girl pouted unhappily as her beautiful face held some anger.

Jian Chen returned quickly with a bunch of wrist sized branches. Setting them on the ground, Jian Chen took out a few piles of rope and some quilts and began to busy himself with them.

In a flash, a simple stretcher was made for Qin Xiao to lay in. Carefully placing Qin Xiao in the stretcher, Jian Chen knew that Qin Xiao's waist had almost been cut in half, making it impossible to walk. Even standing would be tantamount to being impossible, so a stretcher would be needed.

“Brother Jian Chen, I'm sorry to be such a bother.” Qin Xiao spoke out emotionally.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed, “Qin Xiao, if I am your brother, then don't say such words.”

Qin Xiao grabbed Jian Chen's hands without a word, but his heart was filled with emotions.

Grabbing the stretcher, Jian Chen lifted him into the air so the stretcher was at his shoulders. Turning around to look at Qin Jue, he asked, “Are you able to move still.”

After Qin Jue had eaten the pill with Radiant Saint Force, his body was in better condition than before. While he wasn't

completely healed, it was better than nothing.

With some effort, Qin Jue stood up and stared at Jian Chen with a complicated expression, “I’ve no problems, but I won’t be able to fight. However, I’m capable of running.”

“This isn’t a good place to idle about, let’s go.” Jian Chen said.

Neither the girl or Qin Jue had any objections to this, and so after taking the second, third and fourth brothers’ Space Belts, the four of them left the area.

“Bang!” Suddenly, a loud sound could be heard as an equally large amount of energy was seen rippling through the air. Jian Chen and the others could even detect that the earth below them was vibrating slightly.

“Bang bang bang bang!”

From far away, a loud sound and a large amount of energy could be seen and heard. Even the shaking of the earth continued despite the long distance, and had even cracked the ground slightly.

Jian Chen and the others immediately stopped their movements and looked at a giant mountain several hundred meters away where they could barely make out the sight of what was happening.

“There are people fighting over there, they seem quite strong.”



Jian Chen spoke with a solemn expression.

As soon as he spoke, a giant, iron-like seal flew from the mountains before crashing down to the ground.

“Bang!” With a mighty crash, the ground shook violently once more in a stronger surge than before, making it seem almost as if there was an earthquake.

“That’s the Seal of Treasure Mountain!” The girl cried out in shock. Her face grew solemn as she said, “Shi Xiangran has to be fighting with someone. Seeing how far back the Seal of Treasure Mountain was sent flying, the enemy must be very strong, or else there has to be many of them.”

At that moment, the seal began to fly upwards back toward the mountain slope. Jian Chen and the other three could see that before the seal could come flying down, another figure flew up into the air with his flaming, scarlet sword smashing against the seal.

“Bang!” Like a clap of thunder, the sound shook everyone’s ears as they all saw a ripple of energy fly forth. The seal continued to wobble in midair as it flew back constantly.

“Ruler Armament! That sword has to be a Ruler Armament for it to knock back the Seal of Treasure Mountain so far back!” The girl cried out in shock.

# Chapter 306: Get Out

---

Jian Chen grew solemn the moment he saw the sight before saying, “It would be unwise to approach them now. Let’s hurry up and leave.” If he didn’t have the injured Qin Xiao draped over him, then he would have investigated the sight above. For the sake of Qin Xiao, he would place safety as their priority.

Jian Chen took the stretcher and led the girl away from the place as Tian Jue bit his lips and followed close behind.

The ground began to shake once more as the mountains shook violently. Even the ground near Jian Chen’s feet began to crack as the sounds of a fierce battle could be heard, his ears shook from the vibrations.

A few of the more courageous men were attracted by the sight and flew toward the sounds of the battle. The vast majority of them had already lost their Space Belts and were heavily bandaged while some looked quite miserable. The moment they saw the injured members behind Jian Chen, two of the more well off looking men flew at Jian Chen in a hurry.

The two were extremely fast and had traveled several hundred meters in a flash. Swiftly coming to a stop to measure Jian Chen and the others, they both noticed that Jian Chen and the other girl were no older than twenty five years at the most. Their confidence couldn’t help but go up as one of them shouted, “You there stand still!” With that, they closed the distance.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed as the girl instantly grabbed at her longbow and shot two golden arrows from it. They traveled at an extremely fast pace.

The two golden arrows traveled through the air with a golden trail as if they were shooting stars that flew closer and closer to the two men.

When the two saw the girl take out her bow they immediately took out their Saint Weapons as a precaution. As the golden arrows were shot, they were already waving their swords in an attempt to cut them down.

“Earth Saint Masters!” Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat. From the pulse in their Saint Force, Jian Chen could tell just how strong the two were.

Bang! Bang!

Following two metallic sounds, the smoke from the explosions, created when dirt and grass was kicked into the air by the collisions, masked the two men from view. The two men then shot straight into the air as a result of the energy. They involuntarily spat out a mouth full of blood.

While the girl was very young in age, she was very firm in her killing strikes unlike those born and raised in a sheltered lifestyle. Just like a hardened battle veteran that has experienced countless of battles, she readily stepped forward as her dainty jade like fingers stretched the bowstring on her bow. Slowly stretching it

taut, she immediately let go and released a golden arrow away from her.

“Whoosh whoosh!”

Two twangs could be heard as the two golden arrows left a trail of golden light as they shot toward the two men. Before they could even react, the arrows had shot through their chests.

“Ah!”

The two men let out simultaneous cries of anguish as they felt a fist sized hole punch through their chests. As the golden arrows pushed past their bodies, the remnants of the energy exploded within their body and instantly destroyed their inner organs. As soon as the men screamed in pain, they instantly went silent.

The two of them were Earth Saint Masters, but they both had been easily killed by the girl and her longbow.

Everyone around the area could see this fight clearly. Those who initially had thoughts about robbing Jian Chen and his group instantly withdrew all notions of fighting.

“Just who is that yellow robed girl, and how strong is she? The two men who were after their tokens were Earth Saint Masters, but even they were easily killed by her...”

“I can see that this girl isn’t that old, but just how could she be

that strong in such a young age? Whoever marries her in the future will be truly blessed...”

“Shh! Speak quietly, what if she hears you! If she gets angry then it’ll be all over for us once she starts shooting...”

“That’s right, a youngster like you should keep your mouth shut. A loose tongue may bring you trouble. Be careful with what you say, and for heaven’s sakes, don’t say anything unnecessary...”

From far away, three men began to talk among themselves. Looking at Jian Chen, no one dared come close to him.

After that, barely any people dared to block Jian Chen and his group’s path. Jian Chen continued to hold the stretcher in front of him while he rushed forward. After he had come across the two who blocked their path, he collected their belongings: a Space Ring and a nice looking Space Belt.

The girl watched as Jian Chen rifled through the men’s belongings without saying a word. Strapping the longbow to her back, she followed Jian Chen from behind as they both left the place.

Shi Xiangran continued to fight for a long period of time, allowing Jian Chen to travel several kilometers away. Even after hearing several explosions, Jian Chen and the group didn’t turn back and continued on.

Six hours later, Jian Chen and his group were farther away now and finally stopped at a cave to rest. Within the dark cave, a small campfire could be seen burning.

“This cave has someone recently staying here, forget it, let’s occupy it.” Jian Chen muttered before carefully setting Qin Xiao down on the ground. Collecting several untouched branches around the cave’s opening, Jian Chen lit them on fire to use as a torch.

“The branches won’t burn for long, you should all go inside to rest first, I’ll go find some more branches.” With that, Jian Chen turned to climb down the slope and collect some more branches and dried sticks.

While Jian Chen continued to collect branches, the sounds of footsteps could be heard. Ignoring the sound, Jian Chen continued to collect the tree branches on the ground.

Quickly, two shadows flew into view. From their appearances, the two were around forty years old. One was quite sturdy in stature and wore a black sleeveless gown. Both of his dark skinned arms bulged with muscles and he wore blue colored trousers with cloth shoes. The other man was quite even in his build and was not tall at all. His face was rather suited to talk to the crowd but his ordinary looking eyes shone with light. He wore a white robe that was quite damaged and there were green stains from the grass nearby.

As Jian Chen measured the two, they looked at Jian Chen in return. Realizing that Jian Chen was no older than twenty years

old, the two men both dropped their guards.

Jian Chen looked at the two for a moment longer before he resumed picking up branches from the ground. With a single strand of rope, he tied a bundle of sticks together before putting them in his Space Ring.

Now that Jian Chen was an Earth Saint Master, he had no reason to hide his Space Ring any more. His strength was sufficient enough to protect himself, so the Space Ring he had originally hidden in the Tianqin clan was now worn proudly on his hand.

When the middle age man saw the Space Ring on his hand, a barely detectable glint of light flashed through his eyes but his expression remained impassive.

The sturdy man took out a wine gourd and began to take a large gulp from it before sighing carefully. Then looking at Jian Chen, he said, “Fellow brother, you sure are quite brave. With a young and brazen kid like you participating in the Gathering of the Mercenaries, I truly admire you. Just what are you gathering up branches for?”

Jian Chen tilted his head to look at the man; he looked simple and honest enough with those clear eyes.

“I’m using them to start a fire.” Jian Chen replied.

As soon as all the branches were collected and bundled, Jian

Chen stored them into his Space Ring and quickly left without a look back.

As the sturdy looking man stood where he had been talking to Jian Chen and looked at him run farther away from them before slowly saying, “That kid is quite mysterious.”

“Haha, even I think he is quite mysterious too! For a kid this young to participate, he’s stronger than me when I was his age. What an admirable achievement.” His companion laughed.

The man then revealed the tiniest of sneers, “Senior An, did you see that on his person, that ring on his finger was actually a Space Ring?”

“A Space Ring!” The sturdy man gasped with a bitter smile before scratching at his bald head in embarrassment. “I wasn’t paying attention at all. Yun Zheng, I could detect that that kid was stronger than me several times over. Despite him having a Space Ring, a simple Space Belt is well enough for a person’s everyday use. As long as one prepares one in advance, then they will save themselves some money.”

The middle aged man didn’t say anything and continued to look in the direction Jian Chen ran in. After a little while he left in another direction with the other man.

Jian Chen quickly returned to the original cave and immediately took out the branches from within his Space Ring to begin the campfire. With Qin Xiao’s heavy injuries, mobility was severely



restricted, so Jian Chen had calculated that they would have to stay within the cave for half a month and wait for Qin Xiao's condition to at least stabilize. For that reason, he had stockpiled a large amount of branches that filled a corner of the cave with a pile of wrist sized sticks.

Adding a few more sticks to the fire, Jian Chen continued to take out some medicinal herbs from Qin Xiao's Space Belt to treat his wounds and then wrapped some bandages over them. At the same time, the equally injured Qin Jue had taken out a few medicinal pills to swallow before sitting in a meditative state as he closed his eyes to allow his body to concentrate on healing.

The girl sat on a rock in a corner of the cave as she gently stroked her golden longbow with a concentrated expression.

The entire cave was rather peaceful and only the sounds of the crackling fire could be heard.

At that moment, the sounds of footsteps could be heard walking into the cave, causing Jian Chen who was tending to Qin Xiao's wounds to instantly stop his movements and look toward the entrance. He was already prepared to fight, although Qin Xiao was in a better state than before, he was in no state to fight at all. With his waist damaged, he was unable to exert much force, so Jian Chen would have to protect him.

The girl slowly raised her head as she stared at the cave's entrance as well while clenching the longbow in her hand. Although there weren't many that could challenge her, after seeing Shi Xiangran and the other user with a Ruler Armament, the two

of them were equally paranoid and vigilant.

In a flash, two figures entered Jian Chen's eyesight. With the light from the campfire, Jian Chen could see the appearances of the two men. One wore a black sleeveless gown and was quite sturdy in stature that revealed his dark skinned and muscular arms. The middle aged man behind him was well distributed in build, they were the two that Jian Chen had seen when he was collecting branches earlier.

“Get out!” The girl commanded coldly at the two.

## Chapter 307: Being Bold

---

As the two men saw the girl speak, the sturdy looking man took a look at the beautiful face of hers and immediately stopped right where he stood. Quickly regaining his awareness, he spoke with a depressed expression, “The miss is quite lively. I’ve traveled for thirty years and yet I’ve never seen such a vivid woman before, just what might be your name? I discovered this cave personally and coincidentally someone came in when I just left it. Even then, you are asking me to leave when it should really be you.”

Then, the man looked around the cave only to quickly discover that one of the people there was the one they had seen not too long ago—Jian Chen. When he saw him, he broke out into a smile, “How coincidental, fellow brother, we’ve found each other once again.”

Jian Chen looked at both the middle aged man and the sturdy looking man with a sharp stare only to discover that the both of them were Earth Saint Masters.

While those who could make the breakthrough from the Great Saint Master realm to the Earth Saint Master realm was only ten percent, those who could become an Earth Saint Master before the age of fifty was a one percent chance. Several hundred thousand men were participating in this competition, and only a small number of them, that wouldn’t exceed the triple digits, would be an Earth Saint Master.

Now this part of the competition was finally reaching a conclusion. By this point, the remaining few people that were completely intact were almost all Earth Saint Masters while a small

minority were Great Saint Masters. So it was very rare that two Great Saint Masters would suddenly appear as they did right in front of Jian Chen.

Without even waiting for Jian Chen's response, the sturdy man walked over to the side of the caves and sat down with a smile, "Fellow brother, since you have two injured men with you, I won't drive you out. We should all protect each other after all. Since everyone should be lively right now, let's talk about something, don't you think so Yun Zheng?" The sturdy man asked the middle aged man.

The middle aged man gave a small smile before saying, "Senior An is correct. If no one has any objections, then we should all rest. If we come across any piece of trouble, then we can help each other out, after all, the more people the stronger we are." The middle aged man sat down next to the burly man and began to look at the four people in front of him.

The girl continued to maintain her icy facade as she stared at the two men dangerously. Despite the looks of goodwill on their faces, she didn't plan on dropping her guard.

Looking at the girl, Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before nodding his head, "That's fine. We'll share this cave for now, but remember this: if someone dares to harm us in any way, then do not blame me for being impolite." With that, Jian Chen's eyes frosted over as a dangerous gleam entered them when he said his last sentence.

Hearing this, the middle aged man to the side of the burly one

grew uncomfortable for a moment. For a grand Earth Saint Master like him be threatened by a twenty year old child, that didn't seem right. With it as is, the man could conclude that Jian Chen wasn't an ordinary person. For a person to remain with their Space Belt for this long in an intense massacre of a competition without any major injuries was commendable. To also look at the two of them with such an arrogant expression, this was someone a person could rely on.

The man didn't seem to hear Jian Chen's threat and began to laugh, "I am called Senior An, the man to my side is called Yun Zheng, fellow brother, what is your name?"

Seeing the simple and straightforward manner of the burly man, Jian Chen immediately concluded that this man was honest. These type of people normally had no machinations hidden away within them, and even if they had, they wouldn't act upon them.

Memories from long ago were suddenly recalled back into his mind as Jian Chen thought about his eldest brother Changyang Hu and Tie Ta from Kargath Academy. These two were very similar to the Senior An in front of him. Because of this, Jian Chen's impression of him was decent.

"I am called Jian Chen!" Jian Chen spoke with a friendly smile at Senior An.

The girl who was sitting on a rock stared at the smiling Jian Chen with a complex look. Not too long after, the cold hard look on her face receded away and was replaced with a rarely seen gentle look.

Because of his genes and his cultivation methods, Jian Chen's appearance was exceptionally handsome and could even be said to be perfect. His smile could stun anyone, and there was not a single girl under the heavens that could resist. Even the girl not too far away from him had been dazed a bit. Quickly, she recovered herself and tore her eyes away from Jian Chen to look elsewhere.

"Jian Chen, I can see that you are quite young, perhaps not even twenty five years old." Senior An asked.

Jian Chen gave a small smile but didn't respond to him.

Senior An looked toward the yellow clothed girl and continued to ask, "Little girl, you've grown to be quite beautiful, even I've grown quite astounded. What is your name?"

With a snort, the girl turned away from him and leaned against the wall to look at the dusky cave roof.

With an embarrassed laugh, the burly man turned to Jian Chen for help.

"Senior An, don't bother, her temper is quite bad," Jian Chen smiled. Even he didn't know the girl's name other than the time when Shi Xiangran had called out to her as Luan Er.

Hearing Jian Chen's words, the girl immediately whirled around with a furious expression, "You're the one with a bad temper!"

Senior An stealthily took a look at the girl with a hand scratching his nose and thought to himself, “It seems Jian Chen is correct. While this girl is quite lively, her temper is equally large. This isn’t a person we should offend.”

Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed as he looked on with a displeased expression. Then, he took out a few Space Belts with dried blood and a Space Ring.

“Woah, Jian Chen, you’ve so many Space Belts! There’s even blood on some of them, did you steal those?” Senior An looked at Jian Chen with a look of shock and his mouth wide open.

Even Yun Zheng who was sitting right next to Senior An looked at Jian Chen with some shock and a strange look in his eyes.

Jian Chen laughed at Senior An’s words and replied, “Is it considered stealing if they tried first?”

Under the amazed eyes of Senior An and Yun Zheng, Jian Chen began to take out and classify the items within the Space Belt and Space Ring. In total, there were four Purple Cards, three Class 5 Monster Cores, two hundred Class 4 Monster Cores, five hundred Class 3 Monster Cores. There was a small mountain of money that shined with purple, gold, and even silver lights. There was also a small pile of around four hundred tokens lying about.

Seeing the pile of black colored tokens, Senior An’s eyes immediately zoomed in on it and nearly began to drool as he

muttered, “Wa, there’s so many tokens...”

Even Yun Zheng had been moved by such a sight as his heart began to beat wildly.

Jian Chen didn’t lift his head up from the pile and began to divide the items into two smaller piles. Storing them within a Space Belt, he handed them to the girl and said, “Take it, these are yours.”

The girl stared fiercely at Jian Chen as she took the two hundred tokens from within the Space Belt into her own. Then, she threw the Space Belt back at Jian Chen and said, “The other things in here are of no value to me.”

Without any more objections, Jian Chen took the remaining items into his own Space Belt. The two Purple Cards, two Class 5 Monster Cores, a hundred Class 4 Monster Cores, and the pile of money, he didn’t think that the girl would be so rich that she would disregard this wealth of items.

Senior An stared at the Space Belt thrown at Jian Chen with some disbelief and swallowed the saliva building up in his throat with some difficulty. Turning to look at the handsome Jian Chen, his bald head thumped against the walls of the cave continuously in regret. “Why couldn’t I have been born a few years later? Ah....why couldn’t I have been born handsome? I’ve only just figured it out, if one is born handsome and popular, even the beautiful women will take the initiative to give the good items to you...”



Senior An continued to mutter to himself as if no one was around. The girl sitting on top of the rock began to heave up and down in anger while trying to pretend to ignore the man. But her eyes continued to shoot fire as she stared maliciously at him.

Sitting right next to Senior An, Yun Zheng looked at Jian Chen and the girl with a sluggish look. Seeing how the girl acted shocked his heart. Two Purple Cards, two Class 5 Monster Cores, a hundred Class 4 Monster Cores and a large sum of money was not an easy thing to give away. This sight was far too much for him, the items in that Space Belt were an abundant amount of wealth and would even tempt an Earth Saint Master.

“It would appear that despite the age of these two, they are not people of ordinary status. To be able to toss around a Class 5 Monster Core, they must belong to powerful people and hold powerful positions.” The man thought to himself.

## Chapter 308: Yun Zheng's Shock

---

Time flew by, Jian Chen and the group of people camped in the cave for seven days. In that time, Jian Chen, Senior An, and Yun Zheng continued to talk among each other in a good natured manner. The yellowed clothed girl rarely spoke, even now, Jian Chen still didn't know her name.

Qin Xiao's injuries continued to slowly heal, and while the cut mark on his waist wasn't completely healed, a small scab was already forming. With the help of some medicine, another ten days would be needed before he could walk. Even Qin Jue's injuries had healed sufficiently enough for him to fight. With his valiant strength, it would take another few days for him to heal completely.

Within the dark cave, the fire that had been burning incessantly danced slowly. By the side, the sitting Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and looked around the room. Qin Jue, the girl, and Senior An were all sitting in a meditative position and Qin Xiao was still laying on the stretcher with his eyes closed in a sleeping position. Only Yun Zheng was not in the cave.

Jian Chen re-stoked the flames before walking out of the caves. A while after he had left, the yellow clothed girl opened her eyes from her meditative position and scoured the place. Then, closing her eyes, she went still again.

Arriving at the cave's entrance, Jian Chen began to take in the fresh air of the outside world before closing his eyes in a pleased manner. The ventilation within the cave wasn't the best, and the

stuffy, hot air within the cave caused everyone inside to feel uncomfortable.

Taking in another deep breath, he climbed down the mountain slope to wander about. Since he had to protect Qin Xiao, Jian Chen didn't dare go far. Until Qin Xiao was fully healed, Jian Chen didn't plan on leaving this place. If they were to travel with an immobile Qin Xiao and came across a strong individual, then it would be very problematic. Even if he wasn't afraid for himself, but if the target was Qin Xiao, Jian Chen would be stuck in a problematic situation.

In this short amount of time, Jian Chen had collected a total of at least a thousand tokens. The competition had only required a total of five hundred tokens in order to pass, so Jian Chen was well above what was needed. The only thing left for him to do was survive for the rest of the time limit.

Jian Chen leaped into a thirty meter tall tree and sat on top of a tree branch. Laying down on it, his head continued to think about the Ming Dong who was still within the hidden shrine, "I wonder how Ming Dong is doing. His ancestor was good friends with the shrine lord; he will definitely help out Ming Dong. When I see him again, he'll definitely be vastly different."

"This Gathering of the Mercenaries is the easiest way to obtain a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. As long as I try my hardest, then I will definitely obtain it! When I am strong enough, I will be able to return to the Gesun Kingdom and settle my debt with the Hua Yun Sect. With a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, the Changyang clan will definitely increase in power as well." Muttering to himself, Jian

Chen continued to lay about on the tree as he stared up with a determined look.

Shortly after, Jian Chen let out a breath of air with a worried look. “The Gesun Kingdom is currently in a bad situation. The neighboring four kingdoms are uniting against them. Within two years, there will definitely be a war between the two sides. Before that happens, I must increase my strength as much as possible and be of some help.”

As Jian Chen continued to plan for the future on top of his tree branch, the shadows of three men quickly flew toward his direction with the speed of an arrow.

From the three men, the frontmost person was especially pale and drenched with blood. His originally white robes were heavily stained with blood as the two men behind him chased him with their Saint Weapons ready to strike.

Sensing the three men, Jian Chen pushed aside the foliage in order to see just what was happening from his overhead perch. Just as he looked at the three men, he revealed a surprised look before smiling, “I didn’t think that he would be chased in such a manner. It seems that he plans to bring them back to our campground.” With that, Jian Chen leaped down from his tree branch and stood right next to a tree in front of the three men.

From the three men, the person running away was the same person from the caves, Yun Zheng. At this moment, Yun Zheng was in a miserable state and had long since lost his svelte attitude.

The moment Yun Zheng noticed Jian Chen, an indescribable light flashed in his eyes before increasing his speed a bit. Flying toward Jian Chen, the pale Yun Zheng began to breathe heavily as he took refuge behind him, “Brother Jian Chen! Let’s hurry up and run! These two men are too strong, let’s go and get Senior An to help deal with them!”

Jian Chen shook his head with a smile, “My brother is currently resting inside, I don’t wish to shock him.”

“But...” Yun Zheng held some reluctance in his face, but he said no more after that as Jian Chen held his hand up, “I’ll deal with this matter here.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s calm attitude, Yun Zheng slowly began to calm himself down before standing quietly behind Jian Chen. He wanted to see just how strong of an Earth Saint Master Jian Chen was.

The two men chasing after Yun Zheng came to a stop several meters away from Jian Chen. The two looked to be around forty years old and both wore blue robes that did nothing to hide their bulging muscles. One of the men was quite short and looked to be around five feet tall with dark skin as black as coal. The other man was rather skinny looking and had an average appearance with a bent nose. On the left side of his face there were several intersecting scars that destroyed his face. His face was rather terrifying to look at, but it also increased his intimidation factor.

The two men sized up Jian Chen as they looked at him. Giving each other a small look, one of the two immediately walked up to Jian Chen before pushing him out of the way.

Jian Chen wrapped his hands against his chest before smiling at the two, “Fellow brothers, what might you two be doing?”

Seeing the expression on Jian Chen’s face, the short one began to feel annoyed at him. Without another thought, he glowered at both Jian Chen and Yun Zheng, “If you know what’s good for you, hand over your Space Belt at once or else, hmph!”

“Or else what?” Jian Chen continued to smile.

The short one glared at Jian Chen with an even more cruel stare before roaring, “Or else you two will die here today!”

In an instant, Jian Chen released a large amount of killing intent, “Is that so? Then allow me to send you on your way.” With that, Jian Chen disappeared from view before reappearing in front of the short man. At the same time, his Light Wind Sword immediately came into view before the chilling cold Sword Qi stabbed at the short man with blinding speed.

The short man hadn’t expected for Jian Chen to make such a sudden move so quickly. Before he could even react or dodge the sword strike, the silver sword had already stabbed straight through his throat.

Jian Chen's sword was far too fast, in an instant, the short man had been caught off guard and killed. Even as an Earth Saint Master, it was still impossible for him to dodge Jian Chen's strike.

Without stopping, Jian Chen immediately pulled out his bloody sword from the short man's throat before disappearing from view once more. In an instant, his sword flashed as it flew at the other Earth Saint Master.

At that moment, the Earth Saint Master hadn't reacted yet as he stared in horror at the incoming Jian Chen. Then, it was with a serious look that he had realized this youth he had disregarded earlier was in fact a tiger wearing a sheepskin.

"Ha!" The man roared as his Saint Force exploded out of his body. The Saint Weapon in his hand began to flood with a blue colored light as he slashed at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's figure blurred as he dodged the other man's sword. His Light Wind Sword became a silver glow of light that flew at his throat.

Reacting quickly, the man tilted his head to dodge Jian Chen's strike and allowed the sword to slip past him. However, the sword swept past his neck and a small cut appeared on his throat. As the man was starting to rejoice, he suddenly felt a stinging sensation on his neck. Before he could even look down and see what happened, his head was immediately cut off. It spun through the air before falling back down to the ground as his headless body fell to the ground with blood flying everywhere.

These two men were strong enough to force an Earth Saint Master like Yun Zheng to flee, but in an instant, they had been killed in a single strike by Jian Chen. That made Yun Zheng open his eyes wide in disbelief and shock at what had just happened. This type of strength, was this really something a twenty-year-old youth should be able to possess?

Standing to the side of Jian Chen, Yun Zheng tried to breathe in and out in order to calm himself. Although he knew that Jian Chen was already an extremely terrifying Earth Saint Master, he didn't think that the two men that were chasing after him would be dealt with in a single strike.

Despite this fight happening right in front of his eyes, Yun Zheng still couldn't believe it and thought he was dreaming. This was an illusion and not reality—it completely toppled over what he knew as true. As a traveler in the continent who had painfully cultivated for thirty to forty years before finally making a breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master before the age of fifty, this was already an achievement that could be considered to be a genius. Those who became an Earth Saint Master before the age of fifty were all well known experts and geniuses of cultivation with a bright future. Right now, two Earth Saint Masters were killed by a youth that wasn't even twenty five years old. This was a massive blow to Yun Zheng, and as such, this was the very first time that he had felt that this world was truly unfair and absurd.



## Chapter 309: Immortal's Cave

---

After dealing with the two men, Jian Chen collected the Space Belts of both Earth Saint Masters. Turning their bodies aside, Jian Chen didn't see anything else of value on their bodies. While these two were Earth Saint Masters, aside from their robes and Space Belts, there wasn't any Space Rings to be seen.

Space Rings were treasures within the Tian Yuan Continent that were symbols of status and power. Although Earth Saint Masters were qualified to have a Space Ring, not all of them had one.

Jian Chen looked at the bloody Yun Zheng and spoke to him, "Let us go back and treat your injuries. Walking out here with injuries isn't a safe thing to do." The two then left the area.

Yun Zheng watched the slowly disappearing back of Jian Chen with some remaining shock. Before he had even blinked, Jian Chen had killed two Earth Saint Masters; something like this would give him an everlasting impression of Jian Chen.

"Ai, could he be one of the rumored geniuses?" Yun Zheng sighed before running to catch up with the receding figure of Jian Chen.

The two figures returned to the cave where the bloody figure of Yun Zheng attracted the attention of everyone. The one friendliest to Yun Zheng, Senior An, stood straight up with a furious expression, "Yun Zheng, what bastard did this to you? Tell me, and I'll go tear them limb from limb!"

Seeing just how concerned Senior An was, Yun Zheng smiled faintly, “I had some bad luck. When I was hunting, I came across two Earth Saint Masters. But fortunately, brother Jian Chen came along and killed them both.”

Hearing Yun Zheng, Qin Xiao who was lying nearby stared at Jian Chen with a surprised look before turning suspicious and doubtful at Yun Zheng’s words. “Jian Chen, is what he says true? You were able to take down two Earth Saint Masters by yourself?” Qin Xiao spoke with an expecting tone.

Sitting nearby, Qin Jue’s ears shook slightly, but his eyes didn’t open.

Jian Chen nodded his head, but gave no response.

Qin Xiao took on a pleasantly surprised look as he spoke with some excitement, “Jian Chen, just how did you grow to become so amazing in such a short amount of time? When we first initially fought, I knew that you were already amazing, but I didn’t think that you would be able to kill an Earth Saint Master so easily!”

“That is because during the time I left the Tianqin clan, I managed to make a breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master.” Jian Chen replied.

Hearing that, Qin Jue’s eyes snapped open as he looked at Jian Chen with shock. Even as his eyes opened, he remained as still as a statue.

“So it was like this...” Qin Xiao spoke with some understanding.

.....

Time went by in a flash soon there was only half a month remaining in the competition. In that time, Jian Chen had rarely ventured out and spent the majority of his time within the cave and silently protected Qin Xiao. The yellow clothed girl had used her Solunar Bow to make a new cave for her to privately cultivate. Senior An and Yun Zheng both constantly walked outside and came back to the cave with bruised bodies the majority of the time. A few of the times, they had been chased down by several strong Earth Saint Masters back “home” where Jian Chen would promptly deal with them.

The power that Jian Chen would constantly display always reminded Senior An and Yun Zheng of his strength. Those of the same cycle were miles away from Jian Chen’s level. Second and Third Cycle Earth Saint Masters were not an opponent for Jian Chen at all. Not too long after, Jian Chen had unconsciously become the pillar for Yun Zheng and Senior An.

After several more days, Qin Xiao’s body had been completely healed. Almost as if he had provoked Jian Chen’s ire, Qin Xiao immediately set himself about to cultivate as soon as he was healed with the assistance of monster cores in order to reach the Earth Saint Master realm as soon as possible.

As for Qin Jue who had healed even earlier, it was almost as if he cherished words like gold. Ever since he had met Jian Chen up until now, he had never said more than ten words total. This had

made him even more quiet than Katafei back in Wake City.

In the quiet cave, only the sounds of the crackling fire could be heard inside as the light constantly flickered.

Jian Chen sat in a meditative position in a corner of the cave with a Class 5 Monster Core in his hand in order to absorb it. With the Gesun Kingdom on the verge of danger and the Changyang clan as well, he had to hurry up and increase his strength. There was no time to squabble around and waste time.

Within the dark cave, everyone was cultivating, causing the leaking energy from the monster cores to gather within the cave. It was as if the cave was originally filled with this energy and was paradise for cultivators.

At this time, the sounds of rapid footsteps could be heard. Jian Chen's ears shook slightly from the sound, but he made no movements to get up from his position.

The footsteps grew closer as Senior An and Yun Zheng both entered.

“Jian Chen, I've news, good news! I've heard from someone on the outside that there is cave to the south of the forest that used to have a senior cultivator in it. There's treasure inside, and I'm willing to bet there's at least one Heaven Tier Battle Skill!” Senior An spoke out hurriedly.

The moment Jian Chen heard the words “Heaven Tier Battle Skill”, he instantly snapped open his eyes. Although everyone was cultivating within the cave, in this sort of condition, they remained vigilant to the outside world. Not even the subtle and sudden gust of wind would be able to escape their notice.

Qin Xiao’s eyes widened as he said, “Heaven Tier Battle Skill? Are you sure that’s right? What if some enemy was trying to announce false news and later set up a huge trap for everyone?”

Senior An shook his head, “That I don’t know. But many people are already heading on over there, I’ve heard that even the five experts are going there.”

“Five experts? What five experts?” Qin Xiao questioned.

“The five experts are men with a very well known reputation and are also the strongest men around. In a short amount of time, practically everybody and everyone knows their names.” Yun Zheng spoke out to Jian Chen. While he knew Jian Chen was strong, he didn’t know whether or not he was stronger than the five experts.

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat, “Who are the five experts and what are their names?”

“They are called [Qin Ji](#), Dugu Feng, Tianmu Ling, Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang.”

TL Note; Qin Ji is not from the Tianqin clan.

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes slightly at the mention of one of the names as he muttered, “I’ve no idea that he would covet these treasures or even be called one of the Five Experts.”

“Jian Chen, shall we go or stay?” Qin Xiao spoke, clearly showing that Jian Chen was the leader.

Jian Chen hummed to himself before saying, “We are going.” Standing up, he spoke again, “There’s no time to waste, we have to go now. There’s only fifteen days of the competition remaining.”

Afterward, Jian Chen led Senior An, Yun Zheng, Qin Jue and Qin Xiao out of the cave while the longbow girl coincidentally flew out from her cave as well to follow.

“I’ve heard there is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill in the southern caves. We’re going to go investigate, do you want to come along?” Jian Chen asked the girl.

For a moment, the girl’s eyes rested upon Jian Chen before nodding slightly without any more words.

“This time, we may come across our dear old friend, you should prepare yourself.” Jian Chen said.

With that, the six people flew out of the caves toward the south.

On the way, Jian Chen noticed plenty of people rushing the south as well. With information about a Heaven Tier Battle Skill being left behind in a senior cultivator's cave, every single person was rushing on over.

These men were primarily Great Saint Masters with a small bag to hold their possessions on their backs. Their Space Belts had long since been taken from them aside from a few sets of clothes and food. For these men without tokens, the Earth Saint Masters wouldn't bother them any longer unless there was some sort of deep grievances they had between each other. So these Great Saint Masters could travel on the road without any major fears.

Occasionally, there would several fights that broke out among foes, but those did not impede Jian Chen's group at all. Many of those who saw Jian Chen's group were quite smart. When they saw the colorful clothes and the Space Belts that swayed with their bodies every step, each one of them could guess that the people with Jian Chen were all extremely strong.

They traveled for five days when Jian Chen and the group finally reached a dense forest. In this location, there were several groups of competitors that were all here to see if the information was accurate or not.

"I've heard that there are several extremely strong magical beasts guarding the cave. Even the five experts and around thirty Earth Saint Masters fought several times without a chance of success of entering the cave.'

"That's right, I've heard there were several battles, and some of

the Earth Saint Masters already died. Only three of the five experts still remain untouched.”

“The magical beasts guarding the cave are too strong! If it goes on like this, then I’m afraid no one will be able to enter the cave before the time is up!”

“Nothing is guaranteed just yet. Right now the secret of this place is already leaked. Haven’t you seen the never ending stream of people coming here? Just wait for the five experts to all assemble, then they’ll be able to enter.”



# Chapter 310: Gathering Of The Five Experts (One)

---

By the time Jian Chen had arrived, information of the cave had already propagated throughout the area. By now, Jian Chen could confirm that while there was no confirmation of a Heaven Tier Battle Skill inside the cave, the very existence of the cave was real.

Jian Chen didn't bother to step right in front of this crowd and immediately led his group past them and into the forest. Hearing the news from everyone else, Jian Chen had learned that the location of the immortal's cave was in the depths of the forest.

Because there had already been countless of people here, the forests had the obvious distinction of what directions people had traveled in. Jian Chen began to follow the popular path for another four hours before finally coming to a man-made spot of flattened ground.

There were plenty of men gathered here—around three hundred men were formed in groups and several tents were scattered about. From the outside, one could see several men lying about within the tents to rest. All over the area, there were plenty of people sitting on the tree branches eating and drinking while others were resting.

There were several Earth Saint Masters— a quick count estimated there to be below forty. There were several bandaged Great Saint Masters and only a few of them still had a Space Belt.

The people in this area all seemed as if they had reached a peaceful agreement to not fight with each other or grab at their tokens. It was rather peaceful here with no one causing a disturbance.

“Let’s go see what’s up front.” Jian Chen spoke to the people by his side as they moved forward.

Jian Chen’s group had attracted the attention of many people as everyone stared at their brightly dressed group. However, not a single person came to accost them.

That was because the experts of the crowd could detect that this group had three Earth Saint Masters and thus saw no need to get into some sort of conflict. No one in this crowd wanted to offend a group with three Earth Saint Masters for no reason.

Jian Chen and the group of five continued on when all of a sudden, they heard the animalistic sounds of a magical beast. Straight after the sound, an insanely strong amount of energy rippled through the air and caused the entire earth to tremble. The countless trees up ahead of Jian Chen could be seen slightly uprooting from the ground thanks to the energy before flying straight into the air. Ahead of them, several shadows of gargantuan beasts could be seen flying at full speed toward them with a heavy presence that made it difficult to breathe.

Jian Chen’s expression turned dark as he held out his hand to the people behind him, “Get back, now!”

Without hesitation, the group flew backward in an attempt to return to the forest where the flat clearing was.

Just as Jian Chen and his group ran back to the clearing, a group of tattered men followed behind Jian Chen from the direction of the magical beasts. There was a total of twelve men. Among the group, there was a twenty eight year old youth that was similar to Ming Dong in age. This youth wore blue robes and carried a two meter long fire like sword that towered over his head. There were another four, thirty year old men with rather handsome appearances. The rest were all forty years old around with determined looks on their faces. Within this group, there were some people with blood dripping down their lips and had pale faces due to their injuries.

This group of people had attracted the attention of everyone there. As three hundred pairs of eyes landed on this group, everyone began to chatter among themselves.

“It seems this group lost again. Ai, the guardians to the cave are too strong...”

“Hmph, just how could the guardian magical beasts to the immortal cave be that easy to deal with? Without the five experts along with every single Earth Saint Masters combined together to deal with these magical beasts, then we would only just be wasting our energy.”

“Just hold on, the magical beasts here are too strong, I can only guess that they are already at the Class 6 level. Only the combined power of the five experts would be enough to fight these magical

beasts.”

“How unfortunate, the five experts are all Earth Saint Masters. If we had a Heaven Saint Master, then entering the cave would have been easy.”

.....

Seeing the youth with a longsword on his back, the girl’s eyes gained a dangerous gleam as she spoke, “That’s a Ruler Armament!”

Jian Chen grew surprised as his eyes zoomed in on the fire sword on the youth’s back before gradually turning serious. He was well familiar with a Ruler Armament now and knew that they originated from the remnants of a Saint Ruler’s Saint Weapon. The remaining amount of energy within the weapons was enough to make a Heaven Saint Master shudder. However, a Ruler’s Armament wasn’t something anyone could use to their full extent. An Earth Saint Master was only able to use one or two parts of the Ruler Armament, but despite that, the power was still terrifying.

As if remembering this fact, Jian Chen thought back to the fire sword as it gave off a bright red light that was strong enough to cause the Seal of Treasure Mountain from Shi Xiangran to be sent flying back. That one battle between Shi Xiangran and this person had attracted the eyes of many people, but Jian Chen had never found out the conclusion to that fight.

“Could it be that this youth was the one that fought against Shi

Xiangran?” Jian Chen thought.

The other dozen men walked back into their tents to rest, slowly disappearing from everyone’s sight.

“The magical beasts up front are too strong, we’ll have to wait for a moment longer and wait for more people to come before we can try again.” Jian Chen said.

Afterward, the six people all grabbed a tent from their Space Belts and began to set it up in a small circle closeby.

“Hey hey, you there! Who gave you and your group permission to set up camp here? Hurry up and tear them down, hurry up and take them down!” A thirty year old man came into view and stared angrily at Jian Chen and the other five. This man was rather skinny and wore a white robe. There was an arrogant look on his face which also had a single three claw scratch on it.

Everyone turned to look at the noise as many of them began to smile at the misfortune of the group.

“This group surely doesn’t know the rules of this place. Could it be that they didn’t see how many people were afraid of setting up tents here? They were right to not do so, if everyone were to be able to set up their tents, then there wouldn’t be any spot to have a tent at all.” A man muttered as he drank from his wine gourd on a tree branch.

“They must be newcomers to this place and don’t know the rules. Ai, just why aren’t they a bit smart? Did they not see how many people there are here but only a few tents? This isn’t a place that just anyone could have a tent.” Another man spoke up from his tree branch.

The white robed man immediately walked up to where Jian Chen’s group was. The moment he saw that Jian Chen had no intention on tearing down their tents, his face distorted in anger as he shouted, “Did you not hear me? I said to tear your tents down, now!” The man then kicked apart Qin Jue’s tent before stomping toward Jian Chen’s tent. With a kick, he attempted to tear down Jian Chen’s tent.

A flash of killing intent appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes. In an instant, the Light Wind Sword appeared in his hand as a silver white light followed it. In an instant, the sword had slashed through the man’s leg.

“Ah!” The man let loose a howling sound in misery. The leg he had let loose to tear down Jian Chen’s tent had instantly been cut off, causing blood to leak from the stump.

Reabsorbing the sword, Jian Chen kicked the man’s chest, causing him to fly ten meters away into the air before falling to the ground and tumbling several steps violently.

The fortitude of the man was evidently very weak as he began to scream out in pain continuously in a suffering manner.

Those who had been watching with interest at first all stared at the twenty year old youth with disbelief now. At this sight, the power displayed had been far more than what they had imagined.

A purple robed man with a resolute expression immediately came into the tent ground, he was one of the dozen men that had come back from the forest. When he saw the amputated leg of the man who was screaming on the ground, an unknown flash of light appeared in his eyes as he stared around the campgrounds, “What happened here?” The purple robed man’s voice was especially calm, making it seem as if he was only inquiring about the matter.

At this moment, several of the tents opened up simultaneously. The men that appeared from the tents were all from the party that had ventured into the forest and were brought to the scene due to the screaming man.

“Jie Kaxi, who’s the one that hurt you?” A horrified voice could be heard as a scarred middle aged man came running forth like an arrow to the man with a furious face.

“Big brother, it was him! He cut off my leg, my leg! Ah, my leg! Brother, you must help me kill him!” The man pointed at Jian Chen with a furious look. The unbearable pain had already caused his face to distort.

The scarred man looked at Jian Chen before standing up slowly. A three meter long red spear appeared in his hands before quickly running toward Jian Chen without a single word. The spear danced with a fiery red glow as it flew toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen gained a cold look in his eyes as the Light Wind Sword smashed against the spear. The collision caused a large shockwave of energy to fly out, crushing the surrounding ten meters of vegetation into the ground.

The people watching all retreated back several steps in order to allow the two people to settle their dispute.



# Chapter 311: Gathering Of The Five Experts (Two)

---

Jian Chen's sword struck out immediately as it left behind a single mirror image. Slowly, the mirror image turned into a dense net of mirror images that enshrouded the enemy. Several metallic clangs could be heard as the weapons struck against each other in a continuous motion, the energy scattering around the area and leaving a mess.

"This youth is quite strong if he's able to fight Zhe Gu to a standstill." The fire sword wielding youth muttered under his breath with some shock.

"This youth is quite complex to be able to fight Zhe Gu on a scale like this without being put at a disadvantage. Geniuses are too scary; when he grows older, he will definitely be a person of major influence and power. My lord, should we go rope him into our grace?" The purple-robed man asked the fire sword-wielding youth.

The sword wielder looked on with a flash of killing intent, "With his strength, he'll definitely try to fight for the number one spot in the Gathering of the Mercenaries; he is a rival."

With that, the purple robed man understood the meaning of the youth's words and went quiet.

On the other side, a youth around the age of thirty years old wore a white robe with golden linings. Both of his hands were wrapped

up against his chest as he watched the two fight, “It seems Jiede Wukang’s men have provoked a decent fighter. I didn’t think he’d be so young though.”

“That’s right; that youth is quite decent if he’s able to fight Zhe Gu to a standstill. If his strength was limited by just a small amount, it would be his defeat for sure. While Jiede Wukang’s strength isn’t as good as Zhe Gu, with a Ruler Armament, he can only be matched up against others with a Ruler Armament. Otherwise, no one aside from a Heaven Saint Master would be an opponent for him.” The white robe man by his side said.

“It would seem that the youth will die here. When it comes to Jiede Wukang’s temper, absolutely no one in this world can escape from it after provoking him.”

“That might not be the case here lord Qin Ji. Do you see that yellow-robed girl behind him?” The man spoke with a smile.

Hearing that, the one named Qin Ji turned to look at the girl. Unable to move his eyes away from the sight, he said, “What a stunning girl; her face is as cold as ice. Her eyes even give off a grim feeling; this is absolutely not a simple girl.”

The middle aged man laugh and said, “Lord Qin Ji, do you see the golden longbow on her back?”

Qin Ji immediately looked away from the girl and onto the longbow on her back. he said nothing after.

The middle aged man said, “I don’t recognize what bow that is, but I can only assume it’s not an ordinary one. It isn’t her Saint Weapon because I can’t detect any Saint Force from it. So, I can only guess that bow is actually a....”

“Second uncle, could it be that bow is a....” Qin Ji spoke with shock.

“I don’t dare confirm it.” The man shook his head

.....

“First Technique of the Divine Spear’s Three Techniques—Shadows of the Spear!” A voice cried out as the middle aged man’s spear began to fill the air with its shadow, stabbing toward Jian Chen. The shadows of the spear were numerous, making it difficult to tell which one was real and which one was fake. Each one of them were like the real one as it released a strong amount of pressure.

This technique was almost parallel to Jian Chen’s sword strikes.

“That’s an Earth Tier Battle Skill!” A person cried out.

“An Earth Tier Battle Skill? That’s second to a Heaven Tier Battle Skill; I didn’t think I would be able to see one today!”

“I’ve heard a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was enough to change the winds of battle and even distort the world. Who knows what an

Earth Tier Battle Skill will be capable of?”

Jian Chen let out a sneer as he closed his eyes. His right hand continued to blur as the sword in his hand covered the air with phantom images of the sword that rivaled the spear's in numbers.

“Ding ding ding ding....”

Following a series of metallic sounds in a short amount of time, the man and Jian Chen continued to fight for a hundred blows. The two were traveling at speeds so fast they were almost invisible to the naked eye. The only difference was that while the man was relying on his battle skill in order to strike at such high speeds, Jian Chen was relying on his own strength to lash out at equal speeds.

“What a fast speed!” The fire sword youth cried out in shock.

“His sword is too fast; even I find it hard to keep track of the real one.” The purple-robed man spoke in amazement.

“What a fast sword; just what did he do in order to reach a speed where he could fight against the battle skill of Zhe Gu?” Qin Ji asked in amazement.

“Even I'm curious about this. A Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master with the wind attribute would find it difficult to achieve such a speed. His Saint Force is clearly not of the wind attribute, yet he is still able to achieve such a speed. It makes me feel too astonished;

just what is helping his arm swing that fast?”

“Second Technique of the Divine Spear–Divine Dragon’s Tail!”

A bright red spear flew into the air before smashing downward with an extreme amount of force onto Jian Chen. At the same time, an intense amount of pressure pressed down onto him as if it was a heavy stone, causing Jian Chen to feel unable to advance a single step.

Without fear, Jian Chen lifted his sword and with a large amount of Sword Qi, he met the spear head on.

“Bang!”

Following a loud explosion, a large ripple of energy surrounded Jian Chen as he was forced back several steps with his arms trembling slightly. Following his backward momentum, two small ditches could be seen from the drag.

As an Earth Tier Battle Skill, the second technique and first technique were equal in strength almost.

“Third Technique — All Conquering Divine Spear!”

Just as Jian Chen regained his footing, Zhe Gu roared once more as the fire red-colored light began to shine brightly. A large amount of compressed berserk energy began to form on the tip of the spear. Jian Chen suddenly felt as if that this spear was

undodgeable as if the spear was locked on onto him. The only option left was to take it head on.

Jian Chen closed his eyes slowly as he carefully monitored Zhe Gu's position. At this moment, his "Spirit" and the Light Wind Sword in his hand established a deep connection that caused the sword to grow colder as a bright amount of Sword Qi burst out. As the sword was completely enveloped, it suddenly left Jian Chen's hand with a burst of silver light before shooting forward.

"Bang!"

Another loud bang could be heard as the compressed energy on the spear's tip lost its equilibrium. Exploding violently, the explosion looked as if there was a beautiful flower on the spear. It continued to expand as the bright red light stunned everyone that saw it.

The dirt from the ground went flying as the powerful energy scattered through the entire area and forced everyone around a hundred meters back while Jian Chen and Zhe Gu were drowned within the energy.

In half a moment, the energy dissipated completely, revealing Jian Chen and Zhe Gu's positions to everyone else. The two men looked completely intact and had only suffered a small bit of damage from the energy blast with their clothes a bit disheveled. The binding on Jian Chen's hair had already been lost, causing Jian Chen's long hair to dance in the hurricane-like wind. In his right hand was the same silver Light Wind Sword.

Right in front of him, Zhe Gu remained in his spear-wielding stance while his body continued to remain in that position without moving. The hair that used to reach down to his waist had been severed so that only the hair from the neck up remained.

Suddenly, Zhe Gu's throat began to show some blood before a small thin line began to expand across his throat. In a split second, the line became bright red in color, and, in the next second, Zhe Gu's entire head separated from his body and fell to the ground.

Everyone looking at this spectacle went into an uproar as they all looked at Jian Chen and Zhe Gu's corpse with complete and utter shock.

In that split second, they all didn't know what had happened. They could all see that Zhe Gu had launched the final attack of his Earth Tier Battle Skills, but Jian Chen had neither died nor suffered any heavy injuries. They hadn't expected this outcome where Jian Chen would stand without a scratch after the Earth Tier Battle Skill was released. Even more so, they didn't imagine that the unbelievably strong Zhe Gu would have his head drop to the ground.

Just how did Zhe Gu die?

What happened in that one split second?

Everyone began to think about these questions as they swirled around in their minds.

“To dare kill one of our Jiede Clansmen, you are seeking death!” In that moment, a furious person roared as a thirty-year-old youth with a meter-long sword flew at Jian Chen. A fire-like Saint Force began to billow out from him, causing everyone to look at him with shock.

“What a strong burst of energy!”

“Could he be a Heaven Saint Master?”

.....

A few of the Earth Saint Masters who thought themselves as the strongest began to look on with shock.

Even Jian Chen’s face grew deathly serious as he saw the Ruler Armament in the youth’s hand. This would be the second Ruler Armament he had seen in this place, and the both of them were swords of the fire element.

“Die!” The youth stared at Jian Chen as he swung down his Ruler Armament.

Jian Chen was already familiar with what a Ruler Armament was, so without daring to meet it head on, he retreated backward. At the same time, a bright golden light flashed from behind as it flew toward the Ruler Armament.



# Chapter 312: Gathering Of The Five Experts (Three)

---

The golden light that appeared behind Jian Chen suddenly struck against the Ruler Armament with a loud ear ringing sound. Another blast of energy flew out from the collision and spread out toward everyone watching. Those with the strength of a Great Saint Master within a hundred meters were instantly sent flying away. Against such an intense amount of energy, only those with an Earth Saint Master level of strength would be able to stand their ground.

The golden light that had struck against the youth's Ruler Armament caused him to be shocked before the explosion and shockwave sent him flying back several meters. When he regained his footing, his face was already beginning to pale.

Ruler Armaments were extremely strong, and when two Ruler Armaments clashed in such a close proximity, even an Earth Saint Master would be hit with a strong feedback. That recent explosion that happened right in front of the youth's eyes had clearly dealt some minor damage to him, but because his strength wasn't all that strong, if he were to discard his Ruler Armament, he would be weaker than Zhe Gu.

The youth holding the Ruler Armament looked at the longbow wielding girl behind Jian Chen with a terrified look as he spoke out, stuttering, "Rul-Ruler Arma-Armament!"

The girl didn't reply to the man and lowered her bow slightly. Then, her hand gripped the longbow tightly and prepared to fire

off a second arrow.

“I didn’t think there’d be another Ruler Armament here, let alone a longbow modeled one.” The two meter fire sword wielding man spoke with amazement toward the longbow.

Qin Ji let out a long sigh as he stared at the sight with a complicated look, “Second uncle, it seems that your guess was correct, that longbow is definitely a Ruler Armament.”

The middle aged man standing right next to Qin Ji smiled faintly, “I truly didn’t think that longbow would be a Ruler Armament. How unexpected, that means there are six Ruler Armaments here. The chances of killing those magical beasts have just risen, it is a shame that Zhe Gu has died, taking out a good amount of our forces.”

Qin Ji laughed, “Second uncle, although Zhe Gu has died, another person with an unexpected amount of strength has appeared. It seems to me that he is by no means weaker and will be a great boost to our strength.”

“That is correct.”

.....

The appearance of the Solunar Bow caused the youth who came out to avenge the death of Zhe Gu to waver before standing still and shouting, “Who are you?”

“That is my question to you.” Jian Chen spoke out calmly. Although he was afraid of getting hit with a Ruler Armament, he didn’t show it on his face.

The youth looked at Jian Chen with disdain before looking back to the girl and spoke proudly, “This one is called Jiede Wukang.” Within this isolated world, Jiede Wukang’s name had been known to everyone as one of the five experts.

Jian Chen who had been scoffed by Jiede Wukang laughed coldly, “So you’re Jiede Wukang, you’re nothing much then. If you were to go without your Ruler Armament, then you would not even be an opponent for me to kill.”

“You! You are courting death!” Jian Chen’s words reversed the scale of Jiede Wukang, causing him to immediately blow up in anger. Holding his Ruler Armament, he flew at Jian Chen, but before he could get far with his outstretched Ruler Armament, he immediately stopped.

The girl had notched her Solunar Bow once more and was already aiming the bow at him.

Jiede Wukang’s face went white for a moment. While they both had Ruler Armaments, a bow always held the advantage in a long range battle. If he were to be shot, even if he were to block it with his Ruler Armament, the mighty explosion that would happen after would force him to eat up a loss. To him, eating up a loss was not an outcome he wanted. He would definitely come out the loser

since the golden arrows were too fast for him to dodge. Thus, Jiede Wukang was stuck in a difficult situation to retreat from.

Seeing how Jiede Wukang was stuck in a difficult situation where he could neither retreat or advance, a laugh could be heard in the crowd.

“Hehehe, just what lively event is happening here, who’s fighting? Its surely a large battle if I can feel the mountains shake, you’ve scared this girl half to death almost.” With that, a pink robed girl walked past the crowd with small quick steps. By her side, she was followed by two expressionless men.

This was a fully matured girl who looked to be around twenty six years old. Her entire body seemed to exude an endless amount of charm, and with every movement, it seemed that she was able to enrapture anyone nearby.

The pink robed girl’s appearance could only be described as devastatingly beautiful that was exceedingly rare under the heavens. With her charm exuding from her body, she was as deadly as the yellow robed girl in terms of beauty and killing intent, giving everyone else the feeling: a desire to conquer her.

“Hahaha, this girl comes from the Tianmu clan with the first name Ling! I hope every big brother here looks after me carefully.” The pink robed girl laughed with a crisp sound almost as if it carried an enchanting spell. Those with a low control of themselves began to feel lost.

“Tianmu Ling, could she be the the Tianmu Ling from the five experts?” A person cried out in shock.

While everyone knew the names of the five experts, some of them had never seen what they had looked like before.

Everyone looked at Tianmu Ling with a strange look as they all thought to themselves with some shock. None of them had imagined that Tianmu Ling would be a charming girl and was at the same time a little unconventional in her attitude.

Tianmu Ling slowly looked around herself before seeing the still motionless figure of Jiede Wukang and laughed, “This younger brother is quite strong. The sword in your hand must be some sort of strange Saint Weapon to be able to cause this little girl’s heart to flutter with such fear.” With that, Tianmu Ling took on a scared expression, making herself seem quite pitiful.

Jiede Wukang had an embarrassed smile on his face as he tried to use this as a way to escape from the situation. He slowly put down his Ruler Armament and spoke proudly, “This one is called Jiede Wukang. This Saint Weapon is the treasure of my Jiede clan. Rumors say that it is the byproduct of the first generation and possesses a boundless amount of energy. It is so strong that if a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master were to use this sword, then it would be capable of killing a Heaven Saint Master.”

“Wow, how strong!” Tianmu Ling had a look of shock on her face as she put her jade white fingers up to cover her mouth. This type of reaction caused Jiede Wukang to feel even more proud of himself.

“Then what might the other big brothers be called?” Tianmu Ling looked at everyone else that had some sort of authority within the crowd.

“This one is Qin Ji!” The white and gold lined robed youth cupped his hands together with a gentle smile.

“This one is called Dugu Feng!” The other man with a two meter long sword made of a fiery red color cupped his hands as well.

“Waaa, Qin Ji, Dugu Feng, and Jiede Wukang, you three are all men this little girl has heard before. This girl didn’t think that three of the five experts would appear right in front of her or that these three elite big brothers would be so handsome that my heart would start to dance and leap.” Tianmu Ling was like an eighteen year old girl that was staring with eyes of infatuation. It was as if she was meeting her adored idol as her eyes suddenly turned into stars.

“And what might little sister be called, could you call me big sister?!” Tianmu Ling turned to look at the yellow clothed girl with a smile.

“Hmph!” The girl snorted before turning her head in disgust.

Tianmu Ling seemed to have ignored that as she turned toward Jian Chen with a smile in one smooth transition, “Then this little brother must be one of the five experts, Shi Xiangran.”

“This one is Jian Chen, not Shi Xiangran.” Jian Chen spoke calmly.

A look of surprise appeared on Tianmu Ling’s face before instantly going away as she laughed, “Little brother Jian Chen, you are quite handsome! So handsome that I almost went crazy, you should take responsibility for this.”

After hearing this, although Jian Chen knew that Tianmu Ling was only joking, he couldn’t help but feel a giant sweatdrop fall down his forehead.

“\*\*!” The yellow clothed girl suddenly spat something out in anger.

“Oh! Could little sister here be jealous?” Tianmu Ling laughed as she looked at the other girl while ignoring the insult that was thrown out.

The beautiful face of the girl suddenly turned red as her chest began to heave up and down before staring angrily at Tianmu Ling. She started to fume angrily as she growled, “You should speak less garbage.”

“Ai yo, little sister has a large temper! This can’t do, girl, you must be gentle, or else no man will like you.” Tianmu Ling beamed.

The yellow clothed girl said nothing else.

Suddenly, another set of footsteps could be heard as a twenty seven year old youth wearing white slowly came into view.

Jian Chen quickly took notice of this youth. From his appearance, Jian Chen's eyes suddenly took on a dangerous gleam, this person was Shi Xiangran.

The differences between all of the five experts that were there including Tianmu Ling was every single person had a few strong experts with them. However, Shi Xiangran was traveling by himself.

Shi Xiangran didn't notice Jian Chen yet but the moment he saw the bright clothes of one of the people, his eyes took notice of the yellow clothed girl and suddenly stopped.

In an instant, the Light Wind Sword appeared in Jian Chen's hand. He couldn't reveal the secret with his Soul Sword just yet so the sword stayed in his hand. With a silver flash of light, he flew toward Shi Xiangran before stabbing at his throat with unbelievable speed.

He had to kill Shi Xiangran before he could utilize his barrier, otherwise, once that barrier went up, then he would be invincible while using his Ruler Armament.

Shi Xiangran hadn't yet realized Jian Chen was there, but the



very moment he had noticed the yellow clothed girl, he instinctively thought to the Solunar Bow and unveiled his barrier without hesitation.

The very moment the Light Wind Sword was about to pierce through his throat, a transparent barrier suddenly appeared over his body.

“Bo!”

As the barrier appeared, it suddenly shook violently as the Sword Qi on the Light Wind Sword touched the very first layer of Shi Xiangran’s throat. As it pierced the first layer of skin, it didn’t reach any farther before being shot back out like a bullet due to the barrier.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed dangerously once more as the Light Wind Sword began to release an even larger amount of Sword Qi as he tried to stab at Shi Xiangran’s throat once more.

Shi Xiangran’s barrier began to shake violently, but because of its unbelievably strong defenses, the Light Wind Sword was unable to tear it apart. As the barrier continued to expand, the Light Wind Sword was driven farther and farther back.

Jian Chen let out a sigh in dejection before taking back the Light Wind Sword. If he was just faster by a second, then he would have been able to kill Shi Xiangran.

Seeing the Light Wind Sword shoot away from him, Shi Xiangran suddenly turned pale with fright because he had absolutely no idea when the sword had approached him. He reached up with his hands to touch his neck only to feel a small sliver of blood leak out from the wound onto his finger.

Shi Xiangran's face turned white at that. At the sight of blood, his forehead began to sweat heavily. It was at that moment that he had realized he was one step away from knocking on the doors to the underworld and nearly stepped through them.

## Chapter 313: Joining Hands

---

Shi Xiangran's face continued to turn white at that. At the sight of blood, his forehead began to sweat heavily. It was at that moment that he had realized he was one step away from knocking on the doors to the underworld and nearly stepped across it.

A furious anger began to swell up within Shi Xiangran's chest as he glared dangerously at Jian Chen. His eyes began to exude a treacherous amount of killing intent that went undisguised. Just now, if he hadn't been able to activate his barrier in time, he would have become a corpse. Furthermore, to die at the hands of someone that was younger than he was, to the high and mighty Shi Xiangran who spent his entire life being spoiled as the genius of the clan, was a humiliation that he could never forget.

"If I don't kill you today, then I will no longer write my name as Shi Xiangran!" Shi Xiangran's eyes went bloodshot as he flew toward Jian Chen with an angry yell. From his Space Belt, he took out a small fist sized iron chunk and threw it into the air.

Quickly, the iron seal enlarged in midair and blocked the sunlight from above with a circumference of about two hundred meters. Covering the sky of everyone nearby, the seal immediately came crashing down to the ground with a heavy wave of energy.

The moment Dugu Feng saw the iron seal above their heads, his eyes flashed dangerously before immediately taking out a long sword and slashed up with a fiery blaze. The very moment he slashed his sword, the surrounding temperature in the air suddenly increased by a terrifying amount.

Even the one meter long sword wielder Jiede Wukang looked up with disdain. Sneering, he leaped up into the air and struck at the seal with his sword a fiery blaze.

Immediately, the temperature in the surrounding area increased once more, causing the vegetation in the area to dry up straight away. Even the trees that were reaching high into the air were beginning to shrivel up as if all of the water inside them was being evaporated. The fire was so strong, it was almost as if everyone was in a sea of fire.

Qin Ji's face grew extremely dark as a machete appeared within his hand. The machete was surrounded by a cyan glow, but the shape of the machete itself was strange. The machete had a saw blade like design where each tooth seemed to be inexplicably sharp.

Qin Ji raised his machete and leaped into the air toward the Seal of Treasure Mountain. With a single slash of cyan light, he struck out at the seal

At the same time, Tianmu Ling revealed a long whip and laughed, "This little brother has quite the temper. I haven't offended you, so could you please not go around randomly using things to smash into people?" With that, her arm shook and brought the whip flying straight up at the seal.

"Whoosh!"

A flash of golden light flew past Jian Chen as the girl let loose her bowstring. An arrow of pure Saint Force condensed into shape as it flew at an unbelievable speed toward the seal.

At this moment, the five experts had all unleashed their attacks each with their own Ruler Armament. The only difference was that four experts along with the yellow clothed girl were fighting against one.

Shi Xiangran's Seal of Treasure Mountain encompassed two hundred meters in circumference which towered over everyone there. In his rage induced stupor, he had failed to notice that he had offended everyone there.

By the time Shi Xiangran realized this fact, it was far too late.

“Bang!”

The six Ruler Armament crashed against each other, emitting a large ear ringing sound. Immediately, the ground began to shake and mountains started to tremble as the largest amount of energy that day flew out from every corner as a result and blew over the five experts and Jian Chen. Everyone was unable to keep grounded to the floor and could only fly backward. With each step they tried to use to anchor themselves, they could only succeed in leaving a small footprint.

“Ha!”

The explosion rocked the ears of everyone in the vicinity with an explosive sound. Everyone tried to use their Saint Force to coat themselves in it in order to protect themselves from the blast radius. Out of everyone present, the only one who felt safe at all was Shi Xiangran because of his barrier. The defenses to his barrier were so strong that despite the intense aftermath, he would not be harmed. The worst that would happen was that he would be blown backward.

Four of the Ruler Armaments returned to their owners hand as the fifth Ruler Armament, the Seal of Treasure Mountain was hit by a combined amount of force high up in the air. Instead of landing back down to the ground, it returned to Shi Xiangran's hand.

The energy that had exploded outward completely destroyed the area as well as throwing all nearby trees into the air and flattened the grass before incinerating it. On the ground, there was a single fissure with a large series of spiderweb cracks extending out from it.

After a while, the energy finally subsided into a tranquil scene. For a kilometer, not a single blade of grass could be seen and the trees were scattered about.

Shi Xiangran who was situated inside the barrier looked as if his face could leak water. In his heart, he had felt inexplicable resentment, he hadn't thought that in his one single strike, he would somehow offend everyone there. Thus, he blamed everything on Jian Chen.

Tianmu Ling returned the whip before adopting a face of traumatized fear and placing a hand to her chest, “How scary! That iron seal is too scary! Big brother, I can only assume that you are Shi Xiangran of the five experts. Ai yo, why can’t this little girl remember when I offended big brother? Just why is it that the moment big brother appeared, he wanted to kill us all? It’s a good thing this little girl has some self protection and so many big brothers to help us in this time of need. Otherwise, this little girl would have been smashed to the ground.”

Hearing Tianmu Ling speak, Shi Xiangran’s face grew even darker and darker. Before he could say anything, his face instantly returned to normal and then adopting an apologetic expression and cupped his hands together. “I apologize everyone, when I saw a hated enemy of mine, I had somehow made a silly mistake. This one is called Shi Xiangran; I’ve no intentions on being anyone’s enemy, I hope no one pays too much attention to this.” Turning to point at Jian Chen, he said, “Do you dare to see who’s stronger between us two? Or could it be you only know how to hide behind a woman? If it’s like this, how are you any different from a coward?” Shi Xiangran spoke with disdain to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s face grew dark as he stared dangerously at Shi Xiangran with an undisguised amount of killing intent. As a large amount of Saint Force concentrated in his hand and formed the Light Wind Sword before slowly walking toward Shi Xiangran. Right now, he planned to use the azure and violet Sword Qi in an attempt to test an idea. Although he wasn’t sure if they would be able to destroy the barrier, Jian Chen could still wish.

Seeing how Jian Chen still desired to fight Shi Xiangran, the yellow clothed girl couldn’t help but feel anxious before running

up to stop Jian Chen. Facing Shi Xiangran with an angry look, she spoke, “Shi Xiangran you despicable bastard, if it weren’t for that barrier protecting you, you would have been killed long ago! Just what qualifications do you have to issue a challenge? If you are a man, then get rid of your barrier and fight like a man would.”

Shi Xiangran’s face suddenly grew unsightly as he heard the girl’s words. Those words were coincidentally the very words that stabbed at Shi Xiangran’s weak point. Staring icily at her, he roared, “You repulsive b\*tch!”

“You...” The girl started as her eyes furiously bore a hole into Shi Xiangran. From her eyes, it seemed as if she was ready to cut Shi Xiangran into a million pieces.

At that moment, Qin Ji walked in between the two and cupped his hands, “Fellow friends, please listen to my words for a moment.” Before waiting for the two to respond, he said, “We have all gathered here today in order to find out the answer to the secret here. We shouldn’t be wasting any times on useless things. Right in front of us is the immortal’s cave. This much everyone can attest to seeing, but there are several strong magical beasts guarding it. Even if we all have Ruler Armaments, it would still be very difficult to enter the area. So, I wish that we can all put aside our grievances and work together. As long as we can defeat all the magical beasts, we will be able to enter the cave and see the inner treasures. Otherwise, I’m afraid we will never be able to enter since there is only ten days left until this round of the competition is over.”

“That’s right, if we want to enter the cave, then there is no other



choice but to join hands. Those magical beasts are far too strong for us individually.” Said Dugu Feng with his fire sword in hand as one of the men with a Ruler Armament.

“Hahaha, that’s right. Fellow big brothers, it would be better for you to temporarily give up your hatred. Getting into the cave is of the utmost priority. I’ve heard there was a Heaven Tier Battle Skill in there, that is a monumental prize. Plus, this is the cave of a senior cultivator, even if there isn’t a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, there’ll definitely be a treasure of sorts in there.” Tianmu Ling said.

“Right now there’s only ten days until the end of this round of the competition. When we get transported out by the strange energy, we’ll be powerless to try and remain here. If we wish to enter the cave, then we must all unite.” The purple robed man next to Dugu Feng spoke.

Hearing his words, Jian Chen’s eyes continued to flash continuously with some hesitation. In the end, he reclaimed his Light Wind Sword, a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was something he desperately wanted. Joining the Gathering of the Mercenaries was for the sake of obtaining one so that he could hand it over to the Changyang clan.

One could imagine that if the Changyang clan were to obtain a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, their strength would improve greatly. If the Changyang clan’s strength was to increase to a sufficient amount, then he wouldn’t need to hide from the Hua Yun Sect and return to the gentle home that he remembered as well as the kind and loving mother he had.

# Chapter 314: Division Of People

---

Shi Xiangran sneered as he shot a venomous glare at Jian Chen, “You’re lucky, I’ll let you go for now.” With that, Shi Xiangren returned the Seal of Treasure Mountain to his Space Ring, but the barrier remained activated to protect himself.

Jian Chen couldn’t help but fire back, “You should stay in that tortoise shell forever. Let’s see just how long that will last.”

For the barrier that a Saint Ruler paid a heavy price to make be called a tortoise shell, Shi Xiangran’s face went ashen as he heard Jian Chen.

Upon hearing those words, Qin Ji, Jiede Wukang, Dugu Feng, and Tianmu Ling all began to smile unnaturally.

“Hahaha, for someone to say the barrier left behind by a Saint Ruler’s Saint Force is a tortoise shell, this little girl has lived for some time, but this is the first time I’ve heard of such a thing. Little Brother Jian Chen is far too unique!” Tianmu Ling laughed.

“Well then everyone, there’s not much time left. We should plan accordingly now that we have six Ruler Armaments here. We’ll definitely be able to destroy those magical beasts and reduce the casualties to an absolute minimum.” Qin Ji spoke.

By now, the battle was over, that intense amount of energy that had rippled across the area for a kilometer had finally receded and many Earth Saint Masters had already returned.

“No wonder they are called the five experts, their strength is far too strong...”

“Just what was that two hundred meter object? It seemed extremely powerful....”

“I heard them call it a Ruler Armament, strange, just what is that? I’ve never heard of such a thing before....”

Many of the men there began to chat among themselves in quiet voices with a fear of speaking too loud.

“There are a total of four magical beasts, each one of is a rare species and are individually very strong. It requires two of us with a Ruler Armament in order to fight one of them to a standstill. I can only guess that it would take three of us with a Ruler Armament in order to kill one of the magical beasts. We have six Ruler Armament users, meaning that we can kill two of them, the other two will have to be dealt with by the others.” Qin Ji spoke seriously.

“We have plenty of Earth Saint Masters, with the last two magical beasts, they’ll be able to deal with them. Although no one else would have a Ruler Armament, the amount of Earth Saint Masters is enough to be able to handle any problem.” Dugu Feng said.

“That’s correct,” Qin Ji nodded his head. “If we all work together, then we will be able to break past the defensive line of

the magical beasts.”

“I agree to this plan.” Dugu Feng endorsed.

“I agree as well.” Jiede Wukang spoke out.

Three of the five experts had all agreed while the other two remained silent.

“Brother Jian Chen, if we may have your opinion.” Qin Ji looked toward the yellow clothed girl and Jian Chen and then the four men behind them. With a single glance, he knew that Jian Chen and the girl were both the pillars of their group.

“I see no problems.” Jian Chen smiled.

The girl said nothing and only nodded her head in agreement.

Seeing the strongest two of the group give their agreement, Qin Ji had a look of excitement on his face. Then, with a look around the area, he spoke in a loud voice, “Everyone, now that the five experts have all united to enter the immortal’s cave, I hope that everyone will stand with us. Our combined strength will be enough to kill the magical beasts, and whoever enters the cave will be able to take their own treasure!”

As soon as Qin Ji finished his speech, everyone stood up at once and began to cheer loudly. Each one of these men were at least at the Great Saint Master level if not higher.

“If you are not an Earth Saint Master, then don’t throw your life away. We are only inviting Earth Saint Masters to fight with us.” Dugu Feng yelled out loud, causing those of the Great Saint Masters to be displeased by this.

After this, the Great Saint Masters could only retreat away from the campgrounds, leaving behind around seventy men. Each one of them were Earth Saint Masters with a strong background and a determined face.

“Good, then let’s have everyone here so we can plan things out. I propose that we split up into four groups, each one will deal with a single magical beast, does anyone have any opinions?” Qin Ji spoke.

“This plan’s fine, I agree.”

“I agree as well.”

.....

Everyone began to ask their questions.

“Just who will be in which of the four divisions?” A person asked.

Qin Ji smiled, “When it comes to this, I’ve already a plan. The

inner group here has enough people to split into two groups of ten. The rest of the seventy men here should split into two group as well. Two groups of thirty five men, does anyone have any objections?”

The inner group Qin Ji had mentioned were all standing right next to him. Some were the five experts, including Jian Chen’s group.

It looked as though the men on the outside had the advantage, but that wasn’t it. Those in the inner group were all the strongest individuals, and a few of them could easily fight against three other men at their level of strength with ease.

“Right now we should split our groups then.” Qin Ji looked at Jian Chen and the girl with a smile, “Jian Chen, would it be possible for us to be on the same division?”

Seeing Qin Ji take the initiative to be friendly, Jian Chen was caught off guard for a moment before recovering himself quickly, “If brother Qin Ji is with us, then it would be our honor.”

“Little brother, you are so handsome, this elder sister wants to be with you. You wouldn’t refuse me would you?” Tianmu Ling walked to Jian Chen at a leisurely pace and a huff of air exhaling out of her mouth.

Jian Chen laughed with a collected face and calm heart, “This one has no objections, but only brother Qin Ji can accept....”

“I’ve no objections either, sister Tianmu Ling is welcome to join.” Qin Ji spoke with a graceful smile toward her.

“Hahaha, little sister, you look ill. Could it be you don’t want elder sister joining you? Hahaha, little sister, you don’t need to worry. Sister here won’t snatch this handsome brother away from you.” Tianmu Ling spoke with charm toward the yellow clothed girl.

“You should speak less crap.” The girl fumed as her eyes stared furiously at the girl as if she could spit fire from them.

“Hahaha, little sister has a huge temper. That can’t do, little girl, you have to be gentle! Be considerate and men will love you. Like this, you won’t have any men that’ll treat you right.” Tianmu Ling seemed as if she was never angry and constantly laughed.

The girl’s response was particularly violent as she pulled back the bowstring of her Solunar Bow and pointed an arrow at her, “If you continue to speak like this, don’t blame me then.”

“Ah!” Tianmu Ling shrieked as she hid behind Jian Chen for protection. With a fearful face, she said, “Little sister, your older sister was only just joking. Please don’t be so impulsive, otherwise, little brother’s life here might be threatened!”

With a helpless sigh, Jian Chen spoke, “Tianmu Ling, it’s best if you stop teasing her. She has a bad temper.”

“Hahaha, little brother’s words here are all too correct. Little sister’s temper is quite bad.” Tianmu Ling laughed sillily but stopped teasing her.

The people around them looked on as if they were watching a performance with a small smile on their faces, but no one said anything.

Afterward, the four divisions were quickly split up. Jian Chen, the yellow clothed girl, Tianmu Ling, and Qin Ji were all in one division along with the two expressionless men with Tianmu Ling, Qin Ji’s three middle aged companions, Senior An, Yun Zheng, Qin Jue and Qin Xiao.

The second division was composed of Jiede Wukang, Dugu Feng and several men. Only Shi Xiangran was left alone in that group without any companions.

While these two groups weren’t numerous in men, they still had three Ruler Armament users per division and extremely strong men.

The seventy Earth Saint Masters were split into two divisions of thirty, but since each person in both divisions had no experience working with each other, these two groups were the weakest of the four.

“Everyone should rest up for today so that we will be at the peak of our power. Tomorrow, we will set out.”



With that, everyone began to set up their tents. There was enough room for everyone to set up a tent because of the battle that cleared out a kilometer of land, becoming a flat clearing.

As for the Great Saint Masters who were denied an invitation to fight, not a single one of them left. Together, they garrisoned themselves farther away in hopes that they could take advantage of the chaos and slip in.

Within their own tents, Jian Chen addressed Senior An, Yun Zheng, Qin Jue, and Qin Xiao, “Whether or not you wish to follow me or leave, just tell me. However, while the magical beasts are extremely strong, they are not the biggest threat. The biggest threat to us are those fighting with us.”

“On the outside everyone is fighting for the same purpose to kill those magical beasts, but the moment we enter the immortal’s cave, our alliance will undoubtedly crumble and fall into a chaotic battle.”

“Jian Chen, I’ve known this already, but my strength is far too weak to help you. Even if I were to go and fight, I wouldn’t be able to handle the aftermath from all of the explosions created from the battle. So I’ll wait outside for you all.” Qin Xiao spoke with no hesitation and spoke of his plan.

Qin Xiao’s withdrawal was something that Jian Chen had expected. Even if Qin Xiao were to enter, Jian Chen wouldn’t be able to protect him.

“What about you three?” Jian Chen asked the other three.

“I’ll stay behind!” Qin Jue spoke out loud.

Senior An and Yun Zheng both gave each other a look before hesitating. Senior An then spoke up, “Brother Jian Chen, I’ll enter with you. Although our strength isn’t on par with yours, our strength is still quite decent.”

“Then I’ll follow you in.” Yun Zheng said.

# Chapter 315: Entering The Immortal's Cave (One)

---

On the second day, everyone cleaned up their tents and formed a dense group within the forest. Shi Xiangran was afraid of Jian Chen's initial strike that he had delivered, causing him to keep up his barrier without the slightest intention of dropping it.

Standing on the road, Qin Ji spoke to the others, "There are only four magical beasts guarding the immortal's cave. The names of each of these strong magical beasts is the Flying Spirit Snake, Amethyst Thunder Lion, Albino Earthworm, and the Pangolin Emperor. After these several days of fighting them, we've already established that their strength is the same as each other. The only difference is their innate skills. The Flying Spirit Snake is capable of flight and spits out an extremely potent poison, if it flies, then it will be extremely hard to deal with. The Amethyst Thunder Lion has a protective layer of amethyst scales that have an extremely high defense. It can also spit out lightning as well as discharge electricity from its body, it would be the best for everyone to stay away from it. The Albino Earthworm is a special variation of an earthworm. It has an equally strong defense to the Amethyst Thunder Lion, but it's only weakness is that it is slow. For anyone with an wind attribute Saint Force, they will find the Albino Earthworm easier to manage than the other three."

"The last one is the Pangolin Emperor and the biggest headache. Its attack strength isn't as strong as the other three, but the most annoying trait about it is that it is especially fast. In a single moment, it can drill deep into the earth to evade our attacks and then strike out from underneath. It is completely silent when it is in the earth and leaves behind no trace. It can attack from

underneath one's foot at anytime, and while it is the weakest in terms of attacks, it's attacks are generally unblockable."

At the mention of the Pangolin Emperor, Qin Ji's eyes narrowed angrily; clearly, he had eaten up a heavy loss from it already.

"Qin Ji, which magical beast do you think we should take on?" Jian Chen asked from the side.

"Does it need to be said? Of course we want the Flying Spirit Snake. We have three Ruler Armaments, and one of them is a longbow model! If the Flying Spirit Snake were to take to the skies, then we could shoot it down. We also have a whip that can tether and restrict the snake's mobility. At the very least, we could prevent it from taking to the skies. The two weapons are the bane of the Flying Spirit Snake." Qin Ji spoke with no hesitation.

Jian Chen thought for a moment before nodding his head in agreement, "Yes, then the Flying Spirit Snake poses less of a threat to use than the other magical beasts, let's take it."

Hearing Qin Ji speak, the seated Dugu Feng spoke up, "The Albino's Earthworm has extremely strong defenses and has a lot of strength as well. The average Earth Saint Master wouldn't be able to do any damage to it, and without a Ruler Armament, its defenses cannot be pierced. My division will take this one, the Amethyst Thunder Lion and Pangolin Emperor will be handled by the other two divisions."

In a flash, the discussion was over. The most annoying magical

beast, the Pangolin Emperor who had an unavoidable and unblockable attack and the strongest magical beast the Amethyst Thunder Lion were given to the last two divisions. Although the men in those two divisions were displeased, they weren't able to say anything. The Flying Spirit Snake was capable of flight which would render all those on the ground helpless. It would also be able to strike at the men on the ground with its poison, so this magical beast was best suited for the group with the longbow and whip user.

As for the Albino Earthworm, many men were of the same mind of as well. As were all magical beasts that held the character for "Dragon" in their name, the defenses of the Albino Earthworm were as strong as Dugu Feng had said. The average Earth Saint Master would be incapable of doing harm to its body, and since it also had an extremely high defense, it was only fair that three Ruler Armaments were needed to harm and kill it.

Although the Pangolin Emperor and Amethyst Thunder Lion were both hard to deal with, the remaining two divisions were strong in their own right and had many people. With at least thirty Earth Saint Masters against a single magical beast, the problem shouldn't be that big.

After walking for ten kilometers, everyone came to a stop as they spotted the remains of a battleground.

Suddenly, the loud roar of a magical beast could be heard as it shook both the heavens and the earth with an ear splitting sound. Then, three enormous magical beasts came into view: one massive python of large width with a head bigger than the height of a fully

matured man and black wings–this was the Flying Spirit Snake.

Right next to the Flying Spirit Snake was a large lion. It's head was incredibly ferocious looking and had amethyst colored scales layered all over its body. Occasionally, a ripple of electricity would dance across its body– this was the Amethyst Thunder Lion.

To the side of Amethyst Thunder Lion was a gecko like magical beast that was a meter tall and ten meters long. Four stumpy legs held it up from the ground and its body was completely covered by brown colored scales.

As these three magical beasts appeared, a strong presence could suddenly be felt, pressing against everyone's chest as if there were a heavy stone there, making it difficult to move.

“Together now, the Pangolin Emperor might still be underground, so be careful!” Dugu Feng said as he held up his flame sword and charged toward the Albino Earthworm. Following straight behind, Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang and their group charged with their weapons out.

At that moment, aside from the Pangolin Emperor, the other three magical beasts began to take action.

“Whoosh!”

With a flash of golden light, the yellow clothed girl shot an arrow from her Solunar Bow toward the Flying Spirit Snake.

“Bang!” The arrow collided against the Flying Spirit Snake with an explosive sound. The snake’s entire body began to spasm for a moment before settling once more. On its giant body, a single bloody hole could be seen.

With an enormous hissing sound that stung the ears, the snake flew toward the yellow clothed girl.

Qin Ji raised his machete and roared, “Use the whip to bind its body!”

Tianmu Ling flew forward with a serious expression. In an instant, the whip in her hands blurred as it flew toward the snake’s body. While in midair, the whip began to extend before becoming a hundred meter long cord that wrapped around the two wings and bound it shut, preventing it from flying.

“Forward!” Qin Ji roared. With his Ruler Armament in the air, he and three other men flew at the Flying Spirit Snake. At the same time, Jian Chen’s body blurred away as he flew at the Flying Spirit Snake as well with his Light Wind Sword. Senior An and Yun Zheng both followed close behind Jian Chen.

“Bang!” An explosive sound and a billow of energy pulsed out like an ocean of energy. The surrounding area quickly went to ruins as the three other divisions began to fight as well.

# Chapter 316: Entering The Immortal's Cave (Two)

---

“Ah~~”

As the battle continued on for some time, a cry filled with pain could be heard on the battlefield as a middle aged man was bitten from the waist down by a creature whose head looked like a mouse, dragging him down beneath the ground.

“That’s the Pangolin Emperor!”

“The Pangolin Emperor is here, everyone be careful of the ground!”

As soon as everyone heard the yell, they all stared intently at the ground.

At that moment, right in front of the group, a large golden colored rat like beast flew up from the ground with the upper half of a man in its mouth.

“Be careful, the Pangolin Emperor is here!”

“Hurry up and attack it, don’t let it escape into the ground!”

As soon as the Pangolin Emperor appeared, everyone began to shout out loud as they charge at the Pangolin Emperor.



The Pangolin Emperor was extremely fast and immediately flew back into the ground after swallowing the body in its mouth. Even when three Saint Weapons slashed at its body, only sparks could be seen. The Pangolin Emperor was a scaled magical beast with golden scales all over its body. Despite its defenses not being as strong as the Albino Earthworm, it was still stronger than what the average Earth Saint Master could damage.

An incredibly sharp spike arose from the ground and instantly speared through the hip of a man before he could even react.

“Ah!” The man cried out in a shrill voice before thrusting his fire attribute Saint Weapon into the ground in hopes of exposing the Pangolin Emperor from its subterranean hiding spot. All that he hit was earth as the Pangolin Emperor had already moved on from the area.

An intense purple light flashed as the entire world shook all of a sudden. By the side, the Amethyst Thunder Lion shot out a blue spear of lightning that arced toward the closest person, burning his body black which caused him to fall to the ground.

Several men struck out at the lion immediately with their Saint Weapons, creating a clanking sound as they smashed against its scales with some sparks and blood. Although the Amethyst Thunder Lion’s defenses weren’t all too weak, it wasn’t capable of defending against a barrage of blows without taking some damage.

An angry roar was emitted from the lion’s mouth as it swiped its

sharp claws at the surrounding people attacking it. Another arc of lightning was spat out from the lion's mouth and struck the closest person without giving him a chance to dodge. In that instant, ten of the thirty Earth Saint Masters that had attacked the Amethyst Thunder Lion had been shocked by the lightning and fell to the floor with charcoal black bodies. Another three men were torn apart by the lion's claws, dying instantly and injuring several others.

The power of an Amethyst Thunder Lion was incredibly strong, and so those fighting against the lion would suffer the most casualties.

On the other side, the groups fighting the Flying Spirit Snake and the Albino Earthworm were having an easy time. The two divisions both had three Ruler Armament user and were strong in their own right, making it hard for their group to suffer any casualties.

Qin Ji brought up his Ruler Armament and swung it down onto the Albino Earthworm, easily cutting past the scales on its body and bringing a decent amount of damage to it. In a short moment, the entire body of the Albino Earthworm was dyed bright red with its blood.

The Flying Spirit Snake wasn't much stronger than the Albino Earthworm, especially with its wings restricted by Tianmu Ling's whip. Although she wasn't displaying the full might of her Ruler Armament, it was still enough to contend against the Flying Spirit Snake. In the end, the snake's strength while bound up was far less than before, which impacted it majorly, so only around sixty

percent of its full power could be displayed.

Qin Ji's Ruler Armament struck against the body of the Flying Spirit Snake and left behind a deep one meter long gash, causing it to cry out.

The yellow clothed girl stood far away and shot arrow after arrow from her longbow. Each golden arrow flew toward the head of snake. With a violent hissing sound, the snake began to sway its head side to side as blood dripped down.

Jian Chen and the other men began to fly at the snake with their Saint Weapons ready to attack. On its head, each person swung down to deliver a heavy stroke.

Despite each magical beast being quite strong, the humans attacking them at the same time was far too much. Each man was an Earth Saint Master at the least, and taking a hit from them was taxing on their strength. As for the Flying Spirit Snake and the Albino Earthworm, taking on three Ruler Armaments each brought about even more damage than what the Amethyst Thunder Lion had caused. As of right now, only the Pangolin Emperor had an advantage over the other side and was in good condition.

The Flying Spirit Snake continued to struggle fiercely against the bindings but to no avail. The wounds on its body was growing more and more severe and its temper even more violent as it continued to be injured.

Tianmu Ling's face grew serious as she bit her lower lip and concentrated while sweat pooled over her forehead. At the moment, she was completely focused on constraining the wings of the Flying Spirit Snake.

Suddenly, the Flying Spirit Snake let out a loud hiss as a large amount of corrosive acid shot from its mouth headed in every direction. The very moment the poison landed on a person, the clothes and flesh of the area it landed on immediately melted away.

“The poison is too corrosive, it can penetrate through Saint Force and in two hours it can kill even an Earth Saint Master! Retreat!” Qin Ji commanded as the three men and Senior An quickly retreated back with him to escape from the poison.

The cloud that was wafting up from the poison was already making causing visibility to be almost nonexistent, causing anyone on the outside to be unable to see what was happening within the area. Enveloped in a transparent barrier, Qin Ji disregarded all attempts at defense and leaped high into the air before coming down onto the snake, piercing it in its heart.

“Slash!” The region near the heart of the Flying Spirit Snake immediately ripped in a one meter gash as Qin Ji flew into the next strike and split apart the wound even further with his weapon once more.

The Flying Spirit Snake let out an ear piercing hiss as it violently swung its body upright. In the next second, the tail of the snake smashed into Qin Ji's barrier.

Although Qin Ji wasn't injured, the impact was enough to send him flying far away.

As he flew through the air, Qin Ji's eyes widened suddenly. In an earth shattering moment, he could see the blurry glows of an azure and violet ray of light through the poisonous mist.

“Aooo!”

In the next second, a desperate wail from the Flying Spirit Snake could be heard. Within the poisonous mist, no one was capable of seeing what was happening, but they knew that something had obviously struck the ground heavily and shook it.

The Flying Spirit Snake continued to hiss in pain as its voice grew warped. The poisonous mist in the area began to swirl around madly as if something was shaping it into a random shape.

The bloodsoaked Jian Chen quickly flew out from the poisonous mist with the majority of his clothes melting away from the poison and some of the green poison still stuck to his body.

Only the yellow clothed girl was standing in front of him, and since there was a layer of poisonous mist covering his body, no one else was able to see Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately took out a new set of clothes and quickly cleaned off the rest of the snake's poison before putting on the new

set. Just like he was still in yesterday's clothes, Jian Chen flew around the poisonous mist with a smile to regroup with the rest.

At that moment, the previously spasming Flying Spirit Snake finally stilled as the poisonous mist dispersed as well, allowing everyone to see what happened within.

The moment everyone could see, their faces went still with shock and amazement. Even Qin Ji was no different from the rest.

The entire body of the Flying Spirit Snake was on the ground but the area where its heart was had been completely bisected away from the rest of its body. Blood splurged out from the wound in large amounts from its head sized heart which was also cut into two pieces. The Flying Spirit Snake lay on the ground still alive, but it was not too far away from death, and the monster core had already disappeared from its body without a trace.

Qin Ji couldn't help but think back to when he saw the blurry azure and violet glow. He had felt a great change overcome Jian Chen, but he didn't say anything as he felt doubt and confusion cloud his heart.

Just then, the Albino Earthworm let out a terrible sound as well before collapsing to the ground with Shi Xiangran's Seal of Treasure Mountain smashed on top of its head. Even its entire body had been smashed several times with the seal to make for a serious injury.

Both the Flying Spirit Snake and the Albino Earthworm were

dead now. Only two remained one was the Amethyst Thunder Lion which was prancing about. Despite the wounds on its body, they was nowhere near anything life threatening. Its strength was far superior to those in its grade because of its innate skill and rarity. Even an Earth Saint Master could only hope to do a sliver of damage to it.

The Pangolin Emperor was the most healthy one. Scuttling about underground, it would play hide and seek with those on top as if it were a game rather than a battle. Appearing and disappearing randomly before attacking people in a single instance, it left behind no traces and only a major headache.

The divisions fighting both the Amethyst Thunder Lion and the Pangolin Emperor had taken major casualties. At least a dozen men died fighting the lion while many more had taken serious damage as the tenacious continued to struggle with it. As for the Pangolin Emperor, it had already swallowed seven men while injuring a dozen others. The Pangolin Emperor hadn't even taken any damage yet.

“The Amethyst Thunder Lion is far too strong, come and help us quickly, or we won't last much longer....”

“Help us deal with the Pangolin Emperor...”

Seeing how the Flying Spirit Snake and the Albino Earthworm were killed, the others cried out for assistance with glee.

Quickly extracting the monster core from the Albino Earthworm,

Dugu Feng led his men into the forest without regard for the two divisions still fighting the magical beasts.

“Ignore them, let’s go! Don’t be left behind, the immortal’s cave is right in front of us!” Qin Ji shouted to Jian Chen and the rest of the division as he brought three men with him to chase after Dugu Feng. He did not care for the corpse of the Class 5 Flying Spirit Snake.

Without looking at the Flying Spirit Snake’s corpse, Jian Chen called out to the rest of the men to follow them into the forest.

After making a mad dash, Jian Chen followed Qin Ji into a cave. This cave was unnaturally deep and with every single interval, there was a single nightpearl emanating a white glow of light. The interior and cave walls were glossy as well, meaning that someone had used an incredible amount of strength to cut the walls evenly.

“Bang!” A loud sound could be heard up ahead as the entire passageway began to tremble.

Jian Chen, the yellow clothed girl, Tianmu Ling, Yun Zheng and Senior An began to hasten their pace even more before quickly arriving at an area where everyone was gathered. Upon seeing Jian Chen enter the room, Shi Xiangran immediately activated his barrier to secure his safety.

Right in front of everyone, a single stone door blocked their paths.



“Bastard, just who touched the mechanism here? It dropped a stone wall blocking our way in!” Jiede Wukang roared in anger as he held his Ruler Armament

# Chapter 317: Fighting Over A Heaven Tier Battle Skill

---

“It doesn’t matter what doors are blocking our way, I’ll smash them apart!” Dugu Feng strode forward and immediately struck the door fiercely with his fist.

With a muffled sound, the stone door continued to tower over everyone else with only some dust being shaken down.

At this sight, everyone was astounded. Even Dugu Feng had been stunned for a moment before muttering to himself, “Is this really a stone door?” Dugu Feng knew clearly just how much strength was put behind his fist. Even an iron door would have a hole blasted through it, but this stone door wasn’t even scratched.

“Heavens, is this really a stone door, it’s unbelievably hard!”

“This stone door was made from a stone like material, but it’s so durable!”

“This stone door definitely isn’t an ordinary one...”

Everyone began to chat among themselves.

“It doesn’t matter what it’s made from, but if it dares block our path, then it will be destroyed!” Dugu Feng spoke coldly. His right arm held the fire sword as he prepared to swing his Ruler

Armament.

Upon seeing that Dugu Feng was about to use his Ruler Armament, everyone stepped back in fear of being caught in the aftermath.

The Ruler Armament in Dugu Feng's hand began to release a great flame as he yelled. With a large swing, he smashed the sword against the stone door heavily.

“Bang!” An ear splitting sound could be heard as the entire cave shook from the blow. Everyone shook their heads in pain as they steadied themselves.

After a while, the cave grew quiet once more. Everyone's eyes remained wide open as they looked at the stone door in shock—it continued to stand over them as if normal.

“Ju-just what was used to make this stone door, it's really hard!” Tianmu Ling stammered as she covered her mouth with her hand in shock.

Even Dugu Feng found it hard to remain calm and was stunned. For such an ordinary looking stone door to be able to take a blow from a Ruler Armament without any damage, it was far too much to believe.

The richly dressed Qin Ji walked to the stone door and raised his hand to touch it with a calm expression. “Breaking open this door

will allow us entry into the immortal's cave, let us have all of those with a Ruler Armament strike at it at the same time. I doubt this door will be able to withstand the might of six Ruler Armaments.”

“That's right, this is the best course of action.” Jiede Wukang spoke.

“Hahaha, okay then, big brothers. If big brothers can do the heavy work, this little girl will help out from the side. Whether or not this stone door breaks is all on you.” The girl spoke with charm as she smiled at everyone. Then stepping toward Jian Chen, she looked at him with a loving smile, “Brother Jian Chen, do you want to give it a try?”

Jian Chen shook his head with a bitter smile, “This one has no Ruler Armament so my attack would be tremendously weak. The area isn't that wide either so it wouldn't be able to hold that many people standing side by side. I would rather not hinder everyone else.”

As soon as Jian Chen spoke, a large animalistic roar could be heard, causing everyone in the cave to pale.

“That's the Amethyst Thunder Lion and the sounds of footsteps, goddammit, they dared to come running here! They're bringing the lion over! Everyone, let's act quick!” Qin Ji yelled.

Without any hesitation, Dugu Feng, Jiede Wukang, Shi Xiangran, Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling all stood in front of the stone door. With their Ruler Armaments out, they each prepared to strike. Then,

suddenly, a transparent barrier suddenly appeared and covered the people inside.

This caused Jian Chen to be shocked. He hadn't thought that these people with Ruler Armaments would have a barrier from a Saint Ruler around them. Abruptly turning around to look at the yellow clothed girl, he could see her standing ten meters away with her bowstring pulled back completely. The only difference was that there was no barrier protecting her, but Jian Chen didn't know whether or not she didn't have a Saint Ruler helping her or she just wasn't using it.

At that moment, aside from the six Ruler Armament users, everyone drew back quickly. The energy feedback from six Ruler Armaments was enough to cause harm to any Earth Saint Master.

“Attack!” With one command, all six Ruler Armament users struck out. An arrow flew ahead of the other attacks and collided into the stone door along with the fist sized Seal of Treasure Mountain while the others smashed against the door in coordination.

“Bang!” A loud sound could be heard as a large shockwave of energy exploded outward at an alarming speed. Washing over everyone while the cave itself began to shake almost as if it was on the verge of collapsing in on itself.

Jian Chen and the other Earth Saint Masters stuck close to the walls of the cave as a way to keep themselves rooted to the ground. At the same time, they used their Saint Force to enforce their bodies as a secondary form of defense.

Half a breath later, the shockwave receded to a calm as the six Ruler Armament users each were dragged back ten meters. The barriers had protected them from any harm while only the yellow clothed girl was quite pale in the face. Upon looking at the stone door, there were several cracks, but it was still not broken.

Everyone let out a shocked gasp, the stone door was far stronger than what anyone had imagined. They didn't think that even six Ruler Armaments wouldn't be enough for them to shatter a stone door.

What everyone could rejoice about was the durability of the immortal's cave. Even after such a heavy blow, it still had not collapsed.

"Again!" Jiede Wukang yelled out. Immediately, the six people struck out once more for another terrifying unified attack that was stronger than the one before.

Another explosive sound could be heard as stone pieces could be seen flying about and the cave echoed with the sound. After the second strike, the unbelievably strong stone door had finally been shattered.

Even after the stone doors shattered, Dugu Feng, Jiede Wukang, Shi Xiangran, Qin Ji, and Tianmu Ling didn't care for the aftermath of the explosion and all charged past the gates. Each one of them were protected by their barriers and weren't worried about being damaged by anything.

Sensing their movements, Jian Chen's eyes flashed in recognition. Immediately charging straight toward the doorway, against the energy wave, Jian Chen twisted and turned in a struggle to get past. Finally, he was able to break free of the energy wave and follow the five through the opening.

Beyond the stone gates was an empty space where none of the energy from the earlier strike could reach. Placed right on top of a high platform was a dark colored wooden box. On the outside, it looked quite ordinary and didn't seem to be anything special.

Seeing this box, Dugu Feng, Shi Xiangran, Jiede Wukang, and Qin Ji all flew toward it without a moment of hesitation.

A cyan colored whip blew past them and in an instant, it had reached the platform and wrapped around the box before pulling it back.

The four men instantly came to a compromise with each other and struck out at the box.

“Bang!”

As the box was smashed apart, a white leather book was sent flying into the air. As a result of the blast from the attack, the book continued to flap in the air as the pages.

Four hands simultaneously flew out to grab at the falling book in

hopes of snatching it away from everyone else.

Tianmu Ling didn't move a foot and immediately snapped her wrist, causing a part of the whip to fly at the four men. At the same time, the head of the whip flew at the book

At this moment, the four men acted as one and smashed down on the whip with their Ruler Armaments. Although the whip was also a Ruler Armament, it wasn't able to withstand the might of four Ruler Armaments and was forced back down. The four men instantly arrived at the book and lashed out to grab it. Each hand latched onto a part of it and with a violent pull, each one tried to pull the book toward themselves.

“Chi!”

The string binding on the book instantly tore, causing several pages of the book to fly through the air. Combined with the energy from the earlier blow on the whip, the book pages all fluttered about through the air.

Four pairs of hand zipped through the air as they collected the scattered pages. At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly appeared in a silver ray of light. Spotting two of the loose pages, he grabbed at them with lightning speed before grabbing onto another one nearby.

Dugu Feng swiftly grabbed onto another two pages as well before spotting another right next to his hand. As he lifted his hand to grab at it, suddenly, a person appeared in his line of sight. This



person was Jian Chen who immediately grabbed at the piece of paper right underneath his eyes.

Dugu Feng was immediately stunned before instantly growing angry as his eyes gleamed with a murderous light.

After the small struggle for the pages, the book was quickly divided up by the six people. In the end, Tianmu Ling had two pages, Jian Chen had four, Dugu Feng had four, Jiede Wukang had three, Shi Xiangran had two, and Qin Ji had four for a total of nineteen pages.

At this moment, Shi Xiangran had already flew at Jian Chen with his barrier present while his Seal of Treasure Mountain flew at Jian Chen's head.

“To dare kill my men, I'll definitely kill you today!”

“No one has dared steal from me before!”

At that moment, Jiede Wukang and Dugu Feng flew at Jian Chen with their Ruler Armaments out and ready to kill him.

Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling had no plans on helping out either side. Although they had fought alongside Jian Chen, but their relationship with him wasn't anything special. Shi Xiangran was a hated enemy of Jian Chen, Jiede Wukang had his comrade Zhe Gu die by Jian Chen's hand, and Dugu Feng had a part of the battle skill taken away from right under his nose. Each person had a

reason for fighting Jian Chen.

## Chapter 318: Killing Three Experts

---

Shi Xiangran, Jiede Wukang and Dugu Feng all struck out at the same time toward Jian Chen, much to his shock. The thing that made Jian Chen extremely serious was that all three of them had barriers and so it would be incredibly hard for him to injure them. Furthermore, the three of them had a Ruler Armament each. If he was hit by one, then it would do an incredible amount of damage that he wouldn't be able to endure and could even die from. Even if he were to be injured, Shi Xiangran and the other two would never let him go or even let him out of the cave.

Jian Chen's eyes gained a berserk gleam to it. Right now, he could only use his final trump card to go all out.

An azure and violet glow could be seen on Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword as he walked toward Shi Xiangran without fear and stabbed his sword straight at the barrier protecting him.

Right now, Jian Chen could only place all his hopes on the azure and violet Sword Qi. Success or failure, it was all reliant on the Sword Qi since it was the strongest attack he could use.

Seeing Jian Chen take the initiative to charge, Shi Xiangran revealed a happy smile on his face. With the defensive power of his barrier that even a Ruler Armament couldn't break, meant that Jian Chen wouldn't be able to either. Jian Chen's attack wasn't something that Shi Xiangran even cared about, so the pieces of paper within Jian Chen's hand were something that he felt were as good as his. Grabbing onto the Seal of Treasure Mountain tightly, Shi Xiangran waited until he grew closer and immediately treated

it like a stone as he used it to smash into Jian Chen's head.

As the Light Wind Sword made contact with Shi Xiangran's barrier, under the expecting eyes of Jian Chen, the barrier began to melt away without a sound, allowing the sword entrance.

At this, Jian Chen revealed a look of joy. Without another moment of hesitation, the Light Wind Sword immediately reached further inside and stabbed into Shi Xiangran's throat.

Shi Xiangran instantly went rigid as his movements came to a grinding halt. Staring down at the spot where the sword had pierced through his barrier and into his throat, he then looked back at Jian Chen with a look of utter disbelief. Even the Seal of Treasure Mountain that had left his hand to strike at Jian Chen stopped in mid air as well.

"N-no....that...that ca-can't be..." Shi Xiangran spoke in shock as he spat out some blood and stammered. His eyes slowly opened wide in disbelief.

Dugu Feng and Jiede Wukang, who were initially running at Jian Chen, immediately stopped. They watched the barrier of Shi Xiangran get pierced by Jian Chen's silver blade before it stabbed Shi Xiangran in the throat. They both understood the durability of the barrier and how even a Ruler Armament was useless. Even a Heaven Saint Master would need to use all of their strength in order to break apart the barrier. But right in front of their eyes, the barrier that had been protecting Shi Xiangran was penetrated by Jian Chen's sword with ease or with no resistance almost as if it were tofu. This was something that was completely unimaginable

to them both.

On the other side, Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling both stared in disbelief as shock filled their hearts. Tianmu Ling's mouth dropped open in shock as she stared at Jian Chen and Shi Xiangran as motionless as a stone statue.

At that moment, the yellow clothed girl had entered the cave as well just in time to see Jian Chen's sword stab into Shi Xiangran's throat. In mute shock, her eyes began to widen as she stared at the sight with disbelief.

“He...he broke through Shi Xiangran's barrier?” The girl felt her heart surge in shock. At this moment, she didn't know what feeling was stronger, the joy from the death of Shi Xiangran or the excitement from seeing the sudden revelation of Jian Chen's superior battle strength.

Jian Chen looked at his sword that had broken through Shi Xiangran's barrier with excitement. It was almost as if a heavy burden was released from his heart. After the Sword Spirits had awoken, they had consistently helped him increase his attacking power. Even as a Great Saint Master, he had been able to kill Earth Saint Masters, and up until now, the Sword Spirits had never disappointed him. They had even destroyed the barrier something that a Ruler Armament couldn't accomplish. With this, even those with a barrier wouldn't be as big of a threat as before.

Although a Ruler Armament was extremely powerful, it was only capable of emitting an extremely strong strike. As long as one made sure the Ruler Armament didn't make contact or clash with

one, then the Ruler Armament was no different than an ordinary Saint Weapon.

Shi Xiangran's life quickly bled away as he continued to stare at Jian Chen with a quivering look. Slowly losing his strength, the barrier began to quickly dissipate before disappearing entirely.

With a twist of his wrist, Jian Chen's sword cut through Shi Xiangran's throat in a bloody manner before pulling out. At the same time, Jian Chen quickly pocketed Shi Xiangran's Space Ring and the Seal of Treasure Mountain for his own before turning toward Jiede Wukang to fight with him.

From the earlier moments, Jian Chen had recognized both Jiede Wukang and Dugu Feng as his enemies. For those who were his enemies, Jian Chen had no mercy. Even more so, Jian Chen desired the Heaven Tier Battle Skill pages in their hands.

Seeing Jian Chen come flying over, Jiede Wukang's face grew ugly. Back when he was contesting for the pages he hadn't thought of Jian Chen as an opponent at all, but with Jian Chen easily breaking through Shi Xiangran's barrier, he couldn't help but feel as if his heart had been dealt a serious blow. Right now, he couldn't afford to naively think that his barrier would protect him from any harm anymore.

Jiede Wukang leaped back with an explosive amount of force as he brought his flame sword to swing at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen knew better than to go head on with a Ruler

Armament. He easily dodged the swing and with an azure and violet glow of his sword, his Light Wind Sword stabbed at the barrier protecting Jiede Wukang.

Without any obstruction, the barrier quickly dissolved away to reveal a small hole where the sword had touched, allowing Jiede Wukang to be stabbed with no problems.

Seeing that his own barrier powerless to block even a single strike, a pool of sweat began to appear on Jiede Wukang's forehead as he went pale. With a single leap, he flew back and brought his weapon up to guard against the sword stab.

“Ding!”

Stabbed against the Ruler Armament, the azure and violet Sword Qi wasn't able to break past it. Since the Ruler Armaments were far too strong for the currently recovering azure and violet Sword Qi. They could not be damaged by the glows.

At that moment, the Ruler Armament billowed outward with a great flame that shot at Jian Chen like a bullet. Jian Chen couldn't help but start slightly as he jumped back with his blood boiling with emotions.

Jian Chen knew that Ruler Armaments were the remnants of a Saint Ruler's Saint Weapon so they contained an unbelievable amount of power. Just a single strike of one would be enough for him to find it difficult to endure.

“Go die!” Jiede Wukang capitalized on Jian Chen’s backward leap and instantly stabbed toward Jian Chen.

Disappearing from view, Jian Chen dodged Jiede Wukang’s sword nimbly before stabbing at him with his own sword. The entire area began to be consumed with mirror images of Jian Chen’s sword as he entrapped Jiede Wukang within.

In an instant, Jiede Wukang was flustered by Jian Chen’s movements. Immediately bringing his own Ruler Armament to protect himself, he attempted to find out which sword was the real one before exploiting the large energy within his Ruler Armament to strike Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword.

Just as Jiede Wukang was about to go through the motions of his strike, he immediately came to a stop midway through his dance only to see that Jian Chen had somehow made his way behind him. His Light Wind Sword had inexplicably split his barrier once more and stabbed through his throat from the back.

Once more, this caused everyone to stare wide eyed in amazement. No one could have imagined that Jian Chen would be able to kill Shi Xiangran in a single moment even with his barrier, and then going on to kill Jiede Wukang in the next moment.

Dugu Feng’s face had already turned unsightly at this. He quickly moved to run toward the entrance of the cave with the speed of a bullet. He knew that he had offended Jian Chen already and wanted to escape from a difficult battle at all costs. With the superior strength that Jian Chen had just revealed, he knew he had no chance of winning.



Jian Chen quickly stored away Jiede Wukang's Ruler Armament into his Space Ring before taking the Space Ring as well and chasing after Dugu Feng with all the speed he could muster.

If Dugu Feng were to escape, then Jian Chen would lose all chances of being able to learn the Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

Sensing that Jian Chen was chasing after him, the escaping Dugu Feng cried out, "Help me block him!"

Immediately, four men came up to obstruct Jian Chen's path with an incredible amount of aura leaking out of them. Included among the group was the purple robed man.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed with a large killing intent as he slashed at the four men with his azure and violet Sword Qi enhanced sword.

The four men didn't know how strong the azure and violet Sword Qi was, so they brought up their swords to block it.

"Ding ding ding ding!"

Following the sounds of metal hitting metal, the Light Wind Sword immediately smashed against their swords before each one of them suddenly gained a new finger sized chip on their blades.

With their Saint Weapons damaged, each one of the four men immediately felt the pain and cried out before turning pale.

Taking advantage of their pain, Jian Chen went after their lives. Jian Chen was impatient to chase after Dugu Feng so he acted quickly and full heartedly. A First Cycle Earth Saint Master was easily manageable for him to kill. With a flash of silver, the Light Wind Sword stabbed out four times.

Three of the four were too slow to dodge and instantly had their throats stabbed. Only the purple robed man was able to use his Saint Weapon to block the strike at the last moment, causing his sword to earn another jagged mark.

Now that his Saint Weapon had been struck twice, the middle aged man began to spit out some blood as he looked at Jian Chen in shock.

Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword struck out in succession as he fully suppressed the man's movements. Against his attacks, the man was unable to do anything but dodge, since he knew that Jian Chen was capable of striking and damaging his Saint Weapon. Even as he dodged, he was still hit by Jian Chen's sword several times and was nearly stabbed straight through by the sword. In the end, he too was killed which allowed Jian Chen to continue chasing after Dugu Feng without hesitation.

# Chapter 319: Return Of Ming Dong

---

All the men crowded in the passageway hurriedly shot out of the way for Jian Chen. The struggle for the Heaven Tier Battle Skill had only been a few moments, and no one outside of the cave had any idea what had happened inside. At this moment, they could only watch in confusion as Jian Chen chased down Dugu Feng. Wasn't everything going fine earlier? How could they suddenly start fighting, and the bigger question was, just when had Jian Chen's strength become so amazing?

Jian Chen chased Dugu Feng through the passageway of the cave for some time. Following that some of the experts' subordinates quickly came to their senses and charged into the cave as well.

Within the cave, Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang lay motionless on the ground. Their blood continued to leak down onto the ground in one big puddle.

“Lord Wukang!”

Suddenly, a grieved voice could be heard as two middle aged men shot into the cave like arrows to Jiede Wukang's side. Looking at the hole in his throat, the men all instantly turned white before crying out loud in grief.

“Lord Wukang, lord Wukang!” One man shook Jiede Wukang's body with an impatient shout as if trying to wake him up.

“Lord Wukang has already died.” The other man sighed with a

look of sorrow on his face.

“Dead...just...just how is that possible? Lord Wukang had a barrier protecting him, along with a Ruler Armament. There isn’t anyone here that could possibly kill him!” The man spoke in a crazed manner. Jiede Wukang’s position in the clan was far beyond what was right. Not only was he the son of the patriarch, but he was also the future leader of the Jiede clan. The two men and Zhe Gu came to protect him specifically. With Jiede Wukang dead, it was hard to say that they would live as well.

“Ai...” The other man gave a long sigh as he stared blankly. He didn’t care for Jiede Wukang’s death much, but Jiede Wukang’s status in the clan was far too high. Since he was Wukang’s bodyguard, he would be punished severely for what had just occurred. The penalty might be so heavy that Jiede Wukang’s father might have them both die to serve Jiede Wukang in the afterlife.

“Who was it? Who was it that killed lord Wukang?” The man spoke with an extremely grim voice. Now that Jiede Wukang was dead, he really did not want to be the only one to take on the responsibility for Jiede Wukang’s death. It was possible that after the Gathering of the Mercenaries, he would be killed.

“Just now, there was a youth named Jian Chen that held some grievances with our lord. He just ran off to chase Dugu Feng. Even the four, strong, well-known guards of the Dugu clan were killed in a short moment by Jian Chen. The one who killed lord Wukang must be Jian Chen; his hidden strength must be enormous.” The other man spoke with a gloomy expression.

“Miss Tianmu Ling, lord Qin Ji, if you could tell us: was the person who killed lord Wukang, Jian Chen?”

Tianmu Ling and Qin Ji both nodded their heads in a stupefied manner. The fight they had just seen had caused a tremendous amount of shock to their hearts. Jian Chen had somehow destroyed the barriers placed on Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang created by a Saint Ruler, which were known for being incredibly hard to destroy.

After finding out who the murderer was, the two men both grew dark. Jian Chen was strong and was not someone they could fight against. The two were not willing to stay here any longer and carried Jiede Wukang's body out of the cave. Neither of them were stupid; when Jian Chen came back to annihilate everyone, it would be in their best interests to run far away with Jiede Wukang's body. They would wait for the end of the Gathering of the Mercenaries and report it to the elders in hope that the patriarch would be lenient in his punishment. Running away from the clan was not going to work, and would only speed up their deaths.

.....

“The cave's right over there, hurry up and get in! Let them deal with the Amethyst Thunder Lion!”

“Hurry up, the cave's right in front of us!”

Outside the cave, a group of miserable looking men were all

running to it as fast as possible. Right behind them, the small, mountain-like Amethyst Thunder Lion continued to shoot lightning from its mouth. Each arc of lightning burnt a person into a crisp as the golden Pangolin Emperor continued to strike at the other humans not too far away.

Within the group, not only were there the original divisions of Earth Saint Masters, but also at least a hundred Great Saint Masters. After the two divisions with the Ruler Armaments had killed two of the magical beasts and entered the cave, the Great Saint Masters all decided to risk it and charge forward. In hopes of obtaining the treasure within, each one threw away their lives to charge toward the cave.

The influx of these Great Saint Masters had aroused the attentions of the remaining two magical beasts. Thus, the already suffering divisions quickly renounced their attempts to kill the magical beasts, and ran for the immortal's cave at full speed.

With no strong individual to control the magical beasts, the situation had naturally gotten worse for the Great Saint Masters. The Earth Saint Masters didn't care and left the Great Saint Masters to deal with the ire of the magical beasts.

Suddenly, a single shadow could be seen flying through the sky with an explosive wind rippling through the air. Despite many people seeing the shadow's image, no one cared for it at this moment.

Just as this shadow receded away, another shadow quickly streaked through the air before chasing after the first one. This

was Jian Chen chasing after Dugu Feng.

Jian Chen was utilizing most of his speed by catapulting himself off of the trees. With each launch, he flew forward another ten extra meters, and was slowly reducing the distance between Dugu Feng and himself.

Sensing that Jian Chen was still chasing him, Dugu Feng's face grew startled as he thought to himself, "Could fifth uncle and the other three men have been killed by Jian Chen? No. There's no way. Fifth uncle was at the Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master, there's no way for him to be killed by Jian Chen that quickly." There was disbelief as that thought went through his mind. He knew that Jian Chen's strength was far higher than what he had thought if he could disregard the barriers on both Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang. He shouldn't be strong enough to kill his fifth uncle and the three other Third Cycle Earth Saint Master bodyguards even if he were to use a Ruler Armament. By this point, Dugu Feng had already deemed Jian Chen to be a terrifying existence that he could not afford to fight. He increased his speed even more, determined to protect his Ruler Armament.

Dugu Feng wasn't a man that feared death, but he wanted to prevent the Ruler Armament from falling into any other man's hands. Thus, he could only run away. The Ruler Armament was something every clan would pay a heavy price for, and would tremendously impact the clan's power and influence. Dugu Feng absolutely could not allow his Ruler Armament to fall into someone else's hands. Otherwise, his clan would be condemned to a lifetime of shame that could not be recovered from.

The two men's speed slowly increased to the maximum. Ten kilometers had been traveled in a short amount of time. Running past the forest, they reached a clearing.

Right now, Jian Chen had closed the distance to Dugu Feng. By now, there was only a single kilometer separating the two. Even though Dugu Feng wasn't a wind attribute, his running speed was still quite superior to most, so even Jian Chen had to exert a lot of energy to chase after him.

At this moment, ten kilometers away from Jian Chen, a black robed youth with hair that reached down to his waist was quickly running toward a forest. This youth looked to be around 27 or 28 year old, and had a firm look on his face.

"I've heard that the cave of a previous cultivator was around here and contains a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. People even say that the five experts were all gathered there as well. Bah, I should go take a look myself—hopefully I'll be able to find him." The black robed youth muttered to himself.

Just then, the black robed youth saw two figures appear a few kilometers away from him, quickly charging over in his direction.

Seeing the two people, the youth revealed a look of disdain as he muttered, "Another two men rushing to their deaths. I hope they're not too weak, I want to test out my strength." With that, the youth examined the two, but the moment he saw their faces, a look of shock overtook it.



“Are my eyes going bad, this is too much of a coincidence!” The black robed youth spoke as he kneaded his eyes gently. With a closer look, he concentrated on the two men before smiling widely and charging straight at them.

“Friend, hold off the man behind me and the Dugu clan will reward you handsomely!” Dugu Feng had already thrown away his face and reputation for the sake of preserving the Ruler Armament. While he knew that he was not an opponent for Jian Chen, he would much rather fight Jian Chen to the death than try to flee.

For the sake of the Ruler Armament, he could not choose this option.

Hearing Dugu Feng’s words, the black robed youth was stunned for a moment before he smiled meaningfully. With a simple movement, a wind attribute Saint Force could be seen as it covered the youth’s body, Like an arrow, he flew toward Dugu Feng and Jian Chen with a faster speed than before.

The black robed youth’s speed was almost inconceivable. In a moment he had traveled several kilometers, causing both Jian Chen and Dugu Feng to be shocked. The moment Jian Chen saw the youth’s face, he went still as a surge of emotions swell up in him.

Dugu Feng was shocked for a moment before becoming happy. He didn’t think that his luck would be good enough to meet such a strong person. With his fast speed, even if he wasn’t able to defeat Jian Chen, he would at the very least keep him occupied.

“Friend, help me hold up the man behind me and the Dugu clan will reward you.” Dugu Feng spoke once more with a relaxed voice.

The youth revealed a strange smile, but he did not respond to Dugu Feng. Bringing out his cyan colored longsword, he quickly slashed at Dugu Feng with an alarming speed.

Bringing up his Ruler Armament to defend himself, Dugu Feng quickly protected himself. The youth staggered back a few steps as his feet dragged across the ground.

What was more shocking was that the Ruler Armament-wielding Dugu Feng had also been forced back three steps by the ordinary looking sword of the youth.

“Friend, what is the meaning of this?” Dugu Feng’s face grew dark before shock filled his face. The youth’s strength was extraordinary, and even after blocking the sword, his inner organs had felt the vibration from the blow.

“Could this average looking youth somehow be a Heaven Saint Master?” Dugu Feng thought to himself in terror.

The youth recollected himself before looking at the sword in Dugu Feng’s hands with some surprise before cursing out loud, “F\*ck, so it was a Ruler Armament.”

With the youth holding up Dugu Feng, Jian Chen had quickly

caught up. Standing twenty meters away from Dugu Feng's back, he smiled at the black robed youth.

The youth looked at Jian Chen with a happy smile before waving his hands, "Hey, Jian Chen! I didn't think I'd meet you in such a manner. You seem to be doing quite well if you can bring even a Ruler Armament user to heel."

Jian Chen revealed a happy smile on his face, "Ming Dong, it's been almost a year since we last saw each other, I barely recognized you."

This one youth was unexpectedly Ming Dong, who had stayed in the midair shrine. Nearly a year had passed, but his strength had undergone an earth-shattering transformation.

## Chapter 320: Blood Oath

---

After nearly a year, Ming Dong had undergone an extreme transformation. Right now with Ming Dong standing calmly right there, he was exuding a mountainous aura that seemed almost boundless. From head to toe, the aura he was exuding was what a strong individual would display. It was as if he had experienced many different life and death battles and had become a hardened soldier. Unconsciously, he was radiating killing intent that was unlike anything else and made everyone around feel as if their hearts were being pressured by it.

Ming Dong, right now, was almost as if he were a completely different person than the one from a year ago. Jian Chen couldn't help but feel some doubt, was this black robed youth in front of him the Ming Dong he knew?

Ming Dong laughed with an excited look on his face, "Jian Chen, I was getting worried about where I should go to find you. I didn't think that I'd be able to find you so fast. This must be what the Heavens have decreed or that we were just destined to see each other."

Upon hearing the conversation between Jian Chen and this black clothed youth, Dugu Feng instantly grew extremely ugly. Before, he had been extremely overjoyed to see the large amount of power of this youth, but he didn't think that the two men would somehow know each other. And from the look of things, the two men were on extremely good terms with each other.

Dugu Feng was suddenly stuck between a rock and a hard place.

Right in front of him was a tiger and behind him was a wolf. Both of them were extremely fast; especially the newcomer's speed. Dugu Feng had already given up on running away since he knew that even if he were to run at full speed, he wouldn't be able to escape from the wind attributed Ming Dong. There was no way for him to run away from the two.

Dugu Feng's face grew deathly serious. He wasn't afraid of death at all, but the Ruler Armament was something he couldn't afford to lose. If it were to fall into someone else's hands, then his clan would be humiliated to the highest degree. Without a Ruler Armament, then his clan's power would plummet. That was because if a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master were to use a Ruler Armament, they would be capable of fighting a Saint Ruler. His fighting ability would only be describable as a being able to shatter the heavens and scorch the earth.

"Ming Dong, let's catch up later, for now, let's take care of the business in front of us." Jian Chen smiled.

Ming Dong turned to look at the serious Dugu Feng with his own smile, "That's fine, Jian Chen, this guy has a Ruler Armament. That means he has a strong background, you should prepare yourself."

Shrugging, Jian Chen spoke helplessly, "There's no other way, although it'll be a headache, but some headaches have to be endured. I've already killed two other Ruler Armament users, so trouble is unavoidable, another one shouldn't matter too much."

Upon hearing Jian Chen's words, Ming Dong's eyes widened in

amazement, “No way, you’ve killed two people with Ruler Armaments? You’re too strong now, did those two Ruler Armament users have no barriers to protect themselves?”

Jian Chen laughed, “Ming Dong, I didn’t think you would know about Ruler Armaments or even about the barriers. It seems that you’ve learned a lot in one year.”

“Of course! Uncle Tian has treated me nicely and spent a lot of energy to try and bring up my strength from the Great Saint Master to where I am now in the span of half a year. He also taught me many things.” Ming Dong pointed at Dugu Feng. “Jian Chen, this person’s strength is quite decent, could you give him to me to practice? Ever since I left uncle Tian a few days ago, I haven’t been able to test out my strength properly.”

Ming Dong’s words left Dugu Feng speechless. He could have sworn that he heard the one called Ming Dong say that within half a year, he went from the Great Saint Master level to a level where he could contend against a Ruler Armament user without injuries and even knock them back. Dugu Feng had found this hard to believe; anyone in the Earth Saint Master level would not be able to rely on their own strength and yet still be able to injure a Ruler Armament person, but this black robed youth was the very first.

“That’s fine then, Ming Dong, I’ll leave this to you. Let me see just how much you’ve improved in the span of a year.” Jian Chen leaped back and gave the space to Ming Dong. He approved of the speed in which Ming Dong had improved and was not worried that Dugu Feng would be able to run away from Ming Dong.

“Wait one moment!” Dugu Feng cried out in a hurried manner, turning to look at Jian Chen, he asked, “We had some misunderstandings before, but that is only a minor problem and not worth chasing me down without mercy. Did you want the pages of the Heaven Tier Battle Skill or my Ruler Armament?”

“What do you think?” Jian Chen joked as he looked at him with a smile.

“If you want the the pages, then I’ll give it to you as well as everything else in my Space Belt. But if you try to take the Ruler Armament, then I can tell you right now, it will bring you an endless amount of trouble. A Ruler Armament is something extremely important to my clan and no one in the clan would allow an outsider to take possession of it. Even if you kill me and take the Ruler Armament, then our clan will definitely do whatever it takes to chase you throughout the continent and kill you. Even the ancestor of our clan will personally come after you.” Dugu Feng warned.

Jian Chen’s expression didn’t change as he spoke casually, “I’ve already killed two men who had barriers and Ruler Armaments, do you think I’m afraid of that?”

Dugu Feng went white as he mentally made that realization. He was afraid that Jian Chen had an equally strong clan supporting him and was even stronger than the Dugu clan. If that clan was too strong, then he was afraid that if the Ruler Armament was taken from his clan, they wouldn’t be able to steal it back from that clan. Even if they tried to steal it back, they would still be mocked by everyone else and the entire clan would be humiliated.

Suddenly, Dugu Feng made up his mind. Smashing against the part where his heart was with his fist, Dugu Feng spat out some blood onto his fingers and began to paint in midair. His fingers gently moved through the air as he began to draw a strange type of image. With each stroke, a blood colored trace could be seen still before it all finally became a bloody pattern.

Jian Chen looked at Dugu Feng with confusion at what he was doing. Whatever this strange thing was, this was the very first time he had heard or seen such a thing.

Ming Dong walked over from Dugu Feng's back and watched in amazement at the bloody pattern and a look of utter disbelief.

“Jian Chen, I, Dugu Feng, make a blood oath to you today. If you allow me to return the Ruler Armament to my clan, I, Dugu Feng will see you as my king. Wherever you go, I will follow, whatever order you command, I will strive to accomplish to my dying breath.” Dugu Feng stared at Jian Chen unwaveringly as he spoke with determination and some reluctance. For the sake of protecting the Ruler Armament, he was willing to follow Jian Chen for his entire life for the sake of his family that he loved. He did not wish to see his family become condemned by everyone, and so, he was willing to give up his own life.

Jian Chen was speechless as he looked at Dugu Feng with a surprised expression. Although he didn't know what a blood oath was, whatever Dugu Feng had said truly surprised him.



Ming Dong's eyes slowly looked at the strange blood pattern left by Dugu Feng as he spoke, "A blood oath. I've heard that from ancient times until now this is a binding promise that is written using one's heart blood as a way for the soul to take form in the oath. It is said that the person who holds the oath also controls the life of the person who made the pledge. With just a single thought, the person who made the oath will have their body and soul extinguished. Whats even scarier is that if the person who holds the oath dies, then the one that made the oath will share the same fate. I didn't think that you would know the blood oath from ancient times."

Upon hearing Ming Dong's explanation, Jian Chen finally had some understanding of what a blood oath was. He didn't think that this world would have such a bizarre thing; truly, this strange world was filled with magical things.

Even at Ming Dong's words, Dugu Feng didn't blink and looked at Jian Chen, "If you allow me to bring the Ruler Armament back to my clan, then you will be my king, and I will act out your orders no matter what the task is without complaint. If you wish for my Ruler Armament, then I will be dead either way without any form of protection. What is your answer?"

"Fine, I'll let you bring back your Ruler Armament to your clan, remember your promise." Jian Chen spoke instantly. To him, a Ruler Armament was truly strong, but in the end, it was still just a weapon. Dugu Feng was a living person with room for growth. Furthermore, no one knew for certain whether or not Dugu Feng would become a Saint Ruler.

Dugu Feng looked at Jian Chen intensely before saying, “As of today, I Dugu Feng formally separate myself from the Dugu clan. From now on, whatever I, Dugu Feng, do, it will not be related to the Dugu clan. My life and my death will bear no relations to the clan, and I will only obey you on any command but those relating to the Dugu clan. I am no longer a part of the clan, and will not be able to use the clan in any way.”

Jian Chen revealed a small smile full of admiration toward Dugu Feng as he spoke instantly, “I promise you, you will be you. The Dugu clan will be the Dugu clan. I will definitely not exploit the Dugu clan’s power and will definitely not pit you against them. I won’t force the secrets of the Dugu clan from you either. As long as you are willing, then that is enough for me.”

“Fine, from here on out, I, Dugu Feng, will serve you as my king. As long as you don’t try to bring harm to my clan, then please accept my blood oath.” Dugu Feng spoke with a refreshed tone.

# Chapter 321: Intact Heaven Tier Battle Skill (One)

---

Jian Chen looked at the floating blood pattern that Dugu Feng had drawn and spoke, “Dugu Feng, you are a true man. I, Jian Chen, admire you. This blood oath is not something I want. I have no desire to control your life, but the things you promised to do I am still waiting on.”

Hearing this, Dugu Feng was stunned. Looking at Jian Chen in disbelief, he said, “Do you really trust me, are you not afraid of me going back on my word?”

“That’s right. I believe in a person of your character. Of course, if you are a person that goes back on your word, then I can only blame myself for being blind.” Jian Chen spoke with no hesitation as if he fully trusted Dugu Feng’s words.

Despite the fact Jian Chen could control Dugu Feng’s life with the blood oath, Jian Chen didn’t need a person of empty strength. He needed a true comrade, someone with flesh and blood with his own spirit and self thought. Self independency was the only way to reveal Dugu Feng’s true potential. Although accepting the blood oath would allow Jian Chen to be able to sleep worry free without fear of being betrayed, Dugu Feng would become nothing more than a soulless person. This would bear no major change on Dugu Feng’s power, but in the end, Jian Chen would never hold Dugu Feng’s true loyalty.

Dugu Feng stared at Jian Chen in a daze, full of disbelief. At this moment, he was looking at Jian Chen in a whole new light from a

stranger to a comrade that he had fought and lived through multiple battles with, thus emotions began to fill up in his eyes.

Dugu Feng's fists unconsciously began to tighten as he stared at the handsome and younger Jian Chen before speaking, "You needn't worry then. I, Dugu Feng, am not a person that goes back on his word. When I return the Ruler Armament to my clan, then I will immediately come back to fulfill my promise."

Jian Chen nodded his head with a smile. The matter between him and Dugu Feng seemed to have been settled in a way that Jian Chen had not expected. He now had Dugu Feng's loyalty, so Jian Chen was happy. Ming Dong's strength had also made leaps and bounds, and with the addition of the equally strong Dugu Feng, it could be said that the Flame Mercenaries made another promotion in strength. With this expansion in strength, the amount of power Jian Chen was controlling now was on a larger scale.

"Dugu Feng, you should continue to participate in the Gathering of the Mercenaries. With your strength, you should be able to make a name for yourself and make it within the top ten. The rewards are extraordinarily rich. This is not an opportunity that should be missed." Jian Chen spoke.

Dugu Feng nodded his head, "Fine, after the Gathering of the Mercenaries are over, everything I earn will be given to you. I am no longer from the Dugu clan, so my achievements will be unrelated to them."

Jian Chen shook his head, "That won't be necessary. As long as you make the achievements yourself, then the reward is yours."

Dugu Feng, I, Jian Chen, admire you as a true man. In the future, you will be a brother to us all. I hope that everyone can be honest with each other and that we can work together.”

Hearing his words, Dugu Feng began to feel emotional as his voice began to tremble while he spoke, “Fine, I will be your comrade and will not permit anyone to do anything to cause harm to us. Otherwise, anyone that tries will not escape from me.” Dugu Feng spoke heroically. From this moment, the proud heart of Dugu Feng had finally been influenced completely by Jian Chen.

“Haha, I didn’t think we’d earn one more friend from this. Dugu Feng, I am called Ming Dong, you can just call me by that. The previous offenses I may have spoken, please do not take offense to them. I, Ming Dong, truly wish to apologize for this.” Ming Dong too admired Dugu Feng’s character and smiled at him with a refreshed look.

Dugu Feng couldn’t help but have a small smile on his face as he clasped a hand on Ming Dong’s shoulder, “Then I’ll be calling you Ming Dong in the future. Today has been a lucky day for me to be able to come across two outstanding geniuses and become their comrade. You two are even younger than me, but you two are inversely stronger than me. Especially you, Ming Dong; with your own strength, you were able to receive a blow from my Ruler Armament and even caused me to be sent back. Could you be a Heaven Saint Master?”

Ming Dong laughed loudly, “It’s not that extreme, I am only at the Peak Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master level. Although there is only one more step until the Heaven Saint Master realm, this step

will still take me another three years at the least to cross.”

“What, your strength has already reached the Peak Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master level?” As soon as Ming Dong finished talking, Jian Chen spoke in surprise as his eyes widened in disbelief.

In less than a year, Ming Dong had gone from a Great Saint Master to a Peak Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. This was a frightening pace that even the words, “lightning quick” wouldn’t be able to describe. That was because to become an Earth Saint Master, an unbelievable amount of energy was needed to make the breakthrough. The amount of energy however, to become a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master was immeasurable. Yet, Ming Dong had somehow managed to pull off the impossible within the span of a single year. Even Jian Chen at the moment was only a First Cycle Earth Saint Master.

Dugu Feng regarded Ming Dong’s strength with astonishment, he didn’t think that Ming Dong was anywhere past the age of 28. This was younger than he was by two years, but the gap in strength between the two was vast. For him to be one step away from the Heaven Saint Master level, this type of achievement made the heaven sent genius Dugu Feng feel eclipsed.

Seeing the look on Jian Chen’s face, Ming Dong laughed as he enjoyed the expression. “Jian Chen, you shouldn’t look so surprised. For the sake of improving my strength, uncle Tian expended a lot of his energy and used an unmeasurable amount of heavenly treasures to improve my strength. Originally, uncle Tian had planned on raising my strength to the Heaven Saint Master realm. Unfortunately, with my current foundation, if I were to

become a Heaven Saint Master, then my foundation would be shattered. For the sake of my future cultivation path, he forced my strength to hover around the Peak Sixth Cycle. Then, with his absolute strength, he confined my energy within my body and told me to not try and make the breakthrough for three years.

Hearing this, Dugu Feng felt shock in his heart before asking, “Ming Dong, your uncle Tian is quite amazing. He must be a Saint Ruler at the very least.”

Ming Dong’s mouth raised up by a small amount as he smiled, “My uncle Tian is extraordinarily strong. However strong he is, I don’t know, but I did hear that 5000 years ago, uncle Tian was a Saint Ruler.”

“Wh-what? Five....five thou-thousand years ago he was a Saint Ruler!?” Dugu Feng’s face lost color as his eyes grew so wide, they were in danger of falling to the ground. He was that shocked.

“What, Dugu Feng, is there something wrong?” Ming Dong had a crafty smile on his face as he pretended to be confused.

“N-no.. there’s nothing.” Dugu Feng spoke out in a rush as his forehead began to collect sweatdrops. His face grew white as he spoke; this was the first time since Jian Chen came by that he had lost his composure.

“It seems Dugu Feng most likely knows something, otherwise, he would not be shocked to such a degree to hear about a 5000 year old Saint Ruler.” Jian Chen thought to himself as he observed him.

“There’s still a few of the Heaven Tier Battle Skill pages I haven’t yet collected back in the cave. We should hurry on back.” Jian Chen spoke.

After that, the three men quickly dashed toward the cave as Jian Chen began to worry about the few pages left in Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling’s hands. Thus, their speed wasn’t slow at all. Not too long after, the three men quickly came near the area of the cave.

As the three men approached the area where everyone fought the four magical beasts, a loud roar could be heard from farther away before the bloodsoaked and furious Amethyst Thunder Lion came charging at the three.

“What a strong force, I’ve finally come across a strong opponent! Let me at him, you two shouldn’t take this away from me.” Ming Dong stared at the Amethyst Thunder Lion and charged at it with his own Saint Weapon.”

“Ming Dong, after you’re done with the Amethyst Thunder Lion, come meet up with us in the cave, we’ll be heading in first.” Jian Chen spoke to Ming Dong as he charged. Right now Ming Dong’s strength was already strong enough to knock back a Ruler Armament user without harm, he would be able to deal with the heavily injured Amethyst Thunder Lion with ease.

“Got it.” Ming Dong replied.

“Ah, that’s right, there still might be the Pangolin Emperor



hidden below ground, be careful of it.” Jian Chen warned him.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Dugu Feng swiftly arrived nearby the cave where they saw a large amount of men gathered outside who were cursing loudly.

“For what reason are you blocking us from entering, this cave isn’t yours!”

“That’s right, you all are too arrogant! This immortal’s cave isn’t yours, just what right do you have to seize it for yourselves?”

“Don’t think that just because you have the strength to monopolize the cave that we won’t be able to enter. If we all unite, we will be able to make a break into the cave!”

“Hurry up and get out of the way for us! Although our strengths aren’t equal to yours, we are not afraid of you!”

From far away, Dugu Feng and Jian Chen could hear the sounds of curses as everyone was blocked entry into the cave.

Quickly, Jian Chen and Dugu Feng landed on the ground. Dugu Feng then roared out loud to the crowd, “Whoever blocks our path should move aside!” His voice was so loud that everyone’s eardrums shook.

# Chapter 322: Intact Heaven Tier Battle Skill (Two)

---

As soon as Dugu Feng yelled out loud, everyone grew quiet as they bit back their anger for the ones blocking the cave. Dugu's commotion had instantly earned their new ire and immediately, everyone began to curse at him.

"F\*ck, who dares shout so loud, are they waiting for death?"

"Who's yelling out so f\*cking loud? Come out!"

"F\*cking hell, such arrogance! Hurry up and come out! If you wish to die, allow brother here to show you the road!"

Suddenly, after the men shouted their curses, they turned around to look at the flame sword wielding Dugu Feng and the white robed Jian Chen. Immediately, all the cursing stopped as their faces registered shock while the few that cursed at them immediately paled.

In a split moment, the entire place went quiet. Right in front of them was Dugu Feng of the five experts and an incredibly strong individual, Jian Chen. Not a single person there dared to even breathe loudly.

"Whoever was just cursing at us, step on out immediately." Dugu Feng barked out loud with a serious expression.

Not a single person made a sound, and not a single person moved. Everyone stood there silently as those who cursed at them felt their hearts beat crazily. At the same time, everyone began to make way for the two.

Dugu Feng looked at everyone slowly, evidently not willing to let those bastards who cursed at them go.

“It’s fine, there’s no need to bother about something like this. Our first priority are those pages.” Jian Chen spoke to Dugu Feng before quickly running past the crowd and toward the cave’s interior.

Dugu Feng sneered at everyone but followed Jian Chen straight away without another word.

Right in front of the cave stood several men which included Senior An and Yun Zheng. In total, there were eight men guarding the place that were pushing back several hundred men. Four of the other men were from Qin Ji’s group while the last two were from Tianmu Ling.

“Jian Chen, you’re finally back! Hurry up and enter or else the items will all be taken by them!” Senior An wailed in an impatient manner.

“Senior An, who told you two to guard this place?” Jian Chen spoke in bafflement toward Yun Zheng and Senior An.

“It was all because of that girl named Tianmu Ling. Thanks to her coaxing, she had Yun Zheng and I brought over here to stand guard, leaving the three of them inside still.” Senior An’s face revealed a sour expression, showing that he was evidently not there by free will.

Jian Chen slapped Senior An’s shoulder with a stern face, “You two keep guard here. Be assured, as long as there is a profit, I, Jian Chen won’t forget about you two.”

“That’s fine, Jian Chen, you don’t need to say such words to me. Hurry up and go otherwise all of the items will be taken and we’ll be stuck with a deficit!” Senior An said.

Without another word and under everyone’s watchful eye, he and Dugu Feng quickly disappeared into the cave.

“Strange, wasn’t he chasing after Dugu Feng a while ago? He even killed several of the Earth Saint Masters of the Dugu clan, but he just came back with Dugu Feng as if they had nothing between them in the first place.”

“Right, that’s awfully strange. Could Jian Chen and Dugu Feng have made some sort of secret agreement?”

“I doubt it, Jian Chen has already killed several of the Dugu clansmen. With Dugu Feng’s temper, there’s no way they would have made a compromise. There has to be something we don’t know.”

As for those men of Qin Ji's group, they began to whisper among each other.

Walking into the cave, Jian Chen saw the four men he had killed from the Dugu clan. Instantly his face took on a forced smile. Previously, he hadn't thought that this matter with Dugu Feng would take on such a drastic change. Thus, when he fought against Dugu Feng's clansmen, he hadn't held back. With such an urgent matter at hand, Jian Chen wasn't lenient on them so he could chase Dugu Feng, otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to make it through in time.

Right now, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel a headache come to him. In the current situation, it was quite difficult to explain to Dugu Feng what happened. After all, he and Dugu Feng had already laid down their arms and were friends now, not enemies.

Dugu Feng naturally knew that the four Earth Saint Masters he had brought with him had all died by Jian Chen's hands. As if he knew what Jian Chen was thinking, he said, "They are from the Dugu clan and have nothing to do with me. Furthermore, they were only members from the outside branch. Two of them were actually disciples accepted into the Dugu clan and are not core members. They were conveniently younger than fifty years old, so my father hired them to be my bodyguards."

Hearing Dugu Feng's words, Jian Chen let out a breath in relief.

Dugu Feng had a small smile on his face, "It seems my choice was quite smart. I didn't follow the wrong person; you and Ming Dong are both heaven sent geniuses of superior talent than I. I believe

that if I follow you two, I will definitely experience things far more spectacular than my own experiences.”

“Perhaps!” Jian Chen spoke vaguely.

Afterward, the two men flew into the cave only to see Qin Ji, Tianmu Ling, and the yellow clothed girl flying all over the place as if trying to find the treasure. Shi Xiangran’s body lay in a far away area with no one to care about while Jiede Wukang’s body had been carried away.

When they saw Jian Chen and Dugu Feng walk back into the cave almost as if nothing had happened between the two, Qin Ji, Tianmu Ling, and the yellow clothed girl became stunned as if they saw the impossible happen. They were so shocked that they couldn’t help but stop where they were.

“Jian Chen, you two...” Qin Ji was filled with confusion as he stared at Jian Chen and Dugu Feng. The two of them didn’t look at all like they had been fighting.

Tianmu Ling looked at the both of them and asked, “Could it be that you two didn’t fight?”

Jian Chen looked at Tianmu Ling puzzled, “Fight? Just why would we fight?”

“Because...” Tianmu Ling was speechless as she tried to find the right words to say. She couldn’t tell Jian Chen, “You had just killed

four of the Earth Saint Masters of the Dugu clan, are you and Dugu Feng not mortal enemies?” She wasn’t that stupid.

The puzzled Tianmu Ling and Qin Ji didn’t know just what had happened between Jian Chen and Dugu Feng, but it didn’t take an idiot to know that something secretive had happened. However, they were tactful enough to not ask.

“Hmph, there was definitely some sort of shameful business.” The yellow clothed girl spoke in a single sentence with her singsong voice.

Jian Chen laughed with an embarrassed smile, “It was nothing that shameful.”

Then, Jian Chen’s face grew serious as he looked at Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling. Before he could say anything, Qin Ji immediately took out the pages to the Heaven Tier Battle Skill from his Space Ring and said before Jian Chen could open his mouth, “Jian Chen, the two of us have fought side by side, no one else can say the same. These pages are of no use to me, so I gift them to you. You have a much bigger need for these than I do.” Walking up to Jian Chen, Qin Ji gave the leather book and his pages to Jian Chen.

Qin Ji’s preemptive action had left Jian Chen speechless. With a charming smile, he replied, “Ah, I’ve no words to describe my gratitude. I, Jian Chen, will remember this.” With that, he took the papers with joy.

Dugu Feng had already given his pages to Jian Chen long before.

With Qin Ji's pages, Jian Chen now had seventeen of the nineteen pages. That meant only the two pages from Tianmu Ling were left until he had all of the pages to the Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

Jian Chen looked at Tianmu Ling with a faint smile, "Sister Tianmu Ling, would it be possible for you to hand over those two pages?"

Recovering from her shock from seeing Jian Chen and Dugu Feng return safely, Tianmu Ling laughed as she replied, "Little brother, if your elder sister refused, then you would have killed this older sister." With that, she assumed a miserable expression, causing anyone that looked at her to take pity.

Jian Chen gave an embarrassed smile, "Sister Tianmu Ling likes to joke I see. I have no grievances with you, why would I want to kill you? However, the two pages you have are worth nothing by themselves, and I am coincidentally short two pages. Could it be that you don't wish to see this Heaven Tier Battle Skill to enter this world and be eternally disgraced?"

"Brother Jian Chen's words have some meaning to them. An intact Heaven Tier Battle Skill is quite fetching to the eye. If it were to be uncompleted, it would be a barbaric act of crime." With that, Tianmu Ling looked at Jian Chen with a charming stare as her jade white arm slowly pressed against [Jian Chen's "dirty sword"](#) as she exhaled slowly, "Big brother, how about this, you can hand over the Heaven Tier Battle Skill pages to elder sister to complete it. Would this work? Of course, your older sister will not treat you unfairly."

TL Note: Jian Chen's name in Chinese can be transliterated to



mean, “Dirty Sword.” You can understand the rest of the joke here.

Tianmu Ling’s other arm pressed against Jian Chen’s shoulder with an increasing amount of weight as she began to hang off of him. Her rosy red lips were several centimeters away from Jian Chen’s lips, and with each word, her breath could be felt on his lips. This was a strange sensation that exuded charm and seduction that if not for his own determination, his heart would have been in turmoil.

When Jian Chen heard her words, his face instantly changed expressions. He desperately wanted this Heaven Tier Battle Skill, and since they were incredibly hard to obtain, just how could he give it away so easily?

Jian Chen’s change in expression had been noticed by Tianmu Ling straight away, “Ai yo, brother, your face was so handsome before, how could it make such a drastic change? Your elder sister was only joking with you, if you wish for the pages in your elder’s sister hands, you must fulfill a request of mine.”

“What request!” Jian Chen immediately spoke with urgency.

“Haha, it seems brother Jian Chen desires this Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Then your elder sister won’t embarrass you. This request is rather simple, as long as you give your elder sister a lip to lip kiss, then that will be it. How about it? Is it not simple?” Tianmu Ling’s lips were still several centimeters away from Jian Chen’s, and each word spoken had made her breath press against Jian Chen for an itchy effect.

Upon hearing Tianmu Ling's "Simple" request, Jian Chen became speechless as a fine layer of sweat appeared on his face. Her words had been explicit, causing Jian Chen to grow red in embarrassment.

"Hmph, \*\*! Sl\*t! Shameless!" On the other side, the yellow clothed girl stared at Tianmu Ling in disgust as she gnashed her teeth together. When she had seen just how intimate Tianmu Ling was to Jian Chen, she had all of a sudden felt an uncomfortable feeling well up inside of her for unknown reasons.

"Hahaha, I've almost forgotten about brother's lover over there. Look, your lover is beginning to get jealous." Tianmu Ling laughed as she gave a charming wink to her, causing the other girl's chest to move up and down in anger before Tianmu Ling spoke, "You shouldn't speak such insane words."

Tianmu Ling was an expert at these types of affairs; the yellow clothed girl was not an opponent for her.

"Forget it, I remember brother's words now. Little sister's temper isn't good, eh, it's terrible! I won't tease you anymore then, little brother, if you want the Heaven Tier Battle Skill pages, then take them. Your elder sister will give them to you. This type of joke isn't something your sister likes." Tianmu Ling lifted herself off of Jian Chen's shoulder and took out the two remaining pages from her Space Belt. Then, with a sideways glance, she spoke to Jian Chen, "Little brother, don't forget, you owe me a kiss."

Jian Chen hurriedly took the remaining two pages and quickly began to assemble all of the pages on the ground. As for Tianmu Ling's last few words, he hadn't paid attention to them.

The yellow clothed girl stared furiously at Tianmu Ling as if she wanted nothing more than to cut her up into a thousand pieces. To face off against a person that would speak obscenities at a woman, it really annoyed her.

"This little girl is quite interesting." Tianmu Ling looked away from her and muttered her own thoughts to herself with a small smile. Then, disregarding Jian Chen, she began to search the cave once more.

Soon enough, Jian Chen had completely pieced together the nineteen pages. This Heaven Tier Battle Skill was written on some sort of unknown magical beast leather, but while it was abnormally soft, its toughness was also very apparent, meaning it would not be damaged easily.

Written on the cover of the battle skill were the words《Heaven's Stolen Fortune》. At these words, Jian Chen began to shiver in happiness as he looked at the entirety of the battle skill.

This Heaven's Stolen Fortune was an extraordinarily magical Heaven Tier Battle Skill. It allowed for one to temporarily increase one's strength three to ten times over at the cost of the rate of their Saint Force consumption being increased equally. The rate in which one's strength was multiplied is reflected upon how quickly they used up Saint Force.

If a person's strength was multiplied ten times over, then a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master would be able to fight a Heaven Saint Master and could even kill one. Naturally, this was only Jian Chen's guess. After all, there was no Heaven Saint Master for him to fight so he would not know how strong he would be.

# Chapter 323: Skeleton Of The Saint Ruler (One)

---

Jian Chen could feel his emotions stirring as he read the Heaven Tier Battle Skill the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. Jian Chen had long since knew about the rarity of a battle skill since he had left the Changyang clan. Even an inferior Human Tier Battle Skill was worth thousands of coins and could not be acquired by the most inferior of mercenaries. Right now he had a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, so his heart was naturally moved with joy that could not be described. Jian Chen knew clearly how precious Heaven Tier Battle Skills were and could not be exaggerated to any degree. Any time a Heaven Tier Battle Skill appeared within the continent, a bloody war would follow straight away and would eventually lead to an even bigger conflict.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, there were not many Heaven Tier Battle Skills. Each time one appeared, countless of Earth Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters would fight each other for it. Some Heaven Saint Masters fell to their deaths because of this.

Because of the rarity of a precious Heaven Tier Battle Skill, many similarly priced Heaven Tier Cultivation Methods were more highly sought for.

It would seem that this "Heaven Stolen Fortune" was capable of providing enough energy to rebel against the heavens. Jian Chen desperately wanted to flip through the pages, but he was a rational person and forced his surging emotions and stored the Heaven Tier Battle Skill within his Space Ring with dissatisfaction.

As soon as the battle skill was stored in his Space Ring, Jian Chen's emotions were quickly calmed down. Looking around at the people who were searching the cave, he began to join them.

The cave was extremely large and spacious. Hanging right on the ceiling of the cave was a single head sized nightpearl that illuminated the entire cave with its shiny glow.

At the front of the cave was a single high platform that had contained the wooden box with the Heaven Tier Battle Skill. In the middle was a single stone table with a small pile of dust gathered on it. The stone table looked as if it was made from the very same material as the stone door that was protecting the cave out in front. On it was a single chessboard, indicating that the previous owner of the cave loved to play chess.

Right next to a wall was a single haphazardly made wooden bookshelf with several books on it. These books had clearly been thumbed through by Qin Ji's men, since there were dust piles on the floor in front of the bookshelf.

Jian Chen walked up to the bookshelf and grabbed a book with a sudden look of shock on his face. All of these books were Human Tier Battle Skills.

Jian Chen swiftly rummaged through the remaining books to find that two of the books were Advanced Human Tier Battle Skills and the rest were Earth Tier Battle Skills. Four of them were Primary Earth Tier Battle Skills and two were Middle Earth Tier Battle Skills. This discovery had left Jian Chen in a pleasant mood since this was quite a big find. Since he grew up in a rich clan and

had a Ruler Armament, Qin Ji and his men were all men with eyes that were taller than their heads. These Earth Tier Battle Skills were beneath their notice, so even after they looked through these books, they didn't take them—which was convenient for Jian Chen.

Jian Chen wasn't as overbearing as they were and began to store away all of the battle skills into his Space Ring. For the sake of the development of the Flame Mercenaries, these battle skills were essential.

Despite the expansive cave, the items within were relatively scarce. Aside from a few things, there was nothing else to be seen. Qin Ji, Tianmu Ling, Dugu Feng, and the yellow robed girl had already scoured the entire cave and even had some choice words with the cave walls.

Suddenly, a noise could be heard from outside the cave as two middle aged men with blood pouring out their mouths flew into the cave before landing heavily on the ground.

These two men were the men that Qin Ji and Tianmu Lin had brought.

Seeing their own men sent flying through the air, Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling instantly grew dark in the face as an aura of killing intent could be felt being directed toward the entrance to the cave.

A cyan colored swordsman wearing black robes came walking in slowly as he argued angrily, "I can't enter? This cave isn't even yours, just what reason could you have for blocking me from

entering?” As Ming Dong entered the cave, many people followed behind him including an embarrassed Senior An. Right behind him was a large crowd of people who began to crowd the place.

“Who are you!” Qin Ji thundered at Ming Dong dangerously in an unfriendly manner.

Ming Dong didn’t even look at Qin Ji as he searched the five people in the cave before finally discovering Dugu Feng and Jian Chen. With a friendly wave, he spoke out, “Hey, Jian Chen, Dugu Feng, you two are here after all! It seems I’ve found the right place after all!” He spoke as he walked up to Jian Chen and clasped onto Jian Chen’s shoulder as a sign of friendship.

Seeing how Jian Chen and Ming Dong were so close with each other, Tianmu Ling and Qin Ji’s faces both slowly eased up. Despite this, they were still filled with dissatisfaction at Ming Dong. That was because everyone had been allowed entry into the cave with the disturbance Ming Dong had created.

Jian Chen forced a smile on his face as he looked at the people behind Ming Dong as he whispered, “Why did you bring so many people in here?”

Hearing this, Ming Dong suddenly had an embarrassed look on his face as he laughed awkwardly, “Jian Chen, were those guards outside the cave’s entrance a part of this group? If I had known earlier, I wouldn’t have been so rough.” As he spoke, Ming Dong strolled over to where the stone table was and placed a leg on it. In the next second, something strange happened as the stone table where Ming Dong was stepping on slowly began to descend into



the ground.

Immediately leaping off the table, Ming Dong could only look on in astonishment as the table descended deeper into the ground before exclaiming, “Wh...what’s happening? I couldn’t have activated some sort of mechanism have I?”

Even as Ming Dong spoke, the group of men in the cave all grew vigilant as they began to worry whether or not the mechanism that was activated would kill them.

As the table descended into the ground, it was almost as if there was indeed a mechanism as Ming Dong had said. The cave began to shake as a muffled boom could be heard and a hidden stone door slowly started to rise up from the ground.

“There must be a treasure inside, hurry up and enter before anyone else can!”

“Hurry up and go in, there has to be the Heaven Tier Battle Skill inside!”

The crowded cave of people quickly began to cry out loud as they charged toward the area.

Jian Chen and the others in the group didn’t hesitate for even a moment. In an instant they quickly flew toward the stone door. In a blur of movements, Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Qin Ji and the rest all disappeared from within the cave.

The area past the stone doors was quite small, only a few men could stand inside. There seemed to be a single person resting inside and right above his head was a single fist sized nightpearl that seemed to endlessly pour out a ray of light that would never cease.

As soon as several men entered this small cave, they immediately felt a tremendous amount of pressure coming at them from all angles. It was enough for everyone to suddenly become serious as their hearts could feel the shock; this cave was not a normal one.

Right next to one of the walls was a single jade white bed. On the white bed, a single white skeleton could be seen maintaining a meditative position for an unknown amount of time. This entire skeleton exuded a fluorescent light from itself as well. Although it was only a skeleton, it was giving off an incredible amount of pressure. Even the faint amount of power that could be felt in the room was coming from this skeleton.

“This is the skeleton of a Saint Ruler!” Tianmu Ling shouted out loud in shock at the skeleton. Qin Ji, Dugu Feng, Ming Dong and the yellow clothed girl all showed similar signs of shock at this new found discovery. As they discovered the skeleton and felt shock overtake them, everyone soon quickly felt their blood begin to boil.

In a single flash of movement of Qin Ji that caused a squall of wind to appear, he flew toward the skeleton. At the same time, Dugu Feng, Tianmu Ling, Ming Dong and the yellow clothed girl all charged toward it.

Ming Dong looked at the skeleton with his blood pounding in his veins, immediately enwrapping himself in his wind attributed Saint Force, his speed increased by a terrifying amount and instantly brought him closer to the skeleton. Without any hesitation, he placed his hand on the skeleton and quickly stored it into his Space Belt.

Seeing that Ming Dong had collected the Saint Ruler's skeleton, Qin Ji, Tianmu Ling and even the yellow clothed girl's face began to look exceedingly disappointed.

Suddenly, a saw tooth blade Ruler Armament appeared in Qin Ji's hand as a whip like Ruler Armament appeared in Tianmu Ling's own hand as they both attacked Ming Dong.

Dugu Feng sneered before pulling out his flame sword from his back before closing the distance between himself and Tianmu Ling to substitute for Ming Dong as a strong individual.

Simultaneously, Jian Chen had already pulled out his Light Wind Sword as he flew at Qin Ji. With a firm outreach, the Light Wind Sword began to exude Sword Qi into the area around Qin Ji, causing him to be forced to pull back his Ruler Armament.

On the other side, the already ready to strike longbow wielder saw that both Jian Chen and Dugu Feng were unexpectedly helping the one that had taken the Saint Ruler's skeleton. In an instant, she had realized that the relationship between these three were not ordinary at all and slowly withdrew her bow.

Dugu Feng didn't hesitate in the slightest as he slashed his sword at Tianmu Ling, forcing her to use her barrier. Although it blocked his attack, the force behind the blow was enough to send her flying back.

Jian Chen had no desire to fight against Qin Ji, as soon as he renounced his attack on Ming Dong, Jian Chen drew back as well as he gave an apologetic look to Qin Ji. After all, the man had just given him the pages to the Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Jian Chen wasn't a man that would show ingratitude to one that helped him, so this attack held no force behind it.

Qin Ji naturally realized the intent behind Jian Chen's attack and waved his hands in a disheartened manner. "Fine fine, brother Jian Chen, I'll give you face, this Saint Ruler's skeleton I'll give up on." Despite the dissatisfaction in his heart, Qin Ji was secretly afraid of Jian Chen and did not wish to become an enemy of his. It was with great difficulty that he had established a decent friendship with Jian Chen so he did not wish to ruin it all and become enemies over the Saint Ruler skeleton. Even if he had become enemies with Jian Chen, it was possible that he wouldn't receive anything and would share the same fate as Jiede Wukang and Shi Xiangran.

"My apologies brother Qin Ji. I hope I did not offend and that you will forgive me." Jian Chen cupped his hands in an apologetic manner toward him while confused at what just happened, could a Saint Ruler's skeleton hold some sort of treasure?

"How infuriating! Such a good item was taken away by you, no,

that won't do, I want compensation!" Tianmu Ling seethed with rage toward Jian Chen and the other two. Right now her emotions had grown terrible; even her normal words of "Big brother" were gone from her speech as she called out to Jian Chen in such an informal manner.

Ming Dong turned to look at Tianmu Ling and Qin Ji before slowly walking up to Jian Chen. With a smile, he spoke with some emotion, "Jian Chen, my luck was quite good after all, I've picked up a treasure."

"What is that good for?" Jian Chen had to ask as he looked at Ming Dong with a look of pure concentration for an answer to his question.

# Chapter 324: Collapse Of The Immortal's Cave

---

“What is that good for?” Jian Chen had to ask as he looked at Ming Dong with a look of pure concentration for an answer to his question.

At this moment a loud commotion could be heard from behind as the entire crowd finally came into this room. In a flash, the small room was filled to the brim as even more people tried to get in until the room. It seemed as if the room was like a steamed bun and could not fill up anymore. In front of Jian Chen and the others, there was still a small empty space as everyone recognized who they were. They all knew of their strength and while they did not wish to be constantly pushed in from the others behind them, they did not wish to get close to Jian Chen and so they kept their distance in fear that getting any closer would mean their lives would be in jeopardy.

“Jian Chen, I’ll explain it in full details later. But in short, we’ve got a treasure.” Ming Dong spoke to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded his head calmly without another word as he stared with narrowed eyes at the group in front of them. In a split second, this small room had filled up with people and even more people were trying to get in. This had meant that if they wanted to get out it would be a problem.

Suddenly, the entire cave began to shake as the ground shook as if there was an earthquake. As soon as the tremors started, a single fracture appeared within the cave before quickly expanding into

multiple spider web like cracks that filled every single corner of the cave. Dust began to fall from the roof as the cracks spread out, obstructing everyone's line of sight.

This sudden development caused Jian Chen to grow startled. Right now, this cave was on the verge of collapsing in on itself. In contrast, those men from the outside had been rushing into the cave almost as if the Heaven Tier Battle Skill was clouding their minds. They crowded inside the room as they shouted out for the battle skill. Despite so many people coming in, they didn't earn a single treasure. That was because this room only had the Saint Ruler's skeleton which was claimed by Ming Dong and nothing else.

The tremors within the cave began to grow stronger as many stone fragments began to fall down from the ceiling. Even the walls to the cave were starting to crumble as stone slabs fell from them.

"Crap, the cave's going to collapse! It seems this cave took one too many attacks, the Saint Ruler's skeleton must have been living in harmony with the cave, so once we took the skeleton, the pressure we felt earlier disappeared with it! The cave can't hold itself up any longer, Jian Chen, we have to get out right away!" Ming Dong had learned a lot in his one year away from Jian Chen, so he had quickly figured out the relationship between the skeleton and the cave.

Even Jian Chen's face grew serious as he looked at the group in front of him and yelled, "The cave is about to collapse, everyone hurry up and get out!" Jian Chen's voice was almost like a horn

that blasted everyone's ears like a thunderclap as he commanded them all to exit the cave.

Those men who were blinded by the Heaven Tier Battle Skill immediately regained their senses and realized the situation that they were in. Each one took on a look of shock as they all cried out, "Crap, the cave's collapsing, hurry up and get out or we all die here!"

"Crap, it really is collapsing! Get out, get out now! I don't want to die here!"

"Who ever doesn't want to die needs to hurry up and get out of here!"

More and more people began to notice the strangeness of the situation and began to pale in the face. After several shouts, everyone began to charge for the exit to the outside world as if their lives depended on it. Many men had even been pushed to the ground and trampled in their rush to run out.

"F\*cker, who stepped on me? Hurry up and show yourself, do you wish to die..."

"That's my hand you stepped on...."

"Don't step on me..."

In this moment of panic, everyone had forgotten about the



treasures in their rush to escape the cave. The cave was already dropping stone fragments from the roof, if they didn't escape soon, they would be buried deep underground.

Following the group's exit, Jian Chen and the others began to fly straight out of the room as well now that the room was more spacious than before.

The four corners of the cave continued to fracture, creating larger and larger cracks as the cave continued to tremble before a secret spot in the cave was suddenly revealed.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed as he took notice of this sudden secret. A purple and gold box could be seen sitting inside a small hole. Within the dark and dusty room, the light given off by this box was extremely eye catching.

Jian Chen quickly flew toward the hidden site and quickly grabbed the purple and gold box into his Space Ring. By the time he was done with his actions, more and more secret spots within the walls began to show up.

By this point, Ming Dong, Qin Ji, Tianmu Ling, Dugu Feng, and the yellow clothed girl had already discovered the existence of these secret spots. Without hesitation, each one dove for the hidden spots and began to hurriedly collect the contents within their Space Belts.

The few people that hadn't yet left the room had a few sharp eyed men that saw this with a look of bliss and let out an ecstatic shout.

Immediately dashing for the secret spots, one of them pulled out a single animal leather book.

“Adv... advanced... Earth Tier Battle Skill! Good heavens... I’m... I’m rich!” The person cried out as he looked at the book with joy and unable to restrain his emotions. At this sound, many people turned around to look.

“This is an Advanced Earth Tier Cultivation Method, it suits me perfectly!” Another person cried out with the book in hand.

Quickly, more and more people began to grab at the items within the secret spots. There were many things within the secret spots like Space Rings, cultivation method manuals, battle skills, and even several precious medicines.

With several men all collecting the items, the secret spots within the cave were quickly cleared out. At that moment, a Earth Saint Master suddenly took out a unknown book before widening his eyes and slowly crying out in alarm, “Heaven...” As soon as that one word escaped his lips, he immediately came to his senses and clasped his mouth shut with with his hand as he looked around himself in anxiety.

A sudden flash of fire could be seen as Dugu Feng appeared by his body with his Ruler Armament straight through the man’s chest. Taking the book in his hands, his eyes swept across the title before smiling, “So it really is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill.”

Hearing those words, Tianmu Ling put away the whip she had

only just took out as she complained, “You all move far too fast, the good things were already taken away by you.”

Qin Ji put away his Ruler Armament as well as he shook his head and sighed. Even the longbow wielder had put away her own bow.

An Earth Tier Battle Skill was something that they all didn't care for, but a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was something entirely different. To them, every single Heaven Tier Battle Skill was capable of indirectly increasing the strength of their clans. Even Saint Rulers would covet Heaven Tier Battle Skills at the same time, those clans with Ruler Armaments would not dare to disregard them.

If it were not for not Dugu Feng's reaction speed, then Qin Ji and his men would have been the ones that would have gained hold of the Heaven Tier Battle Skill since they were the next closest people.

Killing people for treasure after seeing such goods, was a trivial matter that was common within the Tian Yuan Continent.

Seeing Dugu Feng begin to kill people for their items, everyone no longer had any desire to stay in this place and quickly ran toward the exit.

Bang! Bang! Bang!....

Several large pieces of stone began to fall and crash into the

ground with a loud bang. Some parts of the cave had already collapsed while other parts of the cave continued to rain stone fragments down onto the ground.

“This place can’t hold on for much longer, we better leave.” Ming Dong spoke out in anxiety.

The group began to fly toward the exit to the cave in a rush.

“Bang!” A single four meter tall stone fragment smashed into the ground right where the passageway was.

“Out of the way!” A single roar could be heard from behind as Dugu Feng smashed the stone fragment, with his giant flame sword, into powder.

Without hesitation, everyone charged through the dusty passageway in an attempt to run even faster than before.

Soon enough, the group finally made it through the exit to the cave with everyone looking worse for wear. Not only were their clothes filled with dust, but even their faces had a layer of dirt on them that made them seem extremely dirty.

“Huu...we’re finally out, I thought we were going to be buried alive.” Ming Dong exhaled as he dusted himself off.

Right in front of them was the group that had pushed their way out earlier. A good majority of them were all dusty and had a good

layer of dirt on them. Some of the more unfortunate Great Saint Masters were even nursing their wounds from when the stone fragments fell on them.

“Out of the way, get out of the way you annoying...” Suddenly, a voice that Jian Chen was all too familiar with could be heard. Jian Chen turned his head to look only to see Qin Xiao pushing through several people in a hurry through the dust.

“What’s your rush, didn’t you get enough from earlier? Or did you forget that you wanted to die?”

“F\*ck, so a lowly Great Saint Master dares push me? You must be terribly impatient to die.”

Immediately, a loud group of men cursed in anger toward Qin Xiao as the group of men that he had pushed began to prepare to find trouble with Qin Xiao and start a fight.

Qin Xiao didn’t bother to listen to the angry swears as he hurriedly looked all over the place. Soon enough, he saw Jian Chen and let out a sigh of relief before rushing on over to him, “Jian Chen, are you fine now? I heard that the cave collapsed, and since there were a lot of people in there, I began to worry!”

Upon seeing that Qin Xiao and Jian Chen knew each other, the ones that had cursed at Qin Xiao immediately went silent and obediently closed their mouths in fear that even a fart would come out of them. As for those who were prepared to fight with Qin Xiao, they all went pale in the face and submissively retreated back

into the crowd to blend in with it.

By now, Jian Chen's fame and reputation had preceded him. He and the five experts were two matters on completely uneven footing. Jian Chen was someone everyone knew and didn't dare offend. After all, his fight against Zhe Gu was seen by everyone quite clearly. Not only was he able to kill him, but he was able to take on Zhe Gu's Earth Tier Battle Skills without any harm to his body. This was an entity that was far too strong for anyone to dare offend.

The most important thing was that Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang of the five experts had died from within the cave. While only Qin Ji and a few others had seen the reason for their death, but these two men had grievances with Jian Chen. With that, it did not take much thought to connect the dots. Adding onto the fact that Jian Chen had chased Dugu Feng out of the cave, everyone could see the pattern from there. After all, the majority of the men there were all meticulous people. Although the Heaven Tier Battle Skill had temporarily made their brains numb, this was not proof that they were stupid. A Heaven Tier Battle Skill was just too strong of an allure for them to resist.

Seeing the deep look of concern on Qin Xiao's face, Jian Chen couldn't help but smile at him, "Don't worry, I'm fine."

Ming Dong walked toward Qin Xiao with a dusty face as he clasped onto Qin Xiao's shoulder, "Hey, brother Qin Xiao! Still remember me?"

Qin Xiao quickly turned to look at the dusty and dirty face of

Ming Dong, but the dirt concealed nothing from Qin Xiao. His eyes quickly recognized Ming Dong's face and widened in surprise before shouting out loud in amazement, "Ming...Ming Dong! We weren't you not going to participate in the Gathering of the Mercenaries? How are you here?"

Ming Dong laughed, "I wasn't planning to, but then someone was looking for me, so I came along."

"Someone was looking for you? Who?" Qin Xiao spoke with confusion.

"It's a long story, let us wait for us to find an empty place before we talk. Come, Qin Xiao, let me introduce you to everyone." Ming Dong grabbed onto the flame sword wielding Dugu Feng and pulled at him, "Brother Qin Xiao, this is the newest member of our group, Dugu Feng. From now on he will be a fellow brother."

Qin Xiao was taken back for a moment before quickly resuming his straightforward attitude and greeted Dugu Feng enthusiastically. Dugu Feng replied with a smile.

Qin Jue who had just pushed his way out from behind had overheard the entire conversation with a look of utter disbelief. He didn't dare believe what he had just heard, but he didn't see Dugu Feng say anything in objection and had even replied back to Qin Xiao with a smile. In the end, Qin Jue could only choose to accept this as the truth, but his heart was still filled with doubts. Dugu Feng was one of the five experts and simultaneously had a clan behind him that had even the Tianqin clan's respect. Just how could a person like this suddenly become so close to Jian Chen?

## Chapter 325: Huang Luan

---

“This matter must be reported to the patriarch. With the young lord and the disciple of the Dugu clans to suddenly become friends with each other, this spells out something major for our clan. If we can use this newfound friendship with the Dugu clan, then our clan will definitely pull out ahead of the others.” Qin Jue thought to himself. Although he was a quiet person who rarely spoke, he was not at all stupid.

Qin Ji walked up to Jian Chen with a smile, “Brother Jian Chen, when you have time, you should come by our Qinhuang Kingdom. Our Qinhuang Kingdom is a few dozen kilometers north of Mercenary City. When you come by our kingdom, come over to the imperial palace and mention my name. This jade ornament will be your proof. As long as you can take this out, no one will doubt you.” Qin Ji took out a small jade ornament the size of his fist from his Space Belt. On the ornament was a complicated design with the word, “Qin” written on it.

“Will do, when I have the time I will go meet brother Qin Ji in your kingdom.” Jian Chen smiled as he took the ornament from him. In his mind, Jian Chen began to suspect something, was Qin Ji the prince of the Qinhuang Kingdom?

Qin Ji and Jian Chen spoke a few more words before finally splitting up from each other.

“Little brother, I have to leave now too. Make sure you remember, you still owe one small thing.” Tianmu Ling spoke as she walked up to Jian Chen and spoke to him in a gentle manner



with her mature charm.

Jian Chen gave an embarrassed smile as he spoke, “Sister Tianmu Ling likes to joke I see. You’ve given me a precious item, in the future when I have the chance, I will definitely return the favor ten or even a hundred times back.”

Tianmu Ling followed Qin Ji’s lead and left after that. Everything inside the cave was no longer recoverable, since it had collapsed, many groups of men began to leave in twos and threes. Yet, some people were still staying behind.

Jian Chen and his group didn’t have any plans to stay behind either. After summoning everyone, they all left together, but unlike last time, their group had two new people; Dugu Feng and Ming Dong.

Walking through the forest while chatting on the road, Jian Chen introduced Ming Dong to Senior An and Yun Zheng. It was only the yellow clothed girl that Jian Chen had no idea on what to do since he wasn’t familiar with her at all. Previously it was because of Shi Xiangran that they had been forced to travel together, but even after traveling together for at least a month, Jian Chen still didn’t know the girl’s name. He had wanted to find out, but because of her temper and because of the accident where he saw her body, Jian Chen was afraid that she would give him no face at all. Thus, he had no desire to be the one to poke at the thorns.

“Ah, Jian Chen, who is that girl with the longbow behind us? She’s really beautiful; I, Ming Dong have never seen such a pretty

woman. I think only that unknown second miss from the Tianqin clan would compare to her.” Ming Dong asked Jian Chen in a low voice with a great amount of curiosity.

Hearing that, Jian Chen forced a smile on his face, “You should forget about finding an answer about her from me. I don’t even know her name. She and I had a small misunderstanding in the past, and because of Shi Xiangran and his Ruler Armament, we were forced to band together in order to stand against him. This way, we would be able to defend ourselves against him.”

“Shi Xiangran? Is that one of the five experts? How strange, I thought I heard that you were able to kill two Ruler Armament users. These types of people should pose no threat to you at all, just how did you feel so threatened to travel along with her? Could it be Shi Xiangran is extremely strong?” Ming Dong asked with confusion.

“That’s not it at all.” Jian Chen spoke. “Shi Xiangran had a strange barrier that made my attacks harmless to him. With his incredible Ruler Armament to attack us from a large range and was equally hard to dodge. Although I had a secret power, I wasn’t sure that it would be a threat to Shi Xiangran. For the best case scenario, I had decided to travel with her. It was only today in the cave that I was forced into a tough situation that I could try out my last resort against Shi Xiangran’s barrier. I didn’t think that it would be enough to break through! Because of this, Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang’s barrier were no longer a threat and I was able to kill them.”

Hearing this, Ming Dong looked on with shock, “Jian Chen, you

were able to shatter their barrier, is that true?”

“I was able to borrow some outside help.” With that, Jian Chen revealed the azure and violet Sword Qi to Ming Dong with his finger. The two lights glowed faintly; while they were brighter and stronger than before, it was only by a marginal amount. Under the scorching sun, this light was nothing.

Just as the two glows of Sword Qi appeared, a strange incorporeal amount of Sword Qi filled the air, causing everyone to feel a sudden chill that made their hearts quake in fear.

The azure and violet Sword Qi was Jian Chen’s biggest trump card, but he had revealed it many times already and it had been seen by many people. Thus, the azure and violet Sword Qi could not longer be considered a secret. It was no longer necessary to try and hide it; it was only necessary to hide away the secret behind it.

After the survival competition was over, they would enter the individual fighting tournament which would take place on an elevated platform against other strong individuals. If Jian Chen wanted to be the number one rank, then he would have to use his azure and violet Sword Qi, thus there was no longer a point in hiding the Sword Qi.

Jian Chen didn’t talk about the azure and violet Sword Qi too much, aside from a little display of their strength and their name, Jian Chen hadn’t said anything else about it. Even with the azure and violet Sword Qi revealed, he still wanted to keep some factors of it hidden so when the time comes, it would still be a mysterious threat.

“Jian Chen, the azure and violet Sword Qi you have, could it be from the Supreme Treasure you bought from the Treasure Pavilion?” Qin Xiao’s eyes flashed with realization as he asked his question.

Hearing Qin Xiao’s words, Jian Chen was stunned. He didn’t think that Qin Xiao would have made a connection between the Multicolored Stone in his body and the azure and violet Sword Qi. This had also made him smile, he now had an explanation. This was because Qin Xiao’s words had some meaning to them. The strong azure and violet Sword Qi using the energy from the Supreme Treasure was a fitting explanation.

Jian Chen’s attitude caused everyone to think that the azure and violet Sword Qi was because of a Supreme Treasure. Although Senior An and Yun Zheng had no idea what a Supreme Treasure, they both knew from the name itself that it was an unknown treasure and looked at Jian Chen with envy.

The yellow clothed girl walked up to Jian Chen and spoke quietly, “I have some words to speak with you.”

Jian Chen had some doubts as he looked at her before finally walking out of the group to a vacant spot a hundred meters away where the girl followed him to.

Ming Dong and the others stopped traveling as they all looked on, curious to know what the girl wanted to speak to Jian Chen about. Then Ming Dong had a strange but deep smile on his face as

he laughed, “That girl must like Jian Chen if she has to walk that far away so that we wouldn’t be able to hear them.”

Senior An nodded his head in thought as well, “I can see that as being likely. Jian Chen is quite handsome and strong, he’s not too bad of a person as well. There is no woman under the heavens that would not be swayed by him. However, that girl’s temper is really quite bad, could it be that she is the spoiled daughter of some rich clan? She really is quite haughty.”

Hearing Senior An’s words, Yun Zheng and Qin Xiao both nodded their head in agreement. Only Qin Jue and Dugu Feng remained silent.

On one side, Jian Chen looked at the yellow clothed girl, “What did you want to say?”

The girl looked at Jian Chen with a complicated look and hesitated before saying, “Not only did you kill Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang, but you also took their Ruler Armaments. The two clans won’t let you go for this, you should be more careful in the future.” The girl spoke with a rare amount of concern. Although she still harbored some angry feelings from when Jian Chen had seen her body, but after dealing with him for some time, she had come to understand him more. From her anger for him rose a new type of feeling.

“That I know.” Jian Chen stated.

“Also, I would like to thank you for killing Shi Xiangran. Now

that he is dead, there is no need for us to continue traveling together. Therefore, I should head out on my own way.” The girl’s voice was extraordinarily soft, and in her eyes was a seldom seen reluctance. Although she had only come to know Jian Chen for a month, she came to enjoy this feeling she had. Right now as she was prepared to leave Jian Chen’s group, a complicated sensation could be felt rising up within her body.

Jian Chen seemed to look far away without a single word as the winds from the area blew on his body, causing his clothes to billow and his long black hair to flutter and dance in the winds. This sight made him seem like a hero from a legend.

The girl looked at Jian Chen’s handsome face as she began to struggle for a moment before finally speaking out loud with courage, “Did you not want to know my name?”

“You never told me, how would I know it?” Jian Chen spoke calmly.

“Did it not occur to you to ask?” The girl began to look a little angry as she stared at Jian Chen with her beautiful face.

“With your temper, I was afraid of a bad result.” Jian Chen spoke helplessly. Against her temper, he had tasted it enough times.

She was finally defeated. With a hurt look, she spoke in a low voice, “I am Huang Luan, remember my name. Goodbye.” With that, she turned to walk away from Jian Chen as the wind blew behind her, causing her yellow clothes to flutter in the air. Even

her long hair had begun to dance in a ballad like motion as the wind carried it.

## Chapter 326: Hidden Energy Within The Saint Ruler's Skeleton

---

Jian Chen stared at the still closeby girl with some hesitation before opening his mouth once more, "Wait a moment."

Hearing the voice behind her, the girl stopped her steps before replying to him without turning around, "What is the matter?"

Jian Chen spoke softly, "I am thinking that you have no barrier to protect yourself with."

"I do not have any barrier with me." The girl didn't deny it.

Jian Chen spoke without flinching, "You have a Ruler Armament with you and no barrier; do you really think you could travel safely like this? Although Shi Xiangran is dead, he is but only one of the many men lusting for your Ruler Armament. For example, if Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling were to face off against you, it would be incredibly difficult to fight by yourself. I trust that you know just how much any clan would value another Ruler Armament. For the sake of their clan's expansion, it can't be said whether or not they would try to snatch away your Solunar Bow. After all, to them, this is a huge achievement and at the same time, you have no relations to them."

"Aside from those two, this place still has many strong Earth Saint Masters and some that may even be organized. While your Solunar Bow is capable of killing an Earth Saint Master with ease, if a group of Earth Saint Masters were to attack you at the same



time, would you have enough time to shoot them all? In the end, your Solunar Bow is only strong from afar. If they were to get close, then your Solunar Bow would lose its superior edge. In the end, who knows whether or not someone will place a trap for you?”

Jian Chen didn't know whether or not his words would be enough to convince Huang Luan to stay behind. Perhaps it was because of the month they had traveled together, but Jian Chen had no desire to see the beautiful girl die in a place like this. Jian Chen didn't have a good understanding of Ruler Armaments, but he did know that for the sake of protecting his Ruler Armament, the extremely proud Dugu Feng had sacrificed his own life and was even willing to make a blood oath. From this, Jian Chen could infer that the Ruler Armament was truly something that many families would pay a heavy price for.

With Huang Luan by herself as a long ranged Ruler Armament user, if an enemy were to get close to her, then her longbow would lose its effectiveness. She didn't have a barrier either so it would be hard to avoid those who might have a greedy heart.

Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling were the two people Jian Chen was most worried about. If either one were to get close to Huang Luang for a long period of time, then they would be able to touch her with ease. Although Jian Chen wasn't sure they would do anything against Huang Luan, one must be cautious even if the chance was only one percent.

Hearing Jian Chen's words, Huang Luang's face grew extremely serious. Jian Chen's words made perfect sense, and after the

events from the cave, everyone knew that she had a Ruler Armament. Although this was something most people were only hearing about for the first time, they would know what a Ruler Armament was soon enough. She was afraid of meeting these men. With this treasure on her and no defensive barrier while traveling by herself, she would definitely be a target for those who might come across her.

With that in mind, Huang Luan's face grew dark. Originally, she had thought that Shi Xiangran's death would be the only thing she needed to live in peace. She hadn't thought that she would gain a new type of headache. This Ruler Armament was far too precious.

“Just in case anything happens, you should continue to travel with us. This round of the tournament is almost over anyways, by the end, we'll all be transported out of this area, you'll be safe then.” Seeing Huang Luan's willpower waver a bit, Jian Chen took the chance to strike. He didn't know whether or not he was a friend or stranger to her, but he had no desire to see something unexpected happen to her. Maybe it was because she was exceedingly beautiful, or maybe it was because he had grown to like her as a friend in the month they had been traveling together. Or maybe it was because he was still feeling guilty about seeing her body that one time. But this was a complicated matter that even Jian Chen couldn't explain clearly.

Huang Luan stood there without moving almost as if she were a statue. Then after some time, she was finally convinced and nodded her head.

With a sigh of relief, Jian Chen smiled, “Let's head back now and

find a place. Afterward, we just need to wait, with our collected tokens, we'll definitely be within the top 500."

With Huang Luan deciding not to leave the group, the two walked back to the group. As they returned, Jian Chen couldn't help but notice Ming Dong gave him a knowing wink. Despite not saying anything, it didn't take an idiot to figure out what that wink meant, but Jian Chen sensibly said nothing.

"Brother, how amazing! This girl is comparable to even my sister in beauty, but she isn't as kind as my sister." Qin Xiao laughed as he spoke to Jian Chen with a meaningful smile, causing Jian Chen to smile awkwardly. The relationship between him and Huang Luan wasn't like what everyone thought, but Ming Dong and the others were trying to say otherwise. If he tried to explain himself now, not only would it not have a single impact on the situation, but it would also deepen everyone's misunderstanding.

Later within a clear and vacant space, several white tents were pitched. In the center of the ring of tents were Ming Dong, Senior An, Yun Zheng, Jian Chen, Dugu Feng, Qin Xiao, Qin Jue, and Huang Luan who all sat at a circular table with a variety of sweet smelling dishes on it. These things had all been taken from Jiede Wukang's Space Ring. All sorts of good looking dishes could be found inside, since the space within the Space Ring was larger than that of a Space Belt, there were a large amount of dishes that were cooked and meant for eating over a long period of time. Furthermore, the dishes within Jiede Wukang's Space Ring were of the finest delicacy and there was enough for the group to eat for several months.

After the meal, a few of the men left the table, leaving behind Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Dugu Feng and Huang Luan.

Ming Dong looked around the table before taking a sneak peek behind to see if anyone else would come back to the table. Then, with a mysterious glance at Jian Chen, he asked, “Jian Chen, do you wish to know what the skeleton of a Saint Ruler can be used for?”

“Yes, I’m quite curious. Just why is it so precious everyone would try to steal it?” Jian Chen spoke with curiosity.

“Then let me tell you.” A sing-song like voice could be heard as Huang Luan suddenly took the initiative to speak with a quiet voice.

Preparing to speak, Huang Luang organized her thoughts before saying, “A Saint Ruler has a limited lifespan, so naturally, they die a natural death. This type of death is what we have come to call a “Seated Death”. The energy within a Saint Ruler is incredibly strong and pure. That is why after a Saint Ruler dies by a seated death, the energy and Saint Weapon within their body do not dissipate into the world. The energy continues to stay within the body and slowly enters the skeleton. After some time, the Saint Ruler will leave behind its skeleton with its full strength intact, meaning it is very precious. If one were to obtain the power of a Saint Ruler, would that not make people envious?”

Jian Chen nodded his head in understanding, “I understand a bit more, but just how did your Ruler Armaments come to be then? According to what you’ve said, the energy of a Saint Ruler blends

into the skeleton, while the energy from their Saint Weapon should dissipate. How could it continue on to exist?”

Huang Luan spoke, “A Saint Ruler’s strength is classified into nine levels. This system is called the Nine Heavenly Layers. When a Saint Ruler reaches the Ninth Heavenly Layer, they are standing at the pinnacle of the current realm and from there it is only one small step to become a Saint King. At this step, the Saint Weapon within their body has reached a peak of qualitative energy. By this point, a Saint Ruler is strong enough to sever the connection between himself and the Saint Weapon. Thus, when a Saint Ruler reaches the Ninth Heavenly Layer, they will take out their Saint Weapons and sever the connection. The Saint Weapon will be able to maintain the energy within it forever without dissipating, and thus becomes a Ruler Armament.”

“So when a Saint Ruler reaches the Ninth Heavenly Layer, they will be able to sever the Saint Weapon’s connection to themselves, but no one under the Ninth Heaven Layer will be able to accomplish such a feat. Then, when these Saint Rulers die a seated death, their Saint Weapon’s energy will be harmonized into their skeletons just like this one skeleton we have now?” Jian Chen asked.

“Correct.” Huang Luan said.

“Then that’s strange, when a Saint Ruler reaches the Ninth Heavenly Layer, just why would they sever their connection with their Saint Weapon and give it to someone else? Of course, for those Saint Rulers with a family, they would do this to benefit the younger generation, but if I recall correctly, this wouldn’t be the

case for most people, as not every Saint Ruler has such a clan to be in.” Jian Chen asked the question on his mind.

“It is because of a correlation to an unrealistic legend. Because of that, every Saint Ruler that reaches the Ninth Heavenly Layer will choose to break off the connection and retain the perfected state of the Saint Weapon.” Huang Luan said.

“Legend? Oh, right. Jian Chen, uncle Tian told me something before, let me explain it to you.” Ming Dong said. “Uncle Tian said that when a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler severs the connection with his Saint Weapon, they will leave behind a small amount of essence, Qi and spirit, in their Saint Weapon and eagerly await for an impossible legend to happen to them.”

“What legend is that!?” Jian Chen spoke eagerly.

“Resurrection!” Dugu Feng spoke seriously.

“What, resurrection!” Jian Chen said startled as he stared at them all with disbelief.

Ming Dong nodded his own head with a solemn look, “That’s right, it truly is resurrection. This is what uncle Tian told me.”

“That’s...just how could it be that?” Jian Chen spoke as if the very notion was inconceivable.

Huang Luan sighed as she replied, “Of course it’s not possible

since no one has ever achieved such a thing before. However, one thing is for sure; those Saint Rulers at the Ninth Heavenly Layer are all staunch believers of this without any doubt. Thus, when a Saint Ruler reaches the epitome of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, they choose to sever their connection with their Saint Weapon.”

Dugu Feng grew dark, “I can only assume that there is something we don’t know. Otherwise, why would the Saint Rulers at the Ninth Heavenly Layer believe in such a fairytale without a doubt?”

Jian Chen shook his head heavily, “This is still too inconceivable. For a Saint Ruler to use their Saint Weapon in order to resurrect, that is too much of an exaggeration. It is no wonder this legend has never borne fruit since it is an impossible task to begin with.”

As Jian Chen spoke these words, Huang Luan, Dugu Feng, and Ming Dong all agreed with him.

# Chapter 327: End Of The Survival Competition

---

In regards to this information, Jian Chen was truly shocked. Huang Luan and Dugu Feng were both from major clans with a Saint Ruler ancestor as an overseer and were both in high positions in the clans so they knew enough about these matters. While Ming Dong was born in a small village, because of the unfathomably strong Saint Ruler in the midair shrine and Ming Dong's relationship with him, he was able to learn many secrets that made him as knowledgeable as Huang Luan and Dugu Feng.

The three of them continued to give their accounts on the secrets of a Saint Ruler, allowing Jian Chen to understand not only their strength classification, but also the powerful might of the remains.

The total amount of accumulated energy within a Saint Ruler's skeleton was capable of being absorbed by a cultivator for their cultivation. However, only a Heaven Saint Master would be strong enough to extract the energy from a Saint Ruler's skeleton, since a Saint Ruler's energy was far too concentrated for anyone below a Heaven Saint Master to endure.

Other than that, Ruler Armaments somehow carried a shocking secret within them. A Saint Ruler that died in a seated death would be able to resurrect with it. This was almost like a story of The Arabian Nights, no one had ever seen it happen before. Although only a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer would be able to sever the connection with their Saint Weapon, the rest of this legend was nothing more than that unless there was a secret that the common man wouldn't know.



These two bits of information had given Jian Chen a lot to think about. He truly did feel that this world was far too strange and was unlike the original world he used to live in.

Dugu Feng took out an unknown book from his Space Ring and handed it over to Jian Chen, “This is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, but only a water attributed person will be able to use it. It’s no use for me, so you should take it.”

Hearing that, Jian Chen’s eyes sparked together. Taking this book to see the contents, he had to make sure himself that it was truly a battle skill for only a water attribute cultivator.

Turning to Huang Luan, he spoke, “If I remember correctly, you are a water attribute. This Heaven Tier Battle Skill will be for you then.”

Taking a look at the battle skill, she threw it back at Jian Chen, “My Heaven Tier Battle Skill is higher than this one, I won’t be needing it.”

“Could you not learn both of them?” Jian Chen asked.

Huang Luang stared oddly at Jian Chen, “A Heaven Tier Battle Skill is the highest battle skill on the continent. Each Heaven Tier Battle Skill is highly profound so that a regular person would never be able to fully comprehend a Heaven Tier Battle Skill in their entire life. It isn’t to say that learning more battle skills are good. Even if one were to learn many Heaven Tier Battle Skills, they

would not be better than one who mastered a single one. So one should try to fully master a single Heaven Tier Battle Skill and not waste time learning anything else. Wasting energy is one thing, but wasting progress is another.”

Hearing her reasoning, Jian Chen couldn't argue with it. He stored the battle skill away since he had no use for it now. It would become useful when the Flame Mercenaries expanded in the future.

Jian Chen took out the Space Rings from Jiede Wukang and Shi Xiangran. He took the tokens out of the space rings. They made a crashing sound as they landed on the table. With a conservative estimate, there were around 2000 tokens in total.

“Ming Dong, you've been away for too long. These tokens are necessary to move on, go ahead and take some.” Jian Chen said to him.

With a happy look, Ming Dong said, “Great! I was seriously lacking some tokens. Right now tokens are quite hard to find. We've met several people on the road already, but their tokens had already been taken by someone else, leaving me with only a hundred tokens at the most.” Ming Dong began to take some of the tokens, putting them into his Space Ring.

“That'll be enough, 500 tokens should be enough to grant me an advancement.” Ming Dong spoke as he took 400 of the tokens.

“That won't be enough. If you wish to move on, you'll need at

least 1200 tokens because the amount of participants are far more than you would think. I could only guess that there were at least 500,000 people in this round.” Dugu Feng said.

Jian Chen grew startled at that. He hadn’t thought that the amount of participants would be that much, he had only thought that 200,000 people at most would be participating.

Ming Dong took another pile of tokens; to be on the safe side, he now had 1500 tokens which should guarantee him a spot in the top 500. The amount of tokens with Jian Chen, Huang Luan and Dugu Feng had easily exceeded that amount so they hadn’t any thoughts about these tokens at all.

Then, Jian Chen had Qin Xiao, Qin Jue, Senior An, and Yun Zhen all brought over so that the remaining tokens could be split among them.

“I only came to act as the bodyguard to Qin Xiao, I won’t be participating in the finals.” The normally silent Qin Jue spoke as he donated the tokens he had on him to everyone else.

“I only came to participate as a mission to gain experience from my father. I won’t be participating in the finals either; with my current strength, participating would only end in my death.” Qin Xiao spoke.

Jian Chen turned his gaze to Senior An and Yun Zheng. Although he hadn’t known the two for long, the two of them had traveled with Jian Chen for a long road so Jian Chen couldn’t mistreat

them.

Yun Zheng and Senior An consulted for some time before Yun Zheng ultimately backed out and gave his tokens to Senior An.

“Senior An’s strength is greater than mine and he also has an earth attribute. He was also able to save my life multiple times, so I will give this chance to him.” Yun Zheng spoke.

After the tokens were given, Jian Chen took out four Class 5 Monster Cores and gave Senior An and Yun Zheng two of them as a reward for defending the cave.

“Right now we all have enough tokens. All that’s left is to wait. After these next few days, we can finally leave from this demonic place. We’ve all suffered greatly in this one year, so we should all be happy now! Allow me to use this to entertain everyone!” Ming Dong laughed as he took out the carcass of a giant magical beast from his Space Ring, causing the tent they were in to bulge outward.

“Heavens, you killed even the Amethyst Thunder Lion?” Qin Jue and Senior An both cried out in astonishment as they stared at the bloody corpse of the Amethyst Thunder Lion.

Aside from Jian Chen, Dugu Feng and Huang Luan, everyone else did not know of Ming Dong’s strength. Qin Xiao and Qin Jue had both believed that Ming Dong was the same Great Saint Master they had known a year ago.

Ming Dong gave a pleased smile as he laughed, “This Amethyst Thunder Lion is quite a strange magical beast, I’m sure it could be considered a mutant. It’s strength was already at the peak level for a Class 5 Magical Beast and was not weaker than a Heaven Saint Master in strength. If it were not for the heavy injuries already, I would not be able to kill it as easily as I did. However, that digging maniac Pangolin Emperor was far too crafty and ran away. But I was still able to land us a fine delicacy, let us enjoy this high leveled magical beast meat and its multiple, good benefits!”

After leaving the tent, Jian Chen began to look at the items he had taken from the secret spots in the cave by himself. Before the immortal’s cave had collapsed, he was able to grab three Earth Tier Battle Skills, four Earth Tier Cultivation Methods, several white jade bottles with wonderful smelling medicinal herbs, and a few other things of relatively useless value. There was also a few Radiant Saint Force filled pills which shocked Jian Chen since the pure Radiant Saint Force in these pills far exceeded his own.

“These pills are quite unique. I bet this was what the Saint Ruler himself had found.” Jian Chen thought.

Then, Jian Chen took out the purple and gold box and opened it slowly to reveal a small white piece of fur inside.

Jian Chen gently took out the fur from the box before suddenly feeling his heart skip a beat. Immediately, he took out the two white pieces of fur from his own Space Ring. These three pieces of fur were the exact same size and color. It seemed that they were almost identical.

Among the three pieces of fur was the one given to Jian Chen by his mother Bi Yuntian as her farewell gift to him which in turn was her family heirloom.

“Just what secret are these strange pieces of fur hiding?” Jian Chen held up the three pieces of fur with confusion. Jian Chen had privately done his research into this topic many times, but he had never found an answer.

Jian Chen knew that there was no way for him to be able to find out the mystery behind the pieces of fur, so he had never tried. Making sure that the three pieces of fur were together, he stored them in his Space Ring once more.

Over the next couple of days, Jian Chen and the group continued to idle about in a carefree manner. The strength of the group was enough to deter anyone away from their spot, so the next few days went by for them in their camp peacefully. Everyday they would eat three meals from the meat of the Amethyst Thunder Lion while waiting for the competition to end.

Jian Chen was not idle in this time. Aside from the meals, he would spend every single moment by himself in his tent in order to study the Heaven Tier Battle Skill he had found in the cave, the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. This battle skill was capable of multiplying one's strength—something Jian Chen found incredibly helpful.

In this time, many men came across Jian Chen's group, but they could only look at the group from afar. Not a single person dared disturb them and were afraid that if they were to offend them,

they would lose their lives.

When only three days remained in the competition, a bad rumor could be heard circulating about. Up in the north, three exceptionally strong men were talked about. Each one of them were a Radiant Saint Force user. This type of Saint Force was seldomly rare to see, but these Radiant Saint Force users were called the Radiant Warriors by most, and the undying by others.

That was because if one of them were to sustain an injury, they were able to quickly heal themselves. Within the battle, if one were not able to kill them in a single strike, then it would be hard to kill them.

A Radiant Warrior was able to use the Radiant Saint Force to heal injuries like a Radiant Saint Master, but what was different about them was that they could only heal themselves and not the wounds of another.

When these three men with the ability to use the Radiant Saint Force appeared, it caused everyone to gossip straight away. That was because Radiant Saint Force was an incredibly rare thing to see on the continent. In a short amount of time, everyone was beginning to compare the three to the five experts, and in another moment, rumors began to spread.

One person said they personally witnessed one of the Radiant Saint Warriors chop off the head of a Class 5 Magical Beast.

Another person said that they saw a Radiant Warrior kill a dozen

Earth Saint Masters.

No matter the rumors, not a single one of them spoke of the three Radiant Warriors on a clear level.

When he had heard rumors of these three, even Jian Chen had felt some pressure. That was because within the large Tian Yuan Continent, he had traveled to many places and met many people, but as for a person with Radiant Saint Force, this was the very first time because not many Radiant Saint Force users could be found.

Three days quickly went by, today was the day the survival tournament ended.

Jian Chen and the others had already packed up their tents and sat around the ground to wait. After half a day, the previously bright place grew dark before the sky instantly grew ashen in color. In the next moment, a strong amount of energy began to warp through the sky, devastating it.

As the sky grew darker and darker, the entire area began to grow even more gloomy. The berserk energy within the sky continued to cause turmoil in the sky before finally cracking the sky as if someone had shattered it.

The crack in the sky continued to expand before quickly filling up the entire place. By now, the entire place was pitch dark without any light visible. Not even a single star could be seen, causing everyone to feel a little pressure.



Suddenly, a large attractive force could be felt that even Jian Chen felt that he wasn't able to resist.

It seemed as if this world was on the verge of collapsing as the entire place grew dark. Jian Chen couldn't tell what was happening anymore, but he could feel that an unbelievably strong energy was lifting him into the air.

.....

Twenty or so breaths into the darkness, it finally cracked before the world resumed its normal appearances. The difference was that not a single person could be seen, everyone had already been transported away from this place.

Suddenly, a strange energy filled the air as the dead bodies of the competitors began to slowly fade away.

## Chapter 328: Threat (One)

---

As the darkness receded to make way for the light, Jian Chen looked up only to see a large shrine. This shrine was large enough to house 10,000 people, but at this moment, this place was already filled with many scraggly looking men that had all just been brought here along with Jian Chen.

“What type of energy is this for it to be strong enough to transport every single person in that world, could it be a Saint Ruler? Or maybe a Saint King, or perhaps a Saint Emperor?” Jian Chen thought to himself in amazement. The energy that had enveloped him was far too strong for him to even think about defending himself against.

“For those with tokens, please come here to register your name. For those without any tokens, please exit this place immediately; the door is behind you.” At that moment, a loud voice echoed throughout the shrine as an elderly looking man sat by a long table as if he had been waiting there for some time. By his side were two assistants who looked to be around the same age as well.

With those words in mind, many people grew depressed before walking toward the door. After everyone had left, only 200 men remained.

Jian Chen ended up as the most attention grabbing person because his clothes were still intact. Everyone else was in terrible shape and their clothes were not covering up most of their body. Many didn't even have a single Space Belt and used a bag to hold their things.

From this group, the majority of them were all Great Saint Masters while only a few dozen Earth Saint Masters remained.

Jian Chen looked around himself, from the 200 people here, he recognized no one. Not even Ming Dong or Qin Xiao could be seen.

“It seems that we were all taken outside.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

The two hundred men continued to walk toward the elder and the very first person had begun to take out his tokens from his Space Belt to show to the elder.

The elder swept his eye over the sum and spoke, “Five tokens, verification complete.”

Immediately an elder took out a brush and wrote the number five on a piece of paper before barking out, “Speak your name!”

“Liang Dezhong!” The competitor spoke respectfully.

“You may go.” The elder wrote down Liang Dezhong’s name.

The third elder took away the black tokens.

The three elders worked in a fluid tandem. One would verify that the tokens were real while the second took their names and

numbers and the third collected the tokens.

The second competitor came to the table and dropped three tokens on the table.

“Three tokens, verification complete.” The first elder spoke.

Immediately the other elder began to write down the record as the first one spoke a confirmation. After taking his name, the second elder wrote the number three.

Taking down the information was not slow at all and the competitors with a small amount of tokens were quickly weeded out. Rapidly, tens of dozens of men had been fully recorded. So far, the person with the least amount of tokens was two while the most had 80. Not a single person had over 100 tokens, so Jian Chen began to feel some confusion. Just how did these competitors survive the competition, did no one try to rob them? In the later half of the competition, most of the tokens were all within the hands of a few strong experts. Most of the strongest competitors had already a thousand tokens; Jiede Wukang and Shi Xiangran both had a thousand tokens each.

“Could they have just never bothered to fight at all during the year?” Jian Chen thought.

“126 tokens, verification complete!”

After a good amount of men, there was finally a person with over

a hundred tokens.

Quickly, after one person had been announced to have over a hundred tokens, another person with 300 tokens was announced; making him the highest.

When it came to be Jian Chen's turn, every single person immediately turned to look at him with a focused eye. Everyone was curious to see just how much the completely uninjured and intact competitor had collected.

Jian Chen lifted his left hand to reveal the Space Ring on his finger to everyone.

“That's a Space Ring!” Someone cried out in shock. A Space Ring was the symbol of wealth and meant anyone that wore one was not an ordinary person. For a mercenary to wear a Space Ring, it meant that this person was an extraordinarily strong individual. Because of how expensive Space Rings were, only Earth Saint Masters wore them.

The three elders didn't have a change in their facial expression as they stared at Jian Chen.

“Crash!”

The sounds of a wave of metallic objects crashing into each other could be heard as the black tokens crashed against the table. In a single second, the entire table had a small mountain on it that was

almost impossible to begin to count from.

The three appraisers grew startled at this at last and stared at Jian Chen with a shocked expression.

After taking out all of the tokens from the Space Ring, Jian Chen slowly brought down his left hand.

“Is that all?” An elder asked Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded his head and replied calmly, “That’s all!”

The group of people standing nearby Jian Chen were all like stone statues from the sheer amount of tokens on the table.

This time, the elder in charge of counting the tokens took some time to count them all before speaking, “1873 tokens, verification complete!”

Hearing that number, everyone sucked in a sharp breath as their hearts immediately skipped a beat. For those who had only collected several or even less than a hundred tokens, this amount was far too gigantic for them to take in. Who would have known that someone that barely looked past the age of twenty would have such an amount.

The three elders attitude toward Jian Chen immediately changed as the one in charge of writing down the name immediately smiled at Jian Chen, “Fellow brother, what is your name?”

“Jian Chen!”

“Good, brother Jian Chen, your achievements have really astounded us. I hope you can continue to astound us and have many more achievements in the next round!” The elder smile at Jian Chen before writing down the number “1873” on the paper with his name.

Afterward, Jian Chen left the area without another look back while the mercenaries all stared at him, as he left, in mute shock.

“Jian Chen, that youth is named Jian Chen!” A person spoke out.

“Jian Chen, I’ve heard this name before! His name was recently made known. I’ve heard that he and the five experts are close friends, and that his own strength isn’t weaker than theirs.”

“So it’s like that? It’s no wonder he was able to collect so many tokens if he is able to be compared against the five experts.”

.....

After walking out of the hallway, Jian Chen suddenly found himself in a giant place that was arranged like a courtyard. Four giant hallways could be seen in every cardinal direction, and the hallway he just walked out from was one of the four. Many other miserable looking competitors could be seen hobbling out of the other hallways. In the middle of the courtyard like arrangement

was a single wide space which was filled with people. Among the crowd was a single large Space Gate that shined brightly overhead. On the other side of the Space Gate was a stone statue that was familiar to everyone.

“Jian Chen, we’re over here!” A loud cry came out from far away as Ming Dong waved his hand at him. By his side, Huang Luan and Dugu Feng could be seen standing there.

Seeing his friends standing there, Jian Chen had a pleasantly surprised smile on his face. He had originally thought that everyone was sent to different places, but they were still all here.

Everyone quickly converged together with a happy smile on their faces.

“This Mercenary City is quite strong for it to be able to have such an expansive area.” Ming Dong said.

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat, “Could we be in some sort of empty space then right now?”

Ming Dong nodded his head, “Correct, right now, we are in an isolated space. It seems that this Space Gate will allow us to return to the Tian Yuan Continent.”

Jian Chen wasn’t too surprised, he could already guess that they were no longer within Mercenary City. What he didn’t expect was to hear that they were currently in an isolated space.



“We should head on out, the Grand Elder is most likely waiting for us.” Qin Xiao spoke.

After talking, the group walked toward the Space Gate, and when they walked out from the other side, they were standing back in the vast area in Mercenary City. Not too far was the giant stone statue that remained vivid and lifelike almost as if it were a human filled with grace. His head continued to stare off into the sky almost as if trying to stare a hole into it.

“Although I wasn’t born in Mo Tianyun’s time, I’ve heard of his legends many times. In his year, the creator of Mercenary City was matchless. No one under the heavens could fight him and he was even able to drive back the strongest of the Bai. The continent was left safe, but what a shame that he couldn’t withstand the corrosion of time!” Dugu feng spoke as he looked at the statue.

Huang Luan looked at Mo Tianyun’s statue for a moment as well before turning to speak to Jian Chen, “I’ll be leaving first. I hope that I’ll see you again in the finals.”

“Take care of yourself! Be careful of Shi Xiangran’s clan. They’ve come prepared, your uncle Tian and uncle Yun will have quite the headache.” Jian Chen spoke seriously.

“No worries, they won’t dare make a move in Mercenary City!” Huang Luan spoke before turning her head and walking away.

Jian Chen turned to look at Senior An and Yun Zheng before

cupping his hands together, “Fellow friends, we will be leaving as well, until next time!”

“One moment Jian Chen, I think I heard Ming Dong say that you’ve established a Mercenary Group. Is that true?” Senior An asked as he looked at Jian Chen with a curious expression.

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s heart skipped as beat as he said, “That’s correct, I’ve made a Mercenary Group, did Senior An want to join?”

Senior An laughed out loud before scratching at his bald head, “That’s right. I’d like to join you if that is possible. Your strength is quite strong and you are a genius as well, I can bet that my future will shine brightly with you.”

“Of course then, I would naturally accept you.” Jian Chen had a happy smile on his face as he replied quickly before looking at Yun Zheng, “Did brother Yun Zheng wish to join as well?”

With a small smile, Yun Zheng replied, “If brother Jian Chen asks, then I, Yun Zheng won’t dawdle. Senior An is correct, I too believe that traveling with you would lead to a bright future.”

The addition of these two was what Jian Chen was hoping for. Right now the Flame Mercenaries required experts, so the addition of two Earth Saint Masters was what Jian Chen needed most.

“Haha, then all is fine now. Our Flame Mercenaries have

expanded once more. I believe that our Flame Mercenaries will shine throughout the continent now.” Ming Dong laughed.

Afterward, everyone left to find an inn. Qin Xiao had already made agreements with the Grand Elder from the Tianqin clan who was waiting for them at an inn.

Dugu Feng wasn't with Jian Chen's group since the Dugu clan had elders waiting for him, he had to go back for now.

Jian Chen and Ming Dong brought Qin Xiao, Senior An and Yun Zheng to the inn where the Grand elder was waiting for them at a table with several dishes nearby.

The Grand Elder looked at everyone before sweeping his eyes over to Qin Xiao and Qin Jue who were both healthy with an excited smile. “Come and sit down, I've already ordered some delicacies. Just wait in the safety of my company.”

Ever since Jian Chen had first seen the Grand Elder, this was the very first time he had seen him smile or say a word. Even Qin Xiao was no exception, in that moment, Qin Xiao and Qin Jue both felt uncomfortable.

“Our apologies for worrying the Grand Elder.” Qin Xiao cupped his hands in respect before sitting down at the table with everyone.

Suddenly, the Grand Elder looked at Ming Dong with a sharp glance. In the next moment, a powerful look could be seen as he

exclaimed in shock, “Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master!”

## Chapter 329: Threat (Two)

---

Seeing the shocked expression on the Grand Elder's face, Ming Dong laughed giddily, "The Grand Elder is quite keen to be able to see through my strength, but the Grand Elder needn't lose his manners."

Before the competition had started, the Heaven Saint Master that was the Grand Elder had been able to place a large amount of pressure on Ming Dong. However now, Ming Dong could be at ease with the Grand Elder without feeling any of the pressure anymore. That was because he was merely a step away from becoming a Heaven Saint Master. If it were not for uncle Tian, then he would have long since made the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master.

The Grand Elder continued to stare at the black robed Ming Dong with his normally peaceful expression. Instead of being clear like water, emotions raged through his eyes, disbelief could be seen within his pupils.

Within the short time span of a year, Ming Dong had made the breakthrough to become a Peak Earth Saint Master from a Great Saint Master. This rate of progression was practically impossible, and the most important fact was Ming Dong's age. From his appearance, Ming Dong wasn't much different from Qin Xiao in age. Ming Dong was thirty years old at the very most, for a youth like him to be a mere step away from the Heaven Saint Master realm, this couldn't be called talented anymore; this was the signs of a genius seen once every millenia. A genius that would make anyone else frightened.

“How is this possible? A year ago you were only a Great Saint Master. Just how were you able to become a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master in less than a year? Did you....did you hide your strength before?” The Grand Elder found it hard to keep his emotions in check as even his voice began to quaver in shock.

Seeing the look of shock on the Grand Elder’s face, Ming Dong was delighted. In the past he had been a mercenary of the lowest rung on the ladder, a nobody. He had once looked at the Heaven Saint Masters as a high and mighty position that would never be attained by him. What he didn’t know was that he would somehow have a major life change after following Jian Chen to Mercenary City. In such a short amount of time, he had already made major strides in power and became an entity that even a Heaven Saint Master would be surprised at.

“Haha, Grand Elder, don’t be so surprised. This year I came across a fortunate encounter and was able to make a major improvement in my strength.” Ming Dong laughed.

The Grand Elder quickly regained his calm but the tiniest of shock could still be seen in his eyes as he looked at Ming Dong. This was still something he found hard to believe.

For someone who wasn’t even thirty years old yet to reach the Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master realm, if this were to be leaked out, the entire Tian Yuan Continent would be shocked.

This was truly too unimaginable. For one to have a gift like this,

if it took them ten if not five years to make the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master, they would still be one of the strongest in the continent since Saint Rulers were almost all hermits.

“Ai, I’ve grown old. To think that it was when I was seventy years old when I made the breakthrough to become a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. I didn’t think that a thirty year old would attain such a mastery already. If you continue on like this, then there’ll be a day that you will become a supreme Saint Ruler.” The elder spoke.

Hearing this compliment coming from a Heaven Saint Master, Ming Dong had a pleased look on his face as if he was the carp that had successfully made it past the dragon’s gate.

The Grand Elder looked at Qin Xiao, “Xiao Er, you are Tianqin clan’s shining star of the century. The mission you’ve accomplished for your father, even I feel gratified by it.”

Unlike Ming Dong, Qin Xiao didn’t have his natural attitude toward the Grand Elder and could only speak out, “Grand Elder, when I return home, I shall prepare to make the breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master, I am certain I will succeed.”

The Grand Elder laughed, “Let us take this matter slowly. You are still quite young, first prepare yourself and wait until you are completely sure that you will be able to become an Earth Saint Master. After all, becoming an Earth Saint Master holds the very first threshold of death. There cannot be a margin of mistake, or else your life is forfeit.”

“Ah, why haven’t I seen Tian Zhou, where is he?” The Grand Elder asked suddenly.

Jian Chen and Qin Xiao both looked dazed for a moment before going silent. Although Jian Chen and Tian Zhou had some disagreements, he didn’t kill Tian Zhou. That didn’t mean someone else might have.

Even Qin Jue began to stuff his mouth with food as if he hadn’t heard the Grand Elder’s words.

“Ai, Tian Zhou had quite the talent, I hope he is still alive.” The Grand Elder spoke as if he knew something and said no more about it to the group.

After the meal, Jian Chen returned to his room. Since Tian Zhou and his three men had not yet returned, the remaining few rooms were given to Yun Zheng and Senior An.

In his own room, Jian Chen called Ming Dong over and the two began to pour over the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune. Although this competition had finished, there was still the individual matches. After Jian Chen had killed both Jiede Wukang and Shi Xiangran, the two groups behind them would surely not let him go. Thus, Jian Chen would need to try and increase his own power which meant learning this Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

Within the “Heaven” set of rooms of an inn in Mercenary City, Jiede Wukang’s body could be seen lying on the floor. Two white



haired elders stood next to it with furious faces.

On one side were the two middle aged men that stood trembling by the side after carrying Jiede Wukang.

“Who killed Jiede Wukang,” One of the elders spoke with a dangerous look.

“El...Elder, lord Wu...Wukang was killed by a youth named Ji-Jian Chen.” One of the men quavered.

“Then what of the Duanyun Sword?” The other elder asked with a dreadful look.

The two men both went pale in the face as they spoke no more.

“Speak!” The elder who had asked about the sword commanded with a furious glare.

“It...it must have been taken by Jian Chen.” One man stuttered out.

Slamming his fist onto the table, the elder broke the table into pieces before yelling, “Worthless! Absolutely worthless! What use are you two?!” His fists came up in an attempt to strike at them.

Immediately the other elder’s face twitched before blocking him, “Third elder, calm yourself. Don’t forget where you are, we cannot

make a move here.”

The third elder slowly lowered his hands with some reluctance before growling, “You two. Go and find the whereabouts of Jian Chen immediately. We must find him and take back our Ruler Armament.”

“Yes, yes! Third elder, we will go right away!” The two men bowed before running out the door.

At the same time another inn, three elders and a middle aged man were waiting impatiently.

“The time has long since passed, why hasn’t the young lord returned yet, did something happen to him?” The middle aged man said as he paced around the room impatiently.

The three other gray robed elders didn’t say a word, but worried looks adorned their faces. One of them finally spoke up, “Let’s wait a little longer, the fourth elder went to find the young lord, I am sure he’ll return soon.”

“Elder Cai, do you think Lord Shi Xiangran has come across some trouble? Otherwise, why is it taking so long?” The man blurted out.

Even the three elders grew apprehensive at his words, but one managed to say, “Don’t be nervous, just wait and see.”

.....

Time quickly passed by as three days and three nights flew by before a letter simultaneously made its way into Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Senior An's hands. The three had made it to the next round, and the notice had already been posted in the city itself. The names of 500 people were written down with the number of tokens they collected.

The very first thing that Senior An and Yun Zheng did that day was to buy a copy of the rankings for Jian Chen.

When Jian Chen looked at the rankings, he couldn't help but narrow his eyes. Even with 1873 tokens, he was only in fourteenth place. The first place person was someone named Kara Ga. The amount of tokens he had collected had been 3712 tokens, which was nearly 2000 tokens more than Jian Chen.

The second place person was a person Zaar Ere who had collected 2700 tokens, another unfamiliar name.

The third place winner was Kazda Fei with 2500 tokens.

The fourth place person had a strange name. He had only had the name "Jue" and had 2300 tokens.

Fifth place was a familiar name. It was Qin Ji who had amassed 2100 tokens.

Sixth place was Dugu Feng with 2030 tokens.

Seventh Place was Tianmu Ling with 1965 tokens.

Eighth place was Huang Luan with 1964 tokens.

Ninth place was an unfamiliar person named Bali Tong with 1952 tokens.

The tenth place person was a person named Zhuge Xiao Xuan with 1931 tokens.

The next three names were also unfamiliar. It was only until fourteenth place that Jian Chen had seen his name. Under him were Ming Dong and Senior An with 1500 tokens each.

The following men after them all had a small amount of tokens. The very last place person had around 300 tokens.

This ranking list caused Jian Chen to be silent for a long while. While he knew that this survival competition would have more than just the Five Experts, he didn't think that so many hidden experts would exist. For him to suddenly see an expert like the one who collected almost 3000 tokens in this competition, it had truly shocked him.

"I wonder how strong they are." Jian Chen muttered. Although he was fourteenth place on the rankings, it was not an accurate testament of his strength.

“Jian Chen, who is this Kara Ga? I’ve never heard of his name, but he was able to collect so many tokens, he must be extremely strong then.” Senior An spoke with narrowed eyes.

Jian Chen shook his head, “I don’t know either. It seems that we were too narrow minded. With the continent so large and filled with so many experts, the amount of experts in the Gathering of the Mercenaries should be large as well.”

“En, yes, that’s right. In three days the finals will start. By then, we’ll be able to see just how strong they are. This one is sure that the three men with Radiant Saint Force are among the top ten.” Senior An spoke cautiously.

After talking for some time, Senior An left the area which allowed Jian Chen to continue to research the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune. The Heaven Tier Battle Skill was unmistakably deep, and even with Jian Chen’s strength, he had barely got past the introduction. He had only a small grasp of the fundamentals, but he was still able to manage to barely increase his strength by three times. Though, it was still extremely hard to control he absolutely needed to master this battle skill as quick as possible so he could use it.

The Heaven Stolen Fortune had a total of eight layers. The first layer was nothing more than an introduction, and after the first layer, the person would be able to multiply their strength by three times. The second layer would allow them to multiply it by four, and the third layer would allow them to multiply it by five. By the eighth layer, it would be possible to increase one’s strength ten

times.

While the Heaven Stolen Fortune was quite terrifying, the amount of energy used was immense. Increasing one's strength would use an equivalent amount of energy. While a person's strength could suddenly skyrocket, the amount of energy lost would skyrocket as well.

Jian Chen meticulously studied the Heaven Tier Battle Skill along with Ming Dong. Only Qin Xiao would occasionally play around with them, but not once had they seen the Grand Elder afterward.

Today, two white robed elders along with two middle aged men with dark expression walked into the inn where Jian Chen was. Arriving at the third floor where Jian Chen's room was, one of them placed his leg on the door before ruthlessly kicking it open.

Sitting on his bed with the Heaven Tier Battle Skill out, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes before staring at the dangerous looks on the two elder's faces. He had long since felt them come in.

The two elders looked at Jian Chen dangerously as one person asked, "Are you Jian Chen?"

Jian Chen didn't have any fear as he responded, "Correct, I am Jian Chen, what may I call the two elders?"

"We are from the Jiede clan. You may call us the third and fourth

Elders!” One of the elders spoke.

## Chapter 330: Threat (Three)

---

“We are from the Jiede clan. You may call us the third and fourth Elders!” One of the elders spoke.

Still sitting on his bed, Jian Chen cupped his hands in greeting, “Fellow elders, what business might you have with me?”

The third elder glared at Jian Chen dangerously, “Jian Chen, let me ask you. Did you kill the young lord Jiede Wukang?”

“And so what if I did?” Jian Chen spoke. He didn’t bother to deny it since many men had seen him kill Jiede Wukang. Even if he denied it, then the Jiede clan would be able to find out the truth from Qin Ji or Tianmu Ling.

Straight away, the two elders exploded with killing intent as they listened to Jian Chen’s words. “How arrogant, to kill the young lord Wukang. Jian Chen, just which clan are you from?”

Jian Chen revealed a small smile, “I am by myself, is there a problem?”

The third and fourth elders both looked at each other for a moment before breathing a sigh of relief. Previously, they had been worried that Jian Chen would have an incredibly strong power supporting him, but now all of their fears had been cleared away. Although the two of them clearly knew that there was the risk that Jian Chen was deceiving them, his answer was what the two elders were hoping for.



“Jian Chen, is the Duanyun Sword in your hands or not.” The fourth elder gave a heavy stare toward Jian Chen.

“Duanyun Sword? Could that be the Ruler Armament in Jiede Wukang’s hands? I didn’t think that such a small sword would be given such a name, not bad.” Jian Chen laughed. Although the two men in front of him were Heaven Saint Masters, Jian Chen was not afraid.

“So the Duanyun Sword is still in your hands. If you hand over the Duanyun Sword, then I’ll make sure to leave your body in one piece.” The third elder released a strong amount of killing intent.

Jian Chen touched the Space Ring on his hand with a smile, “Either way I will be dead. You might as well first kill me and take my Space Ring. This Space Ring has what you want, try to do as you please.”

“You arrogant child, do you really think I dare not kill you?” The third elder’s face grew fierce as the entire room filled with a murderous aura.

“If you dare then come and kill me.” Jian Chen laughed coldly. He was gambling on the fact that the two elders wouldn’t dare make a scene in Mercenary City. He had remembered the words from the Grand Elder: No matter what happens, do not try to fight in Mercenary City or risk having no help at all.

“You...!” The third elder bellowed in anger, he was on the verge

of lashing out, but in the end he finally restrained himself.

At this sight, Jian Chen had a small smile on his face. His guess was correct, even the Jiede clan wouldn't dare to strike in Mercenary City.

“It seems that this Mercenary City has people even Heaven Saint Masters are afraid of.” Jian Chen thought.

Hearing the commotion within Jian Chen's room, Ming Dong walked into the room and looked at Jian Chen, “I heard some loud bangs in here, who are they?”

“They're from the Jiede clan.” Jian Chen calmly replied.

Ming Dong instantly realized what was happening. He knew that Jian Chen had killed Jiede Wukang and had taken his Ruler Armament. The moment he heard that they were from the Jiede clan, no other explanation was needed.

“Jian Chen, do you require help? I can call uncle Tian out to help.” Ming Dong spoke under his breath to him.

Shaking his head, Jian Chen said, “No need, this is Mercenary City. They wouldn't dare attack me here, otherwise, they would have tried earlier without trying to intimidate me,”

Ming Dong had a blank look on his face at that, “I had almost forgot that violence is forbidden here.” Turning to look at the two

Jiede clan elders, he spoke with honesty, “Fellow seniors, you should go. Staying here would do nothing more but waste your time.”

The two elders had nearly died from anger from his response as their eyes burned furiously. They had no way to vent their anger since they didn’t dare do anything in the city.

“You two, I killed Jiede Wukang and have his Ruler Armament. What you wished to know you now know, you may leave.” Jian Chen spoke as if he was the emperor giving an order. This grievance the Jiede clan had with him would not be resolved easily.

To disregard the two like this, the two elders from the Jiede clan grew ashen in the face. If they were not in Mercenary City, then they would have long since struck out at Jian Chen; there was no need for them to have such anger.

“Jian Chen, you’ll regret this.” The fourth elder gnashed his teeth together.

“Jian Chen, return the Duanyun Sword or else the Jiede clan will hunt you down no matter where you go.” The third elder promised darkly.

With a sneer, he pointed to the exit, “You two, you may go.” Right now, Jian Chen didn’t bother with any other words.

The faces on the two elder's grew terrifying as the third elder opened his mouth once more, "Jian Chen, do you truly wish to offend our Jiede clan?"

Jian Chen said nothing.

The fourth elder spoke, "Jian Chen, I will give you one last chance. Return the Duanyun Sword and we will no longer bother you. Even if you leave Mercenary City, we will not chase you." The fourth elder figured out that force would not get the right answer from him; so if a tough approach did not work, a softer approach would be needed.

"You two may leave." Jian Chen was growing impatient by now. Jiede Wukang's clan was not a low one, and with him killing Jiede Wukang, the bridge had been burned. Only an idiot would relinquish the Ruler Armament and give more power to his enemy.

"You are certain that you will not return the Duanyun Sword?" The third elder clenched his fists tightly as an unbearable anger began to course through his heart.

By this point, Jian Chen had simply closed his eyes and no longer looked at the two elders. The manners of the elders were quite lacking. The master of the house had already told them to leave, yet they still remained.

Seeing that Jian Chen was being obstinate, the fourth elder let out a breath of air before trying to calm himself down. Right now, he knew that trying to get the Ruler Armament from Jian Chen

was impossible.

“We’ll be leaving then!” The fourth elder growled before stomping out of the room.

The third elder glared poisonously before sneering once as he left the room as well.

With a wave of his hands, he blew a gust of wind and closed the door. Sitting right beside Jian Chen, he spoke out seriously, “Jian Chen, what are you planning now? Those two elders are Heaven Saint Masters, not easy opponents to deal with by any means.”

As if he had no care in the world, Jian Chen laughed, “No worries, while in Mercenary City they wouldn’t dare make a move. Next up is the finals to the competition, so we’ll be in the city for quite some time. Even when we leave, I have a way to evade their eyes and ears.”

Ming Dong took out a book from his Space Ring and handed it to Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, this is a specialized Heaven Tier Battle Skill that was entrusted to me from uncle Tian to give to you. I was originally planning on giving it to you earlier, but seeing how painstakingly hard you were researching the Heaven Stolen Fortune, I was afraid it would impact your studies. However in this situation, it seems that I should give this to you so you can learn it as soon as possible. If you come across a Heaven Saint Master who is after your life, this will help you immensely.”

Hearing the words ‘Heaven Tier Battle Skill’, Jian Chen’s heart

skipped a beat once more. A Heaven Tier Battle Skill was something that he absolutely wanted. He didn't think that he would come across 3 separate Heaven Tier Battle Skills so quickly.

Unable to contain his emotions, Jian Chen took the Heaven Tier Battle Skill. This book was called "Illusionary Flash". It was a battle skill specialized for movement and not attacks.

# Chapter 331: The Ten Great Practitioners (One)

---

Taking the Illusionary Flash book, Jian Chen's heart couldn't help but tremble with emotions. This battle skill was a speed based one. It was quite different from the Profound Steps written in the Azulet Sword Law. That one was focused more on walking and for use in combat, and while it was able to increase his speed, against a wind attributed expert: he would surely lose.

This Illusionary Flash increased the speed of a person's run in a linear direction. While it lacked the flexibility of the Profound Steps in the Azulet Sword Laws, it could beat a wind attributed cultivator in linear movement which was what Jian Chen wanted.

Furthermore, if the Illusionary Flash were to reach the pinnacle of mastery, then its speed would be unrivaled and he could travel up to 500 kilometers in an instant.

Although it sounded like an exaggeration, this was an aspect of the Illusionary Flash that could only be described as terrifying.

"Jian Chen, you shouldn't underestimate the Illusionary Flash battle skill. My uncle Tian said that although it may be an assisting Heaven Tier Battle Skill, its effects could be used against even a Saint Ruler. It was also one of the things he and my ancestor had found in the Death Nest a long time ago. This Illusionary Flash was an especially rare ancient record that belonged to an ancient clan. Its only weak point is that it is extremely hard to learn. Even I am stuck at a rough spot, but my speed has already increased two to three times over." Ming Dong explained to him.

Upon his explanation, Jian Chen immediately thought back to when he had come across Ming Dong. At that time, Ming Dong's speed was inconceivable and he flew across several kilometers at a terrifying speed.

“Jian Chen, this Illusionary Flash book is only just a copy. Once you memorize it, make sure you burn it so that it doesn't fall into anyone else's hands.” Ming Dong.

Jian Chen clutched the Heaven Tier Battle Skill and nodded his head seriously, “I understand.”

“Jian Chen, continue to research, I won't bother you any more. However, I suggest that you learn the Illusionary Flash as soon as possible. Against a Heaven Saint Master, you'll gain the power to flee if need be.” With that, Ming Dong left the room.

Jian Chen immediately halted his research on the Heaven's Stolen Fortune battle skill and began to read the Illusionary Flash. Since it was only a supplementary battle skill, its contents weren't too descriptive and it only had thirteen pages. Jian Chen quickly memorized all thirteen pages with his cognitive memory skills, and after that he burned the pages so that not a single word remained.

Jian Chen continued to sit on his bed while deep in thought. Right now, he had come across the profound material that was the Illusionary Flash. It was extremely challenging to practice despite it being a supplementary battle skill and was harder than even the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. Its innermost contents were both



mysterious and profound; some of the contents even dabbled with matters regarding space itself, causing Jian Chen to be confused beyond belief.

For the next three days, Jian Chen remained in his room as he tried to comprehend the Illusionary Flash. Sometimes he would be sitting on his bed, other times he would be pacing in his room in an effort to understand it.

Quickly, the finals to the Gathering of the Mercenaries approached. After three straight days of trying to reach an enlightenment, Jian Chen finally had a small grasp of the skill. This didn't mean to say that he had reached a mastery of the very basics, but it was still a minor achievement for Jian Chen. At the very least, he had a small unripened version of the Illusionary Flash which allowed him to move at a faster speed at the cost of a small amount of Saint Force.

By the following morning, Jian Chen finally paused his efforts to understand the Illusionary Flash and left his room. Soon after, he, Qin Xiao, and several others left the inn together. In the next few days, the finals would be taking place. 500 mercenaries would be fighting one on one until a King of Mercenaries is announced.

The fighting grounds for the finals would take place on a giant plaza in the middle of Mercenary City. The arena was already set up as several highly raised platforms with a transparent barrier covering each arena. In every direction a multitude of people had already gathered to spectate today's events.

Qin Xiao slapped Jian Chen and Ming Dong's shoulders with a

firm hand as he encouraged them, “Jian Chen, Ming Dong, fight on!” Although he only spoke these six words, they were all that the two others needed to hear.

With a smile, Jian Chen replied, “Don’t worry, I will fight to my final breath. While I can’t guarantee being number one, I am sure I can reach into the top ten without a problem.”

Afterward, Jian Chen, Ming Dong and Senior An split up from Qin Xiao and the rest of the group before identifying themselves as competitors. They crossed a Space Gate into a barrier protected region which was an isolated area that protected the competitors from the spectators while still allowing them to see the outside world.

Even the arenas themselves were protected with a frail looking but incredibly strong barrier that sealed up the insides completely. Only a person that had entered through a Space Gate would be able to gain access. That way, no one from the audience would be able to interfere, and the fights on the inside would not be able to affect the outside world.

The matches in the finals would be settled by ballot. The first ticket holder would fight against the 499th ticket holder, while the second ticket holder would fight against the 498th ticket holder, so on and so forth with the tenth ticket holder fighting against the 490th ticket holder. With such a method in place, if there was someone without a match they would wait until the current round was over before participating in the ballot again for the next round.

Jian Chen picked the 88th number, meaning he would fight against number 412 and would be the 88th match.

With ten arenas conducting the matches simultaneously, the pace went by quickly. In no time at all, it was Jian Chen's turn to walk to the eighth arena.

Walking through the Space Gate to cross into the eighth arena, Jian Chen arrived within the arena encased by the barrier. This barrier was not only incredibly durable, but it had another unique characteristic which was the inhabitants inside would not be able to hear the outside world. At the very most, they would be able to see the open mouths of the audience as they screamed, but no sound could be heard. Even the materials made to build the arena were unknown, as each step felt as if it was made from an incredibly strong iron.

Just as Jian Chen entered the arena, his opponent crossed into it as well through the other side. A burly looking man with the waist of a bear and the back of a tiger appeared. Compared to Jian Chen's slim build, the two were completely different. The man had a short inch of hair with fierce looking eyes that made his expression seem intrepid. He had a two-handed sword that glowed red, signifying that he was a fire attribute Earth Saint Master.

The two said no words and silently prepared to fight.

"Begin!" An elderly voice penetrated the barrier and resounded in the eardrums of both fighters. The middle aged man immediately sprung into action and flew toward Jian Chen. The two-handed sword in his hand blazed forward as it tried to stab

Jian Chen's heart.

Jian Chen stared calmly at the approaching man as his mind couldn't help but plot a course for the Illusionary Flash.

In that moment, the sword was already less than a meter away from Jian Chen's heart, but Jian Chen had not made a single movement yet. The middle aged man saw that Jian Chen hadn't made an effort to dodge and couldn't help but feel astonished. In a split second, the tip of the sword aimed at Jian Chen's heart immediately tilted to stab into his chest.

Suddenly, right as the sword was about to pierce into Jian Chen's chest, Jian Chen's eyes flashed once as his sword appeared in his right hand and stabbed outward in an instant. At the same time as his strike, Jian Chen's figure disappeared as a dissipating mirror image could be seen in his place. By the time he had reappeared, he was standing behind the man with his sword on his shoulder.

"You've lost!" Jian Chen didn't look back as he spoke those words.

The man looked a little dazed for a moment before quickly recovering himself. He immediately brought a finger up to where his throat was only to find a small amount of blood on it.

When he saw the blood on his finger, his face instantly grew shocked before sucking in a deep breath, "What a fast sword, and what a fast speed!"

In that split second, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword had already stabbed past the first few layers of skin on the man's throat without injuring him. The amount of strength he had put behind the blow was just perfect; if Jian Chen had been a little deeper with his strike, then the man would have been dead on the ground.

"Jian Chen is the winner of Arena Eight!" Came the judgement a second later as the two Space Gates opened up on either sides,

"Younger brother, thank you for your leniency." After a few words of thanks, the middle aged man walked off of the the eighth arena with a look of dejection.

Afterward, Ming Dong and Senior An had advanced. With Minh Dong's Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master strength, he had easily defeated his opponent in an unsurprising way. Senior An's battle had been more intense, but in the end, he had achieved victory with some injuries.

Many Radiant Saint Masters could be seen in Mercenary City treating the various injuries of men for free and in no time at all.

After half the day had gone by, the first round had finally been over. In the end, 249 people had moved on, meaning a single person had to fight a randomly selected member from the other 249 men.

By the second day, 124 people had passed with yet another single person left out, leaving him to fight it out for a spot with another one of the 124 men.

# Chapter 332: The Ten Great Practitioners (Two)

---

By the fourth day of the competition, most of the 500 men had been quickly eliminated so that only 31 men remained. Senior An had been eliminated in the earlier round, leaving Jian Chen and Ming Dong. At the same time, Dugu Feng, Tianmu Ling, and Huang Luan were all still in it.

By this point, everyone within the top 31 were not weak at all. Their strength was plenty, their experiences ample, and each had a battle skill to compliment them.

The identities of the three Radiant Saint Force cultivators had long since been revealed and they had been put on close watch by Jian Chen. Unfortunately, the opponents all three men fought weren't very strong, so the amount of strength they displayed had only been the tip of the iceberg.

Aside from them, there was only one other competitor that had caught Jian Chen's eye: the one named "Jue". Reaching the fourth ranked spot, she was a high ranking woman with a black robe and a dagger like weapon. Not only that, but she was a wind attribute cultivator, meaning her speed was incredibly fast.

From her appearance, she looked to be around twenty five or twenty six years old, but there was no definite proof of her age. Although her appearance was not yet beautiful enough to cause nations to fight over her, she could not be said to be ugly either. She was pretty in appearance, and her natural disposition was far beyond what Tianmu Ling could boast of, meaning not a single

man could dare ignore it. Her eyes however had a bone chilling stare that could freeze the spirits themselves as a terrifying expression adorned her face constantly as if to hide the killing aura emanating from her. Every single one of her opponents had not been able to survive and died by getting struck through the heart each time. Her speed with the dagger was comparable to only Jian Chen's sword speed.

That night, Jian Chen spent time by himself in his room to study the Illusionary Flash. Tomorrow morning would establish the top sixteen, and by then, the top ten would be established.

Experts within the Tian Yuan Continent were like clouds, there was simply no shortage of outstanding civilians. Although Jian Chen had only heard of the five experts during his time collecting the tokens, they were not the only experts in the competition. In their midst were people who were excellent at keeping a low profile, and it was only when the final started that their identities were revealed. Otherwise, all of the men that had come across them were killed off so that their strength would not be revealed.

Right now, Jian Chen felt that he was quite narrow-minded. Starting tomorrow, each and every match would have an unknown variable to it since by this point in the Gathering of the Mercenaries, all of the weaker mercenaries had been weeded out. The remaining 31 people were the elite among the elite and would be stronger than Dugu Feng at the very least.

At that moment, a knock on the door could be heard.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes from his contemplative

meditation. With a wave of his hand, a gust of wind unlatched the metal bolt on the door, “Come in!”

As the door opened, four expensively dressed elders walked in. Among them were two white robed men with black hair and kindly expressions. The third man wore a black robe and had hair that traveled down to his shoulders and a scarred left eye. Only his right eye remained open, giving him a rather fierce looking expression, evidently he had been injured a long time ago. The last elder wore a simple red garb that covered his small build, but his skin was rather dark.

Jian Chen measured up the four elders with a rather serious expression. None of the four men had bothered to hide their presence, and judging from that, Jian Chen was astonished to discover that all four of them were Heaven Saint Masters.

As Jian Chen was measuring them up, the four of them were also sizing him up. Since the patriarch of the Tianqin clan had given him a way for him to hide his own strength, despite the four men being Heaven Saint Masters, they were unable to discern Jian Chen’s strength.

“Four elders, what business might you have?” Jian Chen asked as he spoke to the four in a normal tone of voice.

“Young brother, you are Jian Chen?” One of the elders spoke with a kindly voice.

“This one is.” Jian Chen replied.



“Brother Jian Chen, we have heard that the third lord of the Shi family, Shi Xiangran was killed by you. Is that matter true?” The same elder spoke with a calm tone.

Without a twitch in his face, Jian Chen spoke, “Who might these elders be?”

With a laugh, the elder began to stroke at his long beard, “Others have called us four as the four brothers of the Cai family. Presently, we serve as the Shi family’s handlers of the law.” Then, the elder briefly stopped talking for a moment before saying once again, “Brother Jian Chen, we have already investigated the matter, but we bear no malice toward you. We merely hope that brother Jian Chen will return the Seal of Treasure Mountain. That cannot be permitted to fall into an outsider’s hand; if it remains with you, it will only bring you trouble.”

“Elder brother speaks correct.” The one eyed person spoke without a single hint of emotion, “The Seal of Treasure Mountain is an heirloom of the Shi family that came to be after a special refinement method. Only those of the Shi family will be able to wield its power. To you, the Seal of Treasure Mountain will be an useless piece of iron that you cannot use.”

None of elders had tried to threaten Jian Chen and instead tried a simpler approach in hopes that Jian Chen would hand the Seal of Treasure Mountain over.

Jian Chen cupped his hands together in an apologetic manner, “I

give my apologies, but the Seal of Treasure Mountain will not be given back.”

“Young brother, you must understand, if you do not return the Seal of Treasure Mountain, then the Shi family will not let you go. This item will only serve to destroy you.” The elder spoke honestly and kindly.

Shaking his head, Jian Chen didn't give a second thought, “This shouldn't be something that elders should worry themselves with.” Jian Chen knew that even if he were to hand it over, the Shi family would not let him be.

“If young brother is determined on this path, then we have no choice, we shall leave.” The elders spoke no more words and left the room quickly.

After exiting the inn, the single eyed man sighed, “Big brother, what shall we do now, the one called Jian Chen refuses to hand over the Seal of Treasure Mountain.”

“Our responsibility lies only with protecting the young lord, not the retrieval of the Seal of Treasure Mountain. For now, let us report this to the Shi family and let the leader deal with it.” The leader spoke in a neutral voice.

“This time not only did the Shi family's plan fail, but the third lord has died as well while also having the Ruler Armament snatched away. This is truly an example of giving away the bride and then losing the army. The Shi family will definitely be shaken

down to its core.” The red robed elder laugh, they were not truly affiliated with the Shi family.

“Forget it, we have no business with this matter. Let the Shi family deal with its headaches. We are nothing more than the business dealers for the Shi family, not a scapegoat for their troubles. Let us all remember, do not think that the person the Shi family has offended is someone that we have offended. This time, the Gathering of the Mercenaries has amassed a large amount of strong combatants. While they themselves are strong, the powers supporting them are not. Furthermore, some of these powers are people even the Shi family cannot afford to offend. Especially the one called Qin Ji. I have heard that he is the sole prince of the Qinhuang Kingdom. It is possible that he is the next emperor to be of the kingdom; this type of person is someone we definitely should not offend.”

.....

By the second day, Jian Chen had entered the competition area earlier to draw his lot before entering the Space Gate to start the match.

Not too long after he had entered, his opponent entered the arena as well. But the moment Jian Chen saw his opponent, his eyes widened in shock; it was Dugu Feng.

Dugu Feng returned the stare with a bitter laugh, “I didn’t think that I would be fighting against you.”

Even Jian Chen felt helpless as he shrugged his shoulders, “This is nothing more than a coincidence.”

Quickly, the announcement to start the fight could be heard, but neither Jian Chen or Dugu Feng made a move.

“Jian Chen, I hope that you will achieve the number one spot.” With that, Dugu Feng admitted defeat.

In this match, Jian Chen had won without fighting.

Exiting the arena, Jian Chen stuck around in order to observe the other matches. After this round, only sixteen would move on. In the end, three men were killed and two heavily injured. One of the casualties had been from Jue’s dagger stabbing into a man’s heart, drawing his final breath. This was something even the strong Radiant Saint Masters had found impossible to reverse.

Both Jian Chen and Ming Dong had managed to advance into the top sixteen. Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling had advanced as well with their Ruler Armament causing major injuries to their opponents. Although Huang Luan had her Solunar Bow, within the constrained arena, her Solunar Bow was heavily handicapped. She herself only had the strength of a First Cycle Earth Saint Master, so she lost since her opponent had been one of the Radiant Saint Force attributed men with impeccable strength.

Because of an untimely match with fate, Dugu Feng had been eliminated from the tournament while the other two Radiant Saint Force attributed men advanced on. The three of them were true to

their rumors and were extremely strong. One of them in particular was a Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master with a strong repertoire of battle skills.

The following ten combatants would be decided from the top eight of the sixteen combatants. From the losers bracket, the top two would be given another chance.

Because it was still daytime, the competition resumed. After choosing his lot, Jian Chen stood on a stool and waited for the next round. The other fifteen fighters stood by Jian Chen in the isolated area away from the crowd.

“Hey, Jian Chen, you have to get number one okay? Don’t let us all down, we all have high expectations for you.” Ming Dong slapped Jian Chen on the shoulder and laughed.

“Hehehe, little brother, the experts here are as numerous as the clouds. Although you were able to win over me, the others will not be as weak. Do you think you will be able to claim number one among them all?” Tianmu Ling spoke from in front of Jian Chen. Both of her eyes stared at him with her words sounding like an enchanting spell that could entice any man.

Jian Chen stared back and then moved his eyes to the outside of the arena, “I can only say that I will try my best and try when the time comes.”

As soon as Jian Chen finished talking, a peculiar voice could be heard from behind, “Hmph, to try your best? Kid, you’re only so

old, do you not know how vastly far you are from the number one spot? Do you take the rest of us as trash?”

Turning his head, Jian Chen could see a middle aged man around the age of 45 or 46. He wore a white robe and his appearance was quite familiar to Jian Chen, since he was one of the three Radiant Saint Force attributed cultivators.

By the middle aged man's side, another man not too far away in age stared at Jian Chen with contempt before speaking absent mindedly, “Forget it, Kara Ga. Don't bother with the words of a brat, he is nothing more than a braggart.”

At the words of these two, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed before his stare turned cold in temperature. Even Ming Dong grew angry as he spoke with a warning, “You two should best hope that I don't come across you in the arena.”

The two men instantly grew furious as Kara Ga exploded, “Such an ignorant brat, if this place were not Mercenary City, this one would have cut you into multiple pieces!”

“Kid, you must be Ming Dong. Allow me to offer you a word of advice, if you ever come across me in the arena, surrender at once. Otherwise, I swear that you will not leave the arena alive.” The middle aged man right next to Kara Ga spoke with killing intent leaking from him. If it were not for the place they were in, then the two would have struck out earlier.

Ming Dong sneered before leaking out his own killing intent,

“Then we’ll see if you can stay true to your words.”

Jian Chen’s face grew dark as he stared at the two men before speaking, “Kara Ga, Kazda Fei, I will remember your words. We will see who lives and who dies in the end.” These two were the first and third ranked men so their names had long since been memorized by Jian Chen.

“Hmph, two kids who don’t know the immensity of the heavens.” Kazda Fei laughed as he mocked both Jian Chen and Ming Dong.

“That’s enough, you two truly don’t know shame. You’ve grown this old yet you are bullying the younger generation? I feel as if I must feel shame in your place.” The remaining man in the middle finally spoke.

Hearing that, the two men’s stares were redirected toward the third person, “Zaar Ere, this is something between the two of us, there is no need for you to butt in.” Kazda Fei replied to him.

“Could it be that you two think that bullying the juniors is a glorious task? How silly, if word of this were to be announced, then disgrace would fall upon us Radiant Warriors.” Zaar Ere’s words were like ice.

“Enough!” Kara Ga stared at Zaar Ere with a look of embarrassment, “Zaar Ere, don’t forget your place. Just what side do you belong to if you side with an outsider?”

Zaar Ere sneered, “Don’t give such a preposterous argument, I am helping no outsider. I only cannot approve of you two. You two bring shame to us Radiant Warriors.”

“You...” Kara Ga and Kazda Fei both growled as they trembled in anger, but no words escaped from their mouths.

At that moment, the barrier suddenly changed color before disappearing rapidly. In the next second, all of the arenas in front of them suddenly began to descend before disappearing without a trace into the ground, forming a single flat clearing without any dents or bumps.

Jian Chen was shocked by this sudden development. He hadn’t thought that the Mercenary City would be capable of such a mysterious event. Jian Chen had no idea how the arenas descended into the ground and then suddenly rise up again as a single giant piece of land. This single piece of land was far bigger than the arenas and was about five hundred meters in width.

As the single arena ascended up, another transparent barrier completely encompassed it before two Space Gates opened up on opposite sides of each other.



# Chapter 333: The Ten Great Practitioners (Three)

---

“Will the competitors step inside the arena!” An elderly voice called out from a mysterious location.

Jian Chen looked at the number three in his hand, he was to be the third match.”

Today was the day the top ten people would be decided, thus, the way the competition would continue would be different. Ten matches would not happen at the same time, instead, it would be one match at a time. After all, the people gathered here now were the geniuses of the continent. Not a single one of them was weak, and each one of them were spectacular in the ways of battle.

“Little brother, could you cheer me on?” Tianmu Ling laughed into Jian Chen’s ears before walking into the Space Gate. Afterward, another middle aged man walked into the other Space Gate.

The match continued straight away as Tianmu Ling took out her longsword which was blue in nature, meaning she was a water attributed cultivator. She first fought against the man with her own strength, but several exchanges later she decided to bring out her Ruler Armament. The strength of this middle aged man was stronger than her own.

Tianmu Ling’s Ruler Armament held an advantage in speed as the whip could extend and contract with ease. The whip’s mirror

image could be seen almost everywhere in the ring as it drew closer to her opponent and suppressed him inside. The power of a Ruler Armament was something that scared the man, as he wasn't strong enough to take on a blow and could only dodge it.

Mercenary City had not forbade the use of Ruler Armaments. Although its use was equivalent to using outside help, the Tian Yuan Continent was not known for being fair. No matter what was used, as long as one won, then that was the way of the king. Thus, it could be said that using outside help was still a form of strength.

The middle aged man could only dodge miserably since Tianmu Ling's whip could cover a large area. With an explosive shout, a large amount of energy rippled out before giving him protection. Straight away, a giant sword ten meters long appeared in his hand before stabbing through the void in the whip's path with a loud clap of thunder.

"This must be an Advanced Earth Tier Battle Skill. Judging from this, it must take a large amount of Saint Force to use." A few men muttered beside Jian Chen.

In the arena, Tianmu Ling's face grew serious as her whip moved in reaction. Striking at the ten meter long sword, the sword managed to take several blows from the whip before finally shattering with a loud bang as a wave of violent energy burst outward.

A wave of water attributed Saint Force flew out from Tianmu Ling's body before enveloping her as a form of defense against the energy, but she was still forced back.

Just as Tianmu Ling moved back, her face suddenly grew pained as a large sword suddenly pierced through her chest from the back.

The middle aged man had somehow moved behind her during the explosion and used his Saint Weapon to tear through her chest.

“You’ve lost!” The man spoke as he held his sword through her chest. With his sword run through her body, if Tianmu Ling didn't admit defeat, then the energy within his Saint Weapon would explode outward in an instant which would cause an extreme amount of damage to her.

Tianmu Ling, unable to withstand the pain anymore, nodded her head slowly in realization that she had lost.

“Aridia is the winner!” The announcer boomed as the middle aged man slowly took out his sword before leaving the arena.

Just as Tianmu Ling left the arena, two Radiant Saint Masters immediately came to her side and began to treat her wounds with Radiant Saint Force. That was because even the eight losers would have to fight for a spot in the top ten.

Thus, even though Tianmu Ling was eliminated, she still had a chance of hope.

The second match was between Zaar Ere and Tian Qicheng. With his dominating strength, Zaar Ere easily defeated his opponent.

The third round was Jian Chen's match. As he entered the arena, a black robed girl entered it as well; Jian Chen's opponent was Jue.

Jue held her dagger in her right hand with eyes as cold as ice as she stared at Jian Chen. Her entire demeanor seemed as icy as her glare, and even though she was still standing still, she gave off the impression that she was an extremely cold statue instead.

Jian Chen looked quite calm, he had been observing her for some time now, so he knew that Jue was a merciless opponent. With her icy stare, she would never let her opponent leave alive, and Jian Chen would be no different to her.

"Begin!" The elderly voice cried out through the barrier. In an instant, Jue disappeared into a black streak of light as she shot toward Jian Chen with her dagger shining in the light as it stabbed at his heart. At the same time, a strange and chilly feeling could be felt from the dagger, causing Jian Chen to feel a cold shiver.

Jian Chen secretly felt some surprise in his heart, this would be the first blow of many, but he hadn't thought her Saint Weapon would be able to launch such a cold presence. Despite his shock however, Jian Chen's movements weren't lacking either as he brought out his Light Wind Sword in an instant to strike against the dagger.

"Ding!" A metallic clang could be heard as Jue's dagger was stopped by Jian Chen's sword. However, Jian Chen's sword began to gain a frosty coating while making Jian Chen feel as if he was

suddenly naked within a world of ice and snow.

With a look of shock, Jian Chen suddenly came to the realization that he had been underestimating Jue too much. The very moment their Saint Weapons had come in contact, his sword had been infected by ice crystals.

“Just what martial art method is this for it to have such an effect?” Jian Chen thought to himself.

But then, Jue struck out a second and third time as her dagger was poised to claim Jian Chen’s heart.

Jian Chen’s sword smashed against the dagger both times, but with each block, the Light Wind Sword grew thicker with frost. The icy chill made Jian Chen’s arm grow rigid as well almost as if it was freezing the bloodstreams within his arm.

“Her martial arts is quite strange, the longer we fight, the worse I grow. I have to end this fight straight away!” Jian Chen thought immediately. With a wave of his arm, the Light Wind Sword smashed against the ground, shattering the frost on it. Straight away, Jian Chen’s arm blurred as the entire area became shrouded with mirror images of his sword.

Jue’s eyes flashed dangerously as a cold white aura flowed out from her, making it seem as if the area around her was freezing into ice. The entire arena began to feel the effects as it instantly froze over. Even the barrier itself took on a layer of frost.

Jian Chen's stab was immediately blocked as several clangs could be heard. Almost like a fish in water, Jue was able to move forward and stab at Jian Chen's heart once more with her dagger.

Seeing the dagger fly at him, Jian Chen subconsciously thought of the Illusionary Flash. With a single movement, he flew forward, leaving behind a perfect mirror image in his place before he struck out with his Light Wind Sword.

Immediately turning around, Jue's dagger blocked Jian Chen's sword. Then, without retreating, she drew closer to Jian Chen's body and stabbed at his heart. At the same time, a sheet of frost climbed up Jian Chen's legs, making him immobile.

Realizing that his mobility had been cut off, Jian Chen's face grew startled. Without a single moment of hesitation, his Light Wind Sword flew into motion as it flew out three different times. One was to block the dagger, the second and third were aimed at Jue's heart and throat, to try and force her back.

With a grunt, Jian Chen stamped down on the ground with Saint Force aiding his feet, allowing him to shatter the ice that bound his legs to the ground. With his mobility back, he instantly used the Illusionary Flash to move like lightning toward Jue's side with his Light Wind Sword flying straight at her to suppress her.

While Jue's attack was by no means slow, Jian Chen was faster by a small margin. Just barely blocking Jian Chen's strikes with some pain, the Light Wind Sword took on a sheen of frost once more, slowing down his next stab.

Just at the most crucial point, a sharp amount of Sword Qi flew out from the sword, reducing the frost on the blade into powder before flying straight at Jue.

Quickly flying backward, frosty cold air flew out from Jue's body before surrounding the entire area around her.

With a small smirk, Jian Chen instantly activated the Heaven's Stolen Fortune so that his strength and speed was multiplied three times over. His Light Wind Sword exploded with Sword Qi so that it shattered through the ice that had formed in the area before resting against Jue's throat.

Seeing the strike at her throat, Jue stopped her attack and stared at Jian Chen with an expressionless face, but her eyes still reflected a frosty aura without any fluctuations of emotions.

"Jian Chen is the winner!" A loud voice called out as two Space Gates flew up on both sides of the arena.

As his Light Wind Sword disappeared, he began to walk out without speaking a single word. Jue turned to leave as well without another word.

"Jian Chen, good job!" Ming cried out in excitement as he walked over to greet him. As Ming Dong's hand landed upon Jian Chen's shoulder, he immediately retracted his hand and cried out in shock, "Good god, Jian Chen, did you just come out from an icy cavern? Why are you so cold?"

With a forced smile, Jian Chen replied, “Pretty much. That arena was essentially colder than an icy cavern. I almost found myself frozen to the ground. That Jue is not an ordinary person, her martial arts is quite magical and strange. To be able to control such a cold aura along with her fighting strength, even someone stronger than her would be easily caught in her trap.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s words, Ming Dong grew serious as he murmured, “It seems we have to be careful of her in the future.”



# Chapter 334: The Ten Great Practitioners

## (Four)

---

Ming Dong's match was right after Jian Chen, so after the announcement, he and his opponent entered the Space Gate.

Almost as if arranged by the heavens, Ming Dong's opponent had been one of the two people that had mocked them, Kazda Fei.

Before he had left, Ming Dong had a small grin on his face, "Jian Chen, I have to chop this guy in half."

Slapping Ming Dong on his shoulders, Jian Chen gave him an encouraging look without saying anything.

Kazda Fei had a dark smile on his face as he spoke, "How coincidental, my opponent is you? It seems that God no longer wishes for you to remain alive and allowed me to take control. Kid, aren't you supposed to be mad? You'll be mad soon enough."

Hearing those words, Ming Dong leaked some killing intent into his words as he spoke, "Spare me your big words, wait until we get into the arena. I'll make it so you can't even cry anymore." With those words, Ming Dong immediately walked through the Space Gate and into the arena.

"Hmph, even with death near at hand, you are so arrogant still." Kazda Fei spoke in disdain as he walked into the arena.

“Begin!” As soon as the two men entered, a loud voice called out to them again.

Instantly, a large amount of killing intent flowed from Kazda Fei as he stared at Ming Dong like a bloodthirsty magical beast. A Radiant Saint Force attributed sword appeared in his hand, forming a two meter long longsword. The longsword emitted a bright milky light that made it seem as if it were a divine sword.

“Go and die!” Kazda Fei roared as he flew toward Ming Dong with his sword swinging fiercely toward him.

With a small laugh, Ming Dong took out his cyan colored sword before disappearing from view. In a flash, he flew toward Kazda Fei and almost as if his sword had blended in with the wind, it streaked across Kazda Fei’s waist with a cyan glow, leaving behind a fierce looking wound.

Ming Dong’s speed was unbelievably fast to the point where even Kazda Fei wouldn’t be able to keep up. Feeling the wound on his waist, Kazda Fei could only see his hand drenched in his own blood.

With an ugly expression, Kazda Fei tried to figure out just when he had been injured. He had insulted and threatened that Ming Dong wouldn’t be leaving the arena alive, but he didn’t think that in the very first exchange, he would be the one damaged. This was a shame that could not stand.

“Brat, you’re dead!” Kazda Fei’s glare grew dark before a milky

white glow emerged from his wounds at the same time as he was talking, causing his wounds to heal quickly.

Ming Dong sneered in disdain, “I’ve heard that you cultivators with a Radiant Saint Force are not killable and are called the undying. Today we’ll see just how undying you actually are.” With that, Ming Dong flew toward Kazda Fei and disappeared within the next instance.

“What a fast speed!”

“Heavens, for his speed to be that fast, could he be a wind attributed Heaven Saint Master?”

Outside of the arena, many people cried out in amazement as they saw the speed that Ming Dong had just revealed.

Even Kazda Fei grew deathly serious as he watched Ming Dong flash away. As soon as he grew close, Kazda Fei immediately shouted out loud as he brought his Radiant Saint Weapon toward Ming Dong’s chest. However, he had managed to only cut into an empty space where Ming Dong’s mirror image had been.

“Crap!” Kazda Fei exclaimed at this bad development. Without a second’s worth of a reaction, a sudden stinging pain could be felt from behind as a cyan colored sword stabbed through his chest.

Kazda Fei shouted out in anger as he dashed forward so that the sword would be taken out of his body. In the next moment, a large

amount of Radiant Saint Force coursed through his body to treat the wound. While the wound on his chest wasn't fatal, it was still a heavy injury that would impact his fighting ability.

“Brat, you've truly angered me. I'll definitely smash your body into pieces!” Kazda Fei's eyes grew bloodshot as he glared at Ming Dong with a furious expression.

“You truly do think yourself as invincible. If I wanted to kill you, then I would have stabbed your heart earlier and killed you.” Ming Dong laughed as if he was playing around with him.

With a furious snarl, Kazda Fei immediately burst with Radiant Saint Force before forming a silver white armor that covered his entire body sans his eyes.

Kara Ga and Zaar Ere looked at the armored Kazda Fei with a look of surprise before Zaar Ere mocked him, “What a nuisance, he reaps what he sows. Now that he took out his Radiant Saint Armor, he has truly lost all face.”

Kara Ga stood by Zaar Ere's side with an ugly look on his face, but not a single word was spoken.

The other competitors had been stunned by Ming Dong's speed. Although Ming Dong wasn't all that old, his strength wasn't weaker than anyone else here. His speed was especially fast and made everyone think that he was actually a Heaven Saint Master. That was because his speed had already far outstripped the realm an Earth Saint Master could attain, and even a Sixth Cycle wind

attributed Earth Saint Master wouldn't be able to reach such a speed.

Seeing the protective armoring on Kazda Fei, Ming Dong was a bit dazed. This was the very first time he had seen such a thing, but he laughed anyways, "Did you think wearing a tortoise shell would protect you?" With that, Ming Dong disappeared once more before reappearing behind Kazda Fei and slashed onto Kazda Fei's chest.

"Bang!" A loud sound was heard as Kazda Fei flew back with a clear imprint on his chest armor.

Ming Dong shook his slightly numb right hand as he muttered, "What a thick tortoise shell."

Kazda Fei glared venomously at Ming Dong as he raised his sword above his head, "Brat, you've been aggressive enough. I'll send you on your way now, Absolute Truth--First Cross!" Radiant Saint Force surged out from Kazda Fei's body as he brought his sword up. At the same time, a powerful amount of pressure suddenly came crashing down on the entire arena, causing Ming Dong to find it hard to breathe. Although the pressure had not affected the barrier, the entire arena was affecting even the outside area, causing everyone on the outside to feel the mountain-like pressure as well. The pressure was so much that none of them felt as if they could move and instantly went pale as their blood escaped from their faces.

"This is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, he's using a Heaven Tier Battle Skill!" A white haired elder cried out in shock, causing everyone else to pale at the overwhelming power. At the same

time, everyone stared in excitement at Kazda Fei. Regarding Heaven Tier Battle Skills, they were a once in a millennia opportunity to become rich. Not a single person wanted to miss this, even the Heaven Saint Masters were all staring intensely at Kazda Fei. This was because Heaven Tier Battle Skills were extremely expensive and some Heaven Saint Masters didn't even have a single Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

Seeing Kazda Fei's battle skill, Ming Dong had a serious look at last, "Don't think that you're the only one with a heaven Tier Battle Skill, I'll show you the power of an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill." With that, an equally large amount of energy began to ripple out of Ming Dong before collecting together in his sword.

In the next moment, a stronger wave of pressure blew back and returned the pressure given to him by Kazda Fei's battle skill. Its power had reached even the outside area where countless of Great Saint Masters coughed out a mouthful of blood as their faces grew even more pale.

Suddenly, the entire crowd began to push backward as the ones incapable of enduring the pressure tried to escape. All sorts of panicked cries could be heard.

"Heavens, this is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill...."

"Two Heaven Tier Battle Skills are about to clash, who's going to be the winner and who will be the loser?"

"With two Heaven Tier Battle Skills about to clash, this will

cause even the heavens to shake. Who knows whether or not the arena will be able to handle it, everyone get back!”

“For two Heaven Tier Battle Skills to go head to head, what result will happen, we’ll find out soon enough...”

The power from the Heaven Tier Battle Skills of Ming Dong and Kazda Fei had caused a panic as everyone from Great Saint Masters to Earth Saint Masters all flew into an outrage. Not a single of them had seen such a clash like this before.

While the Heaven Tier Battle Skills continued to build up power, Ming Dong and Kazda Fei both continued to hold back, at their level, they needed to build up power for the full power.

The wind began to grow turbulent as a strong gale was whipped up around the two competitors while they initialized their Heaven Tier Battle Skills. The pressure was enough for Great Saint Masters to be forced back, and even some Earth Saint Masters were forced a few steps back.

By this point, only a few of the Heaven Saint Master experts were within twenty meters of the arena without any pain. However, each one of them had a layer of Saint Force protecting them.

While it took some time to explain, it had only taken a few moments. In the end, both battle skills were fully prepared.

“Absolute Truth--First Cross!”

“Sword of the Tyrant--Heaven Shaking Blade!”



# Chapter 335: The Ten Great Practitioners (Five)

---

Two bangs could be heard as the two men's Saint Weapons flashed forward.

Kazda Fei's silver sword seemed almost as if it was a divine sword that shot forward with seemingly two strikes that resembled a single cross that shined brilliantly in everyone's eyes, leaving behind a sun spot like image.

With an overwhelming amount of power, the cross flew toward Ming Dong.

Ming Dong's sword slashed toward Kazda Fei as well. As his sword was swung, the winds began to warp as the skies grew dark. Only a compressed amount of Sword Qi could be seen as it flew toward Kazda Fei and smashed against the cross. With a loud explosion, a large ripple of energy immediately scattered the entire area.

Ming Dong's slash impacted against the cross, shattering it into pieces before continuing on toward Kazda Fei. In the end, it pierced into his body before striking at the barrier behind him. With an explosion, the barrier rippled slightly before the attack dissipated.

The explosive energy caused by the blow was quickly absorbed by the barrier surrounding the arena. Even as the energy struck against the barrier, it was like a pebble being thrown into the

ocean and disappeared without any other external effect. In a flash, the entire arena was clean of any of the energy.

Ming Dong continued to feel the brunt of this terrifying backlash. Compared to before, he no longer had the same easy going face as before and was completely pale. The Saint Force that was used up by the Heaven Tier Battle Skill was truly immense, and after that one startling attack, his Saint Force was almost all used up.

Kazda Fei stood in front of him with sluggish eyes and a dazed expression.

“Kacha!” Suddenly, the strange white piece of armor that covered Kazda Fei’s body began to fracture into a large crack appeared from his forehead to the point between his legs and the bright red tint of blood could be seen coming out. The silver armor right now was an extremely eye-catching sight.

In the next moment, a truly surprising thing happened as Kazda Fei’s body suddenly split in half before falling to the ground. His inner organs had long since been reduced to a minced mess as blood poured all over the place.

After the two Heaven Tier Battle Skills had clashed, Ming Dong had came out unscratched while Kazda Fei was split in two.

This sight caused everyone there to be breathless, even the various Heaven Saint Masters were left speechless. At this moment, there were millions of people watching the finals, but the entire place was silent. So silent was the area that the heartbeat of

everyone could be heard bumping at an accelerated pace.

When the two Heaven Tier Battle Skills clashed, everyone had imagined its aftereffects. Most people had anticipated both sides to come out heavily injured and end in a tie. They hadn't imagined that the impossible would happen, and that after the two initialized their battle skills, one person would die a wretched death by being split in two while the other would remain unharmed.

A single elder dropped down from the middle of nowhere with his silk robes. Standing in the air, it seemed as if he was treating the Earth Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters as beneath him, yet he was not rude at all. Not a single of the Heaven Saint Masters below him had any complaints and or any dissatisfaction toward this individual. Every single Heaven Saint Master had only respect for him and even a small yearning.

The elder stared at the arena below before muttering, "A Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master versus a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master. An Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill versus a Primary Heaven Tier Battle Skill, this type of outcome wasn't unexpected at all." While the elder didn't speak too loudly, his voice could still be heard loud and clear throughout the arena.

Immediately, the entire crowd went into an uproar as they looked at Ming Dong with a mixture of envy, admiration, and jealousy.

"An Advance Tier Heaven Tier Battle Skill, he had one of those? I've been a Heaven Saint Master for over twenty years, but my

strongest battle skill is only an Advanced Earth Tier Battle Skill, ai...”

“He’s already a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master at this age? Dear heavens, that’s impossible...”

“Did I hear that right? He’s not even thirty years old, how could he be a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master? And a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, good god, that’s just too shocking! This Gathering of the Mercenaries is far too much.”

In a short moment, all sorts of comments could be heard coming through all over the arena as everyone congratulated, complained, or grumbled their thoughts about Ming Dong.

The floating elder looked at Ming Dong with a smile envious look before speaking absentmindedly to himself, “Who would have known that the Great Elder would have bestowed the technique that made him well known to you. For a youth to have such control over the Sword of the Tyrant. It seems that the Great Elder did not waste any effort to train you. Ming Dong, just who are you for the Great Elder to spend so much time and energy?”

The winner of this match was clear to see to anyone with eyes. So even though Ming Dong hadn’t heard the cry of victory, a Space Gate opened up to let him out.

With a breath of relief, Ming Dong looked at the split body of Kazda Fei and said, “I told you I’d split you in half, let’s see if you believe me now.” With that, he walked away and into the Space

Gate.

The Space Gate behind Kazda Fei opened up as well as several of the members of Mercenary City quickly came in and started to clean up the arena.

Ming Dong returned to Jian Chen's side as everyone stared at him in a new light. Each one now had a deep fear imprinted on them; even Kara Ga looked at Ming Dong with a completely new emotion.

Jian Chen and Ming Dong gave each other a mutual look before the both of them sat down on stools to watch the rest of the matches.

At this moment, Qin Ji walked up to Ming Dong with a respectful posture, "Congratulations to brother Ming Dong for becoming one of the top ten. With your strength, getting into the top three will not be an impossible task."

With a laugh, Ming Dong began to speak to Qin Ji for a little while.

As the two talked, the finals continued with the usual marvelousness, but after the match between Ming Dong and Kazda Fei, nothing could compare to their beautiful clash. Thus, every match after did not seem as exciting.

After the eight matches had been concluded, eight winners were

established. Aridia, Zaar Ere, Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Baili Tong, Kara Ga, and Zhangsun Yunfeng.

Much to the shock of Jian Chen, the wind attributed Earth Saint Master that he had come across before while hunting for tokens had made it into the top eight, Zhangsun Yunfeng.

After the top eight had been established, Jue and Tianmu Ling had managed to make their way back into the top ten after winning the loser's bracket.

At last, the ten names of the contestants were complete. Aridia, Zaar Ere, Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Qin Ji, Baili Tong, Kara Ga, Zhangsun Yunfeng, Jue and Tianmu Ling.

Afterward, the competition prepared to move forward. The tournament would not end until the King of Mercenaries was found. Only the top eight contestants would be able to compete as well as Tianmu Ling and Jue who had both made the ninth and tenth spots.

The eight people began to pick their numbers so that an announcement could be made. Then the announcement came:

Jian Chen Versus Kara Ga.

Ming Dong Versus Zhangsun Yunfeng

Qin Ji Vs Zaar Ere

## Aridia Vs Baili Tong

The final rounds would be held three days later as each competitor went into a special inn prepared for them to rest. The entire inn was protected by a barrier so that only the competitors could enter. At the same time, they couldn't exit the barrier. All of the inn workers were trusted aides of Mercenary City.

During those three days, Jian Chen spent the majority of his time ensuring that his body would be in peak condition. After that, he took out the Duanyun Sword and the Seal of Treasure Mountain to inspect them. After fiddling with them for half a day, he had come to a final conclusion. He would not be able to use either Ruler Armaments, and even if he were to use his own Saint Force to force it into them, it would be eliminated. The Seal of Treasure Mountain was as the four brothers of the Cai family said. Jian Chen would not be able to use it, and the Seal of Treasure Mountain was nothing more than a broken piece of iron in his hands.

“Could it be that the words of those four were true? A Ruler Armament requires the right bloodline in order to be used?” Jian Chen thought as he eyed the item, this was the only explanation that made sense to him.

Afterward, Jian Chen placed both Ruler Armaments back into his Space Ring and began his study of the Illusionary Flash.

In the past few days, the four brothers of the Cai family had

already relayed the news of Shi Xiangran's death by Jian Chen's hands as well as the capture of the Ruler Armament to the Shi family. The very moment the Shi family heard the news, the family head was shocked beyond relief and grew angrier by the second. Even though Shi Xiangran was the third son, his cultivation talent was far beyond everyone else; he was an outstanding person that appeared once in a millenia.

Four hours after receiving the news, two Heaven Saint Masters were dispatched to Mercenary City.



## Chapter 336: Two Moves

---

Three days went by in a flash. Every competitor had their bodies in peak condition for the finals. Outside of the barrier, there was a lot of chatter and many discussions on who would be the winner, causing people to start to bet. Every single one of the gamblers wanted to win big, so the overall sum was well over ten million purple coins. However, most of the bets were on Ming Dong being the winner while everyone else had a tenth of the votes.

By the afternoon, Mercenary City was completely filled. The amount of people that came here today was quite a bit more than the amount from the previous days, causing all of the streets that led to the plaza to be completely congested.

Jian Chen and Kara Ga both stood in the opposite ends of the arena while giving fierce looks at each other.

“Brat, you and that Ming Dong seem quite close. Ming Dong has killed my brother Kazda Fei. Today, I shall spill your blood as a sacrifice to Kazda Fei’s soul. Then, Ming Dong will have his turn to accompany you!” Kara Ga glared at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen snorted as he gave a small smirk, “Your brother Kazda Fei and Ming Dong had said similar words to each other, and in the end, Kazda Fei was split in two by Ming Dong. Today, your words scare me just as much as Kazda Fei’s words scared Ming Dong. You will see that the person who falls today will be you.”

“Hmph, do you think yourself as Ming Dong? The fact that Ming

Dong is a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master is something that I did not expect, and neither did I think that he had such a strong Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Kazda Fei's death at Ming Dong's hands was not wrong, but you, are you also a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master? Hmph, if you are one, then I, Kara Ga, will immediately admit defeat and kowtow my head thrice." Kara Ga sneered with disdain.

With an impassive look, Jian Chen replied, "There is no need for you to know my strength. Just know that you need not kowtow because you will not leave here alive. Remember that each and every word of yours comes at a heavy price" With that, Jian Chen's killing intent began to leak out from him.

With a cold smile, Kara Ga began to exude his own killing intent, but not another word was spoken.

"Begin!" A loud voice called out into the barrier.

A silver white two-handed sword that was two meters long appeared in Kara Ga's hand, flickering with a faint white glow that made it seem almost holy.

At the same time, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword could be seen materializing in his own right hand. Holding it in front of him, Jian Chen spoke, "If you have that strange armor, then you would best put it on or risk losing the chance to later."

At this, Kara Ga's face grew hot with fury. In the past, no matter where he went, he had been respected and revered by all. However

today, he had been scorned by a single youth no older than the age of twenty, for the high and mighty Kara Ga, he could not bear this. With an angry roar, he yelled, “It seems as if you don’t even know how to write the character for death, there is no need for me to use the Radiant Saint Armor against you, die!” With that, he flew at Jian Chen and swung out with his giant longsword with all the power a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master could muster.

Kara Ga’s strength could equal Ming Dong’s own despite him being a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master.

Jian Chen stared icily at Kara Ga as an azure and violet light appeared on his Light Wind Sword, causing the silver light on the blade to intensify.

The very moment Qin Ji and Tianmu Ling saw the light, their eyes immediately zoned in on Jian Chen’s sword. To be accurate, the light on the Light Wind Sword was quite eye-catching, and they couldn’t help but remember what had happened back in the immortal’s cave. Jian Chen had easily shattered the barriers of Shi Xiangran and Jiede Wukang with that very light. Right now they suddenly remembered that Jian Chen was using those same lights.

The azure and violet Sword Qi was quite weak now, but because of the silver glow from the Light Wind Sword, the azure and violet Sword Qi was quite noticeable and eye-catching.

Kara Ga noticed the sudden azure and violet Sword Qi, but whatever purpose it served he did not care to take notice. Instead, he carried on to slash at Jian Chen’s waist.

At the same time, Jian Chen took action as well as the Light Wind Sword clashed with Kara Ga's own sword with a violent crash.

“Bang!”

A wild explosion burst out of the two Saint Weapons, but because Kara Ga's Saint Weapon was much stronger than Jian Chen, the Sword Qi on the Light Wind Sword had been scattered for the most part. A kaleidoscopic picture of Sword Qi flew out and impacted against the barrier without a single scratch on it before the Sword Qi disappeared from reality.

Although Jian Chen's sword had most of its Sword Qi scattered, the azure and violet Sword Qi was not affected. Just as those two and Kara Ga's Radiant Saint Force made contact, Kara Ga's sword became like a rotten piece of wood that instantly chipped away as the Light Wind Sword left behind a two finger wide hole in it.

Feeling the damage from his Saint Weapon, Kara Ga stifled a shout as his face went white and he spat out some blood.

Mere seconds after Jian Chen's sword had smashed against Kara Ga's sword, Jian Chen continued up with a second strike with his sword in a split second. While the strike had only been for a moment, the power and speed in which it had struck out was inconceivable.

Kara Ga could feel the damage done to his Saint Weapon with a shocked expression, As the azure and violet Sword Qi flashed in

between his eyes again, he immediately remembered his surroundings and quickly increased the distance between him and Jian Chen.

However Jian Chen had somehow managed to get behind Kara Ga while holding his sword in an elegant like position without moving.

Outside of the arena, everyone began to point wildly at the scene with loud chattering of amazement at the initial strike.

“Who do you think will win...?”

“Of course it’ll be Kara Ga....”

“Its definitely Kara Ga, I’ve heard that he and Kazda Fei are extremely close. Even Kazda Fei was a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master, Kara Ga’s strength is definitely just as strong, but I’m not sure if he has a Heaven Tier Battle Skill or not...”

“But Jian Chen’s strength isn’t bad either. He’s quite young, what age do you guys think? I would say twenty years old, he couldn’t have been cultivating for that long...”

“That’s right, Jian Chen couldn’t have been cultivating for more than a dozen to twenty years. I can also see that he is an attributeless Saint Force cultivator as well. He cannot compete with Kara Ga who is a Radiant Saint Force attributed cultivator. He is also called the undying by most and is incredibly strong, who

could possible kill him....?”

Suddenly, the chatter immediately stopped as everyone saw the bright red line on Kara Ga’s neck. The red line began to grow wider before the entire neck seemed to be completely red. Even before the line could become completely red, everyone had already came to the conclusion that the line was blood.

Like a water fountain, blood began to spill from Kara Ga’s neck as he fell to the ground. His neck already had a pool of blood forming beneath his body. Then, his head rolled away from the body, causing the blood to pour from his neck in a steady stream, covering the entire arena with blood.

Outside of the arena, everyone had gone into a mute shock as they stared at the scene in the arena with wide eyes and looks of amazement.

For someone strong with a Radiant Saint Force like Kara Ga, it was unexpected for him to be beheaded by the young looking Jian Chen as soon as the match had started. This was such a wide gap in skill everyone found it almost hard to believe.

As if ignoring everyone else, the moment the announcement was revealed, Jian Chen walked out of the Space Gate and into the staging area where everyone was staring at him with wide eyes as if they had no idea whether or not someone was coming back.

“What a fast sword, for him to stab outward in less than a single second, this type of strength is far too much! It seems that his

sword has a secret regarding those two strange lights if it could cut a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master's weapon." A Heaven Saint Master elder spoke in admiration.

Leaving the arena, Jian Chen had found it hard to contain his excitement. This wasn't excitement from winning, but excitement from seeing his azure and violet Sword Qi growing in strength once more. Though, everyone had seen the glows.

Jian Chen had been able to behead Kara Ga, so Ming Dong naturally congratulated him. The other competitors outlook on Jian Chen had now changed by a lot. They all replaced Kara Ga with him as the number one person here. Everyone had a strange fear of him now almost as if he were a bigger threat than Ming Dong. Jian Chen's beheading slash of Kara Ga took less than a second, practically faster than a thunderclap. Even they hadn't seen what had transpired inside the arena since Jian Chen's speed was just far too fast for them to notice.

# Chapter 337: The Finals

---

The next fight was between Ming Dong and Zhangsun Yunfeng. After a short break the arena was back to normal, allowing Ming Dong to enter via the Space Gate. However, before he could cross through Jian Chen pulled him aside and with a sharp glance toward Zhangsun Yunfeng, spoke a few words of warning.

With a clench of his fist, a spark of killing intent could be seen in Ming Dong's eyes as he spoke, "Don't worry, brother Qin Xiao has been kind to us, I, Ming Dong, will take revenge for him." With that, he stalked into the arena.

Zhangsun Yunfeng was a middle aged man who looked quite refined almost as if he was a wise scholar. His eyes wavered when he saw Jian Chen and Ming Dong talking together as his heart began to beat faster. With some hesitation, he finally gritted his teeth and strode into the arena with his head held high.

Quickly, both combatants entered the arena with Ming Dong staring at Zhangsun Yunfeng with a look that held none of his killing intent back. This caused Zhangsun Yunfeng to feel a bit startled before taking on a more serious look. He and Jian Chen already had a small conflict in the past, and Jian Chen and Ming Dong were on good terms with each other, allowed him to deduce from these two facts that Jian Chen had asked Ming Dong to eliminate him.

"Begin!" The announcer cried out.



Without hesitation after hearing the announcement, he disappeared without a single trace and flew at Zhangsun Yunfeng in an instant.

“I admit defeat!” A mere moment after the match had started, Zhangsun Yunfeng cried out immediately. He had personally seen Ming Dong and Kazda Fei’s fight for himself and knew that Ming Dong’s strength was not something that he himself could be an opponent of.

Ming Dong had no intention of sparing Zhangsun Yunfeng and instantly reappeared right in front of him with his Saint Force exploding out from his body as he lashed out with his sword. At the same time, a powerful sword appeared and pressed against Zhangsun Yunfeng’s body, causing him to feel as if he was stuck in a quagmire and could not move.

“Earth Tier Battle Skill!” Zhengsun Yunfeng spoke in shock. He had no idea that Ming Dong would have such an attack and would be so familiar with the skill that he could use it straight away.

Ming Dong’s sword came slamming down onto Zhengsun Yunfeng’s head with a domineering pressure and speed that had rendered him unable to defend or even move against Ming Dong’s attack.

At the same time, the barrier came crashing down like a curtain from the heavens, separating Ming Dong and Zhangsun Yunfeng from each other.

Ming Dong's strike crashed against the barrier with a resounding bang, but the energy from the shock wave was absorbed into the barrier like a pebble in the ocean without a single trace of damage.

“When one of the combatant admits defeat, then the other combatant is forbidden from making any further attacks, Ming Dong is the winner!” A loud voice boomed out as two Space Gates opened up on both sides.

Staring vehemently at Zhangsun Yunfeng, Ming Dong let out a helpless sigh before walking back to his Space Gate dejectedly.

With his own sigh of relief, Zhangsun Yunfeng was extremely grateful for the last second protection against Ming Dong. If it were not for that, then he would have been killed by Ming Dong's attack and would not live to see himself walk out of the arena.

Zhangsun Yunfeng stared in fear at the retreating back of Ming Dong before walking himself sadly back to his own Space Gate. He had spent forty long years cultivating so that he could attain such a strong power, but he hadn't thought that some youth under the age of thirty would have been able to force him into such a miserable state.

The next match was between Qin Ji and Zaar Ere. Although Qin Ji had a Ruler Armament he could not use it in this match because of the barrier placed onto him being restricted. The match was extremely short since Qin Ji was incapable of hurting Zaar Ere with his Radiant Saint Armor, leaving Zaar Ere as the winner.

The final round was between Aridia and Baili Tong. Both of them were well built men. Baili Tong had the strength of a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master. The fight lasted an hour before, finally, Baili Tong managed to strike at Adiria for the win.

Thus, the four strongest had been established: Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Zaar Ere, and Baili Tong.

After a day of rest, the finals started straight away. With the matches being determined, the list of names had been released. What caused both Ming Dong and Jian Chen to feel gloomy was that they had been pitted against each other at last. Zaar Ere had been paired up against Baili Tong who had a Ruler Armament as well.

In the arena, Jian Chen and Ming Dong both stared at each other helplessly. Luck had played with them and the Heavens had pulled one final joke at their expense.

This day would end with the final two strongest being established. If Jian Chen and Ming Dong hadn't been pitted against each other, then there would have been a good chance for them to be first and second place. Because of the will of the Heavens, one of the two men would be eliminated.

"Begin!" The announcer called out, but not a single person made a move.

"Ming Dong, you are quite strong, so I trust that you will be able to be number one, don't disappoint me." Jian Chen spoke. He had

every intention to admit defeat here. He knew in his heart that if he did not use his azure and violet Sword Qi, he would not be an opponent for Ming Dong at all. After all, Ming Dong was a wind attributed Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master and had a better comprehension of the Illusionary Flash. Compared to Ming Dong, Jian Chen had no chance of winning.

“I admit defeat!”

Just as Jian Chen opened his mouth to admit defeat, Ming Dong beat him to it.

Seeing the amazed look on Jian Chen’s face, Ming Dong laughed, “Jian Chen, your strength isn’t any weaker than mine, I believe that you can grab the first place, so don’t you dare disappoint Me!”

With a forced smile, Jian Chen replied, “Ming Dong, you becoming first place is not a difficult task, why did you give me the chance to do so instead?”

“Because you need it more. Jian Chen, uncle Tian told me that whoever is first place within the Gathering of the Mercenaries will be able to cultivate in the holy grounds of Mercenary City for half a year. Jian Chen, you know that I am already at the peak of the Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. At any given time, I can make the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master, so the holy grounds is of no use to me, you on the other hand, are in a different situation.” Ming Dong spoke seriously.

Smiling more freely now, Jian Chen said, “Then fine, Ming

Dong. Since you have given me the chance, I won't dare let you down now."

"Congratulations on your win." Ming Dong laughed.

What Ming Dong didn't know was that when he had conceded the match, countless of people howled out in anger and cursed. That was because everyone had bet on Ming Dong being the number one person in the competition. When they had placed all their bets on Ming Dong and now witnessed him admit defeat, the money they had spent was thrown away.

The final conclusion between Jian Chen and Ming Dong had been far beyond what anyone had expected. Only those who had some familiarity with the two had a look of smugness on their faces. They knew that Ming Dong and Jian Chen had been with each other for some time, and while they knew that Ming Dong was extremely strong, he had always treated Jian Chen as the leader almost as if he was the boss.

The millions of people within Mercenary City began to talk among themselves as everyone that had bet on Ming Dong felt extremely dissatisfied. It was only until a Heaven Saint Master commented that Jian Chen himself was not weak at all and had proved it when he beheaded Kara Ga in an instant. After that, anyone who had expressed their dissatisfaction at Ming Dong's defeat grew quiet. For those who had placed a large sum of money on Ming Dong, they could only drop their heads and wallow in their sadness.

No matter how loud the chatter was, not a single person within

the arena could hear it because of the soundproofing characteristic of the barrier, so Ming Dong and Jian Chen had not heard a single word.

Afterward, Zaar Ere and Baili Tong stepped into the arena. Zaar Ere had already reached the Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master level and had a small repertoire of strong battle skills. Baili Tong was only at a Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master strength but had a Ruler Armament, yet this would not be very effective against the Radiant Saint Armor of Zaar Ere. With Zaar Ere also being able to heal himself with his Radiant Saint Force, the battle did not take long with the Radiant Warrior Zaar Ere being the winner.

The final round of the competition and the most important one would take place the following day. Because this was the final battle, it would give rise to the strongest individual of the Gathering of the Mercenaries and would be given the honor of being called the King of Mercenaries.

During the following day of rest, Jian Chen disregarded the break and put all of his efforts into comprehending the Illusionary Flash. He had already attained the first layer of mastery with the Heaven's Stolen Fortune and could increase his strength three times over. This was already a pleasing result to Jian Chen, so he did not need to worry anymore on studying the Heaven's Stolen Fortune since it would be impossible for him to make the second layer in such a short amount of time. Even if he were to somehow gain mastery of the second layer, his fighting strength would not be all that much different in relativity since his strength would only be multiplied by four times. Even with his First Cycle Earth Saint Master strength multiplied by four, it would not be able to contend against a Heaven Saint Master.

Rather than that outcome, Jian Chen threw all of his time and effort toward studying the Illusionary Flash. He was not focusing on getting first place of the Gathering of the Mercenaries since he had a great deal of confidence in getting it already. What Jian Chen truly did fear was the Jiede clan and Shi family. He could anticipate that the moment he left Mercenary City, there would be experts from both powers coming to kill him and take back the Ruler Armaments. The grudges between him and the two powers would never be dissolved since he was far too weak.

## Chapter 338: Zaar Ere's Condition

---

The next day, countless people waited for the finals to finally start. This was the day that the King of Mercenaries would be established. The bi-centurial Gathering of the Mercenaries was finally coming to a close. The news of Zaar Ere fighting against Jian Chen had been the focus of everyone's banter. Even several Heaven Saint Masters had personally come to watch the fight before trying to predict who would win. In the end, the final conclusion was that the two men were not that different in strength.

Zaar Ere was over the age of forty five, but also below the age fifty with the strength of a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master and had the Radiant Saint Force. Because of that, he was called the undying by many since he could heal any injury he might receive. His natural advantages were plenty and he was as complex as the two other Radiant Warriors from before. Neither audience nor combatants knew of his battle skills except for the exceptionally strong armor he had. However, many people speculated that he had a single Heaven Tier Battle Skill at the very least.

Jian Chen was most likely above the age of twenty and below the age of twenty five with the strength of a First or Second Cycle Earth Saint Master. He had no known attributed Saint Force but his strikes were incredibly deadly. His sword was incredibly fast and could make it hard for a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master to dodge. Moreover, he could maintain that speed for a long period of time without feeling the side effects of this supernatural movement. And because of some sort of martial arts, his movements were incredibly fast, he had no known battle skill, but he had a single hidden secret that could shatter the Saint Weapon of a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. When he utilizes the azure and



violet glows of light, his fighting strength was suddenly multiplied and many people speculated that this was definitely a Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

When information regarding the two's strength had been revealed, everyone immediately took notice and within the same day people began to gamble once more. Because this was the final round, every single gambler had placed high stakes on the match. Many of the wealthier men had wagered hundreds of thousands of purple coins on the two, making the pot of the entire bet count up to over a hundred million purple coins. Because of the ambiguity over the two combatants strength, there were people that looked at Jian Chen favorably and people who looked at Zaar Ere favorably for an almost equal outcome. Half the people had bet on Jian Chen, the other half had bet on Zaar Ere.

“Hehehe, how lively. I would like to bet 100,000 purple coins on brother Jian Chen to win it all.” Tianmu Ling took out the appropriate sum of money to hand it over.

“I too would like to bet on brother Jian Chen's victory, 500,000 purple coins!” Qin Ji strode forward and took out the money from his Space Belt.

“I'd like to bet a thousand purple coins on Jian Chen, that's all I have.” Senior An brought out a smaller stack of money onto the table.

“30,000 purple coins on Jian Chen, all of my personal wealth rests upon Jian Chen's shoulders.” Qin Xiao spoke in a grand voice.

“10,000 purple coins on Jian Chen.” Dugu Feng wasn’t one to be left behind and spoke to the one taking the bets with a calm look.

.....

In the arena, Jian Chen and Zaar Ere both stood quietly across from each other. Jian Chen stood in carefree manner in front of Zaar Ere with his sword in hand, the point of the sword resting on the ground, yet a piercing stare was honed in on Zaar Ere.

Zaar Ere was a sturdily built man who was about two meters tall and had a chilling stare as he looked at Jian Chen. He had come fully prepared by wearing his silver colored armor where wisps of Radiant Saint Force could be seen revolving around it, basking the area around him in a glowing light and giving him the appearance of a holy person. The only place that had not been covered by the armor were the two spots where his eyes were. Holding his bright Saint Weapon above his head, the armored Zaar Ere looked like a revered war god.

The two had already stood in the arena for some time before instantly bursting into action as the announcer made the call.

Suddenly, the war god like Zaar Ere spoke from within his silver armor, “Jian Chen, although you are using some sort of special method to hide your presence, I can tell that your Saint Force is not far away from my own. With your young age, I am sure that with time, you will reach the peak of the Tian Yuan Continent. So in this battle whether I win or lose, I hope that we will remain

friends and not enemies.”

Jian Chen was slightly shocked after hearing those words, but he stared at Zaar Ere with a strange look, “We’ve killed your comrades Kara Ga and Kazda Fei, did you not wish to avenge them?”

Even under the helmet, there seemed to be no difference in his emotion as Zaar Ere spoke calmly, “I admit, Kara Ga and Kazda Fei both came from the same place as I, but our affiliations are with a different power. We are not friends, but instead competitors. Our relationship with each other is quite subtle, and if it was any worse, then it would have become hostile. With you and Ming Dong killing the both of them, I should thank you; in fact, you’ve eliminated potential enemies in my future.”

Zaar Ere let out a long sigh, “This triple entente between the three of us has gone on for too long. Perhaps, it was time for it to be smashed apart.” Zaar Ere said before speaking once more, “Jian Chen, no matter how this battle goes, I truly hope that we will remain friends.”

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed with a strange light, he knew that this was an unknown situation where he was at great risks of being dragged into a terrible battleground. With some thought, Jian Chen said, “I can only say that we will not be enemies; as for friends, that cannot be easily done with so few words.”

Zaar Ere nodded his head, “That is true enough. If just saying these words were enough for two strangers to become friends, then the value of friendship would be absolutely worthless. Jian

Chen, I know that you are determined to be first place, but do you have the strength to overcome me?”

Jian Chen's eyes flashed with a strange look as he tried to understand what Zaar Ere was trying to get at, but he opened his mouth and replied anyways, “Partially!”

Zaar Ere laughed, “It seems that you have confidence in yourself.” With that, Zaar Ere took out his long sword and then another silver bladed sword from within his Space Ring, “Jian Chen, if I were to use this Saint Weapon, how sure are you that you will be able to beat me?”

Jian Chen took a look at the new weapon in Zaar Ere's hand with a bright stare, “If my guess is correct, that is a Ruler Armament.”

Without any other words, Zaar Ere laughed once more, “Correct, this is a Ruler Armament. Jian Chen, if I were to use this, then how sure are you that you would be able to beat me?”

Jian Chen stayed mysteriously silent, giving no reply.

Continuing to speak, Zaar Ere said, “Jian Chen, you must know that just the two of us reaching this step was not easy. The requirements for the Gathering of the Mercenaries didn't allow many of the geniuses born at the wrong time to participate, so no matter if it is you or me that desires first place, we both will not easily renounce it. With our strength being so close to each other, we will have to fight with all our power to attain first place, and

since we must defeat the other in order to become first, I will indeed try my best” Zaar Ere suddenly stopped his speech to look at Jian Chen for a brief moment, “But if you could agree to my request, I will renounce my attempt and give you the spot of first place.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen kept a calm look on his face but his mind instantly began to think back to the first words that Zaar Ere had said. In a flash, he had come to a conclusion that there would be a possibility for him to be involved in a clash between major powers. Zaar Ere’s condition was quite alluring, but for such an alluring condition, there would definitely be an equally heavy price to pay for it. Zaar Ere must have seen Jian Chen’s potential as well as the relationship he had with Ming Dong or greatly desired to have the support of the powers behind the both of them. Whichever the situation was, Jian Chen would definitely not want to agree to him.

“My apologies, but I believe that this battle should be won using our own strengths, not words.” Jian Chen spoke calmly with a neutral expression.

“Jian Chen, did you not even want to hear what my request was?” Zaar Ere asked.

“There is no need.” Jian Chen replied.

“Jian Chen, this is your chance to become first place. I am not afraid to tell you, but I am in possession of a Middle Heaven Tier Battle Skill and a Ruler Armament, did you think you could beat me?” Zaar Ere asked.

Jian Chen had a deep smile on his face as he replied, “Zaar Ere, if you cannot hit me, then the Ruler Armament in your hand has no use. As for the Heaven Tier Battle Skill, hehe, while they are indeed powerful they require time to employ. If you dare try to initialize your Heaven Tier Battle Skill, then I can guarantee that you will not be able to release it. My sword will strike at your throat.”

If it were not for the helmet on Zaar Ere’s face, then the facial change would have been noticeable to everyone. He stared blankly at Jian Chen for a moment before laughing for a good while. This was the first time he had ever thought his words had been so useless and suffered so much by the younger generation.

After a short period of time, Zaar Ere let out a sigh as he stared at Jian Chen in thought, “If only my son was as remarkable as you, that would be great. Even if I were to reduce my life by a hundred years, if not a thousand or even ten thousand years, I would agree!”

Jian Chen was speechless.

## Chapter 339: The Soul Sword Once More

---

The moment Ming Dong saw the Ruler Armament in Zaar Ere's hand from the outside, his face grew startled. "Crap, I didn't think he would have a Ruler Armament. His secret was cleverly hidden until now. This will be troublesome to see if Jian Chen will be able to beat him."

The next moment, the two fighters spared no more words and waited for the match to officially start.

Two hours had passed, and if Zaar Ere hadn't made a move, then Jian Chen would have thought that the match had long since started. He hadn't heard the call, but the time he had waited was already far too long. He had come here in the morning, and now it was almost noon.

The blazing hot sun was already high in the air and its hot golden light rays bored down, basking the entire area with a golden color.

Despite the sun blazing overhead, not a single person felt the heat. It was already winter in season, so the temperature was not unbearable. Only a few really noticed the sunlight's heat, but they thought it to be more comfortable than not, unlike summer heat which everyone came to hate.

"It is now the third hour, let the competition begin!" Suddenly, the voice of the announcer could be heard.

Hearing this, Jian Chen almost felt like spitting out blood. He

had no idea that he and Zaar Ere would be standing around like idiots until the first hour past the start of the afternoon for the match to begin.

“Tai!” On the other side, Zaar Ere had already burst into motion as his Radiant Saint Force exploded away from him. With his Ruler Armament high in the air with a divine like radiance, his entire person seemed equally divine in spirit, making him seem like a war god.

As the Ruler Armament was waved in the air, a large amount of Sword Qi suddenly flew out toward Jian Chen like a crescent moon. It’s power was so strong that even while flying through the air, the crescent shaped Sword Qi began to distort.

For a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master to wield a Ruler Armament, the amount of energy that would be released would be much more than Dugu Feng.

The crescent shaped Sword Qi flew at Jian Chen who was instantly torn apart, allowing the attack to continue on. It exploded against the barrier where it disappeared like a pebble within the ocean.

Seeing how Jian Chen had been smashed apart by the crescent Sword Qi, the entire audience all gasped in shock and amazement. However, the cries were all cut short as they realized it had only been a mirror image of Jian Chen that had been hit. The real one suddenly reappeared behind Zaar Ere with his Light Wind Sword glowing with a faint azure and violet Sword Qi before stabbing at his back.



Zaar Ere didn't even bother to turn around and immediately swung his Ruler Armament behind him. The energy from the Ruler Armament burst outward with a shaking sensation almost as if the area around it could not handle the energy output.

Growing serious at the blow, Jian Chen could feel that the amount of power Zaar Ere had while using the Ruler Armament was far stronger than that of Qin Ji and Dugu Feng by a good amount. Jian Chen wouldn't be able to handle a fraction of the Ruler Armament's power, let alone the entire force of it.

Taking back his sword, Jian Chen immediately used the Illusionary Flash and left behind a mirror image for the Ruler Armament to attack while reappearing behind Zaar Ere to stab at him with his azure and violet Sword Qi once more.

Without even moving to dodge Jian Chen's blow, Zaar Ere brandished his Ruler Armament so that his Ruler Armament would strike Jian Chen.

Jian Chen had been fearful of Zaar Ere's Ruler Armament, he knew just how strong the azure and violet Sword Qi were, but the Ruler Armament was not Zaar Ere's Saint Weapon. Even if he were able to shatter the Ruler Armament, it would not diminish Zaar Ere's fighting ability too much. For the sake of his own safety, he had to take back his strike once more and dodge the Ruler Armament.

The two men continued to go at each other in a fierce exchange

of blows that never connected as they dodged, making the fight seem almost silent.

Zaar Ere knew that Jian Chen's speed was far too fast so he hadn't tried to dodge Jian Chen's attacks and instead tried to meet the blows head for head. His Ruler Armament was brandished in a wide area so that Jian Chen would be forced to pull back his own sword at the last moment to avoid collision.

Jian Chen was already utilizing the Illusionary Flash to the best of his ability and traveled in a circle around Zaar Ere rapidly. In less than a few moments, the two men had exchanged multiple strikes with not a single person being able to do a thing to the other.

The formidable amount of power coming from Zaar Ere's Ruler Armament struck fear into Jian Chen's heart. He also knew that he didn't dare risk for a mutually assured destruction with Zaar Ere because he wasn't sure if the Ruler Armament would be able to able to cut him in half. With the amount of power that was exuding from the Ruler Armament, he didn't want to test it out.

Suddenly, a flash of light appeared in Jian Chen's eyes as he dashed backward while stabbing at Zaar Ere with the azure and violet Sword Qi infused Light Wind Sword in every position. The armor that Zaar Ere was wearing was strong enough that even Ming Dong would normally be helpless against it. Jian Chen's regular strikes wouldn't be enough to dent it, so he needed to borrow the power of the azure and violet Sword Qi.

With an angry shout, Zaar Ere brought his Ruler Armament up

close to him so that the Light Wind Sword would be useless against it and scatter all of the Sword Qi away.

“Hmph, I, Jian Chen, doubt that I would be unable to deal with this situation.” He snorted before revealing an eye full of rage that made it seem as if they contained fire instead. In an instant, the Light Wind Sword separated from his hand and transformed into a silver ray of light that shot toward Zaar Ere with impeccable speed. The Light Wind Sword seemed to have almost reached the speed of “light,” making it almost impossible for anyone to see.

At this moment, Jian Chen was using most of his soul to utilize the Soul Sword. The flight of the Light Wind Sword would have astounded the entire audience to a new level if seen by them even as the sword began to conceal itself within a faint mist.

“Ding!”

Before Zaar Ere could even react, the Light Wind Sword had already struck against his armor, but because Jian Chen had underestimated just how strong the defenses were, the sword had only left behind a small trace of damage.

Although Zaar Ere had suffered no injuries, the Light Wind Sword had still traveled at an incredible speed and pushed him back a few steps with a large amount of force. The moment he had seen the silver streak of light, his face instantly slackened with shock as he cried out, “Just how is this possible? You...just what did you use to hit me?”

Because of Jian Chen's efforts, the Light Wind Sword had flew at a speed and direction that made it impossible for Zaar Ere to take notice, so he was completely unaware of what had been used to hit him.

Jian Chen ignored Zaar Ere's surprised outcry and slowly closed his eyes, to sense the existence of his Light Wind Sword. Using his spirit to control the Light Wind Sword, he and the sword achieved a harmonized state of mind. He was the sword, and the sword was he; the two beings were one and not two.

Just as Jian Chen had delved into this state of mind, the azure and violet Sword Spirits suddenly began to shake within his dantian. The Multicolored Stone also began to shake as if it were extremely happy like an overly excited child.

“Ding ding ding ding ding ding ding ding ding ding....”

A series of echoes could be heard as Zaar Ere's body continued to dance in a strange motion. With each step he took he was driven back so that he staggered in a new direction each second, several times, he was on the verge of falling to the ground. It was evident to see that he was in a bad position.

On his armor, a chain of firework like sparks could be seen as they lit up his Radiant Saint Armor and left several impressions in it.

“Just what in the world is happening... what trickery is this....?” Zaar Ere cried out in shock and anger. Jian Chen and his sword

were now one and with him placing all of his strength on controlling the Light Wind Sword, its speed was practically invisible to the naked eye. Even though Zaar Ere was being constantly assaulted by strikes, he couldn't see just what was hitting him.

The Light Wind Sword continued to rain down on Zaar Ere's body with an unbelievable amount of strength. Each strike rocked his body making him unsteady. At last, Zaar Ere stabbed his Ruler Armament into the ground to anchor his position while allowing the invisible strikes to continue to pelt him unobstructed.

His Radiant Saint Armor was valiantly durable and was comparable to even Shi Xiangran's defensive barrier. No matter how many strikes hit him, they did no damage to him at all.

"Just what in the heavens is this..." Zaar Ere stared in bafflement toward the immobile Jian Chen. He had no idea how many times he had spoken those words now, but it went without saying that he was extremely curious to know just what trickery Jian Chen was doing.

Outside of the arena, every single person gasped in shock with their eyes wide open as they watched the show happening right in front of them. All they could see was the stationary Jian Chen who seemed like a stone statue and Zaar Ere who was twenty meters away with his Ruler Armament stabbed deep into the ground. His hands were clenched onto the Ruler Armament while a series of sparks flashed across his armor.

This strange show left everyone absolutely mystified on how

exactly this situation came to be and what was causing it.

# Chapter 340: The Holy Land

---

The spectating Qin Ji had a strange look of puzzlement on his face as he observed the two men, “Just what are they doing? It seems Zaar Ere is being assaulted by attacks in an endless stream, but I don’t see where they’re coming from. Also the sword from Jian Chen’s hand is missing; Jian Chen is quite definitely a strange one, someone far more mysterious than I had initially thought.” Even Qin Ji was incapable of spotting the Light Wind Sword since the speed it was traveling at was beyond what he could detect with his naked eye, meaning that he could only see the sparks flying off Zaar Ere’s armor without know just how Jian Chen was involved.

On the other side, Ming Dong looked on with some relief at the sight of Zaar Ere being showered with sparks. With a small smile, he muttered, “It is no wonder that he is a brother of mine; he is quite special. It seems that in this case, it won’t be much longer until Zaar Ere loses. To think I was worrying over this fight for nothing!”

“Oh! Little brother seems to have hidden such a mysterious thing, for him to force the Ruler Armament wielding Zaar Ere to eat up such a loss, I bet that Zaar Ere would have died a long time ago if it were not for his armor. However, how did little brother get so much strength? Since it is an attack that is invisible to everyone, it is not that easy to defend against. I can tell that being an opponent of his would not be a smart choice.” Tianmu Ling stared at the arena with eyes that flashed with wonder.

Even the yellow robed Huang Luan was staring at Jian Chen with a dazed look. Her expression was exceptionally complex. Her mind couldn’t help but think back to the first time she had met Jian

Chen, that awkward meeting at the river. She then thought about when she saw him during the survival competition.

“Are you really the same man as before?” Huang Luan wondered absentmindedly as she looked at Jian Chen and muttered to herself. She could clearly remember a few years back Jian Chen was not worthy of being her opponent and wasn’t capable of dealing any damage to her. She had no idea that after some time, she would meet the much stronger Jian Chen who could outmatch her by a long distance.

.....

In the arena, Zaar Ere held his ground tenaciously as he clutched at his Ruler Armament with great force as he shouted, “Jian Chen! You cannot harm me while my Radiant Saint Armor is up so don’t waste your energy! While I don’t know just how you are doing this, I do know that you won’t be able to keep it up for long. Just wait until your energy runs out, then you will lose!”

As if he hadn’t heard Zaar Ere’s roar, Jian Chen continued to hold his eyelids shut while twitching his finger. On that finger, a faint glow of azure and violet Sword Qi could be seen before it was shot straight toward Zaar Ere.

At the moment Zaar Ere movements were restricted, forcing him to brace himself with the Ruler Armament to withstand the attacks. Therefore, he wasn't able to move whatsoever and could only watch as the azure and violet Sword Qi drew closer to him.



Seeing the azure and violet Sword Qi, Zaar Ere felt himself starting to panic. Although he had confidence in his Radiant Saint Armor and his strength as a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master with a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, he couldn't help but think back to when this very Sword Qi had damaged Kara Ga's Saint Weapon. For the very first time, Zaar Ere felt doubt appear in his heart: could his Radiant Saint Armor's defenses be destroyed by this azure and violet Sword Qi?

Even as he had that fleeting thought for a mere moment, the azure and violet Sword Qi continued on, flying straight at his chest.

Without a sound, a small hole suddenly opened up in his armor as the azure and violet Sword Qi carved a hole into his body.

With a grunt, Zaar Ere could feel his body starting to shake. The moment the azure and violet Sword Qi entered his body, it had begun to bounce around inside. Each and every moment, Zaar Ere could feel that his organs were one step closer to being completely damaged to pieces.

“Ah!” Zaar Ere let out a heaven piercing roar as the veins in his forehead suddenly bulged. All of the Saint Force within his body immediately surged to wrap the azure and violet Sword Qi in order to eradicate it from his body.

While the azure and violet Sword Qi was weak, its power was still enough to cause Zaar Ere to be incredibly fearful. He used all of his Saint Force to intervene, but not only did it fail, the azure and violet Sword Qi continued to wreck his inner organs.

As the azure and violet Sword Qi bounced around Zaar Ere's insides, it continued to whittle away at his chance to live. Not only was a man's interior body their weakest point, it was also the most fatal area. With the azure and violet Sword Qi destroying his insides, in less than a few breaths, Zaar Ere had already suffered several serious injuries.

“Just...just what in the world is this force? Hu-hurry up and take it back, take back this force!” Zaar Ere had a terrified look on his face as he cried out to Jian Chen. At this moment, the azure and violet Sword Qi was bouncing for his heart, and if it were to get too close, then his heart would be instantly shredded apart like tofu. Even a Radiant Warrior would not be able to survive an injury like that.

A faint streak of silver light appeared within Jian Chen's hand as he slowly opened his eyes, revealing a tired expression. With a sudden sway of his body, he flashed in front of the beaten Zaar Ere and placed his palm against Zaar Ere's chest.

The very moment Jian Chen placed his palm against Zaar Ere's chest, the azure and violet Sword Qi that was causing havoc inside his chest instantly turned docile like a sheep. Just like how an obedient child would behave, it slowly moved out of Zaar Ere's chest and into Jian Chen's palm where it blended in with the Sword Spirits within Jian Chen's dantian.

Feeling the presence of the azure and violet Sword Qi dissipate from his body, Zaar Ere let out a sigh of relief before staring at Jian Chen with a frightened voice, “Just what in the world was that

force? It was so strong that it easily managed to shatter my Radiant Saint Armor!” He quavered.

“Zaar Ere, I’ve won this battle!” Jian Chen spoke with a smile.

Knowing that Jian Chen would not talk anymore about the strange azure and violet Sword Qi, he decided not to talk anymore about the subject and nodded his head sadly, “You’ve won indeed.” With that, the Radiant Saint Armor on Zaar Ere’s body began to disappear from sight.

It was only at this point that Zaar Ere’s face could be seen, a deathly white color. The clothes that he wore underneath the armor had already been dyed a bloody red from the attack of the azure and violet Sword Qi.

At that moment, the barrier that had been surrounding the arena suddenly disappeared. The elder who had been announcing the competition suddenly spoke in a loud and grandiose voice so that everyone in Mercenary City could hear.

“I declare as of this moment, there is finally a victor to the Gathering of the Mercenaries. With Jian Chen as the winner, he will also be crowned the King of Mercenaries and will be awarded with the glorious medal of our Mercenary City. He will also be awarded with an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill and Cultivation Method. Furthermore, he will also be able to enter the holy grounds to cultivate for half a year, and if his mercenary group is not already A ranked, then it will be automatically promoted to such a rank!”

Hearing the announcer's judgement, Ming Dong finally let out a deep breath of joy as Qin Xiao and the others cheered while Senior An hugged everyone in excitement.

The Gathering of the Mercenaries rewarded the first place person quite handsomely and even granted the winner with a medal that represented the honor of being the King of Mercenaries.

Upon hearing the first place prize of the Gathering of the Mercenaries, countless of Heaven Saint Masters had looks of envy on their faces.

An Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill was infinitesimally close to a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Not a single one of the Heaven Saint Masters outside of the arena could boast of having an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill; many of them didn't even have any Primary Heaven Tier Battle Skills. This was because all of the strongest battle skills were in the possession of the few strongest clans, so any Heaven Saint Masters without a background would already find it challenging to find even a Primary Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

But right now, an Earth Saint Master kid had somehow managed to claim the number one spot of the Gathering of the Mercenaries and obtain a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Thus, this made many of the older generation cultivators feel an extreme amount of envy for that battle skill.

“Ai, this Advanced Tier Battle Skill was far too easy to obtain. I

left my home to travel the continent for a hundred years, and the only thing I have to show for it is an Advanced Earth Tier Battle Skill. Just when will I get a Heaven Tier Battle Skill?” A white haired elder muttered to himself as he stared at Jian Chen with envy; he too, was a Heaven Saint Master.

“The holy lands, that is the legendary place that is said to house even Saint Rulers. I bet there would be no shortage of the rumored Saint Tier Battle Skills there, but I don’t know if that is true or not. Unfortunately, I have never heard or seen any information regarding it in my entire life.” Another Heaven Saint Master sighed.

.....

Jian Chen and Zaar Ere both walked through the Space Gate with a brilliant glow as they left. Just as Jian Chen disappeared from the arena, he saw a crane hairstyled elder standing five meters away from him with a smile. It looked as if he had already been waiting for him for some time.

Dressed in fine silk clothing, the elder stared at Jian Chen with a faint smile, “Jian Chen, congratulations on becoming the King of Mercenaries. I will take you to reward you with a Heaven Tier Battle Skill and Cultivation Method, please follow me.”

“Then if senior would lead the way.” Jian Chen cupped his hands together and followed the elder toward the armory.

On the way, the elder spoke calmly, “Jian Chen, the biggest

reward of being the King of Mercenaries is the holy land, not the Heaven Tier Battle Skill. The holy land is not only a sacred place to our Mercenary City, but to the entire Tian Yuan Continent. This is where Heaven Saint Masters yearn to be and where Saint Rulers roam about. You must cherish this opportunity since only Saint Rulers are allowed entrance. It is only every fifty years that anyone under the rank of a Saint Ruler can enter, but they must be the King of Mercenaries.”

# Chapter 341: Into The Armory

---

Hearing the elder's words, Jian Chen grew even more interested in the holy land. He wanted to know just what was inside that made every Saint Ruler crazy for it.

“Senior, could it be that the holy lands contains one of the legendary Saint Tier Battle Skills?” Jian Chen couldn't help but ask.

The elder only replied with, “If the holy lands only had a Saint Tier Battle Skill, then it was named rashly. There is indeed a Saint Tier Battle Skill within, but that is only one piece of the whole. Don't ask anymore about the matter, I won't be able to tell you anymore.”

The next step of the path was rather silent as Jian Chen followed the elder to a small pavilion. It was only a hundred meters in circumference and was ten meters tall. The entire building was made from bamboo and had a few scars on its surface, showing the toll time had done to it over the years. On top of the pavilion doors, a simple board was hung above with the word “Armory” written in fancy calligraphy.

Jian Chen looked at the pavilion with some shock. He didn't think that such a small pavilion would be where the “Armory” with the Heaven Tier Battle Skill would be stored—there seemed to be no sort of security here.

“This bamboo must not be an ordinary type of bamboo for it to

not be rotten after so long. If it wasn't, then there would be no way for it to withstand years of rain and wind.” Jian Chen thought.

The elder who had been leading Jian Chen to the pavilion suddenly stopped right in front of the door as he looked at it strangely. “This building has existed for countless of years. It was created when the founder of Mercenary City, Mo Tianyun personally decided to do so. To our Mercenary City, this place is a sacred place that is not lesser than the holy land.”

Jian Chen immediately felt a sense of veneration for this place as he looked at the building once more in a new light. This building right in front of him had been personally built by Mo Tianyun and so there was definitely a special meaning to the building.

“Ai, the years have been ruthless.” The elder let out a mournful sigh before going silent. Turning to Jian Chen, he spoke, “This is where all of the secret manuals are stored. I could only guide you here, the rest will have to rely on you.”

“I thank the senior!” Jian Chen cupped his hands.

“Creak!” Suddenly, the doors to the pavilion opened on their own, revealing the dim dark light inside. Another voice could be heard from within.

“Jian Chen, hurry up and choose your prize. Also, take off your shoes, it is forbidden for dirt to be tracked into the armory.”



Hearing the warning, Jian Chen was momentarily taken back. He hadn't thought that he would have to take off his shoes in order to enter the armory. Although he found the request to be weird, he did not hesitate and placed his shoes on the ground outside before entering the small pavilion.

The interior of the armory was exceptionally bright. Not a single speck of dust could be seen on any of the rows of bookshelves. Books weathered with age and simple materials were stacked on each shelves. These shelves themselves were quite mysterious as there was no wear or damage to them. Each one of the books on the various bookshelves were made from the hide of a magical beast and each were several inches thick in width with pages.

Taking a look around, he quickly came to see a gray robed elder carefully cleaning one of the many bookshelves diligently as if each book was a treasure that required an earnest cleaning so that no dust would remain.

Standing quietly behind him, Jian Chen spoke no words to the ordinary looking elder. By his appearance, the elder seemed as if he was incapable of any type of martial arts, but Jian Chen knew that he was no ordinary man. With an armory filled with Heaven Tier Battle Skills, there was no way the guardian to this place would be that simple.

Almost as if the elder hadn't sense Jian Chen's arrival, he continued to concentrate wholeheartedly on taking each book out from the bookshelf before carefully cleaning each page. As soon as the book was clean, he would put it back and move onto the next book.

The elder did not let Jian Chen wait for long. The moment he finished the entire bookshelf, the elder turned about and started to walk toward Jian Chen.

“This one is Jian Chen, I greet the senior!” Seeing how the elder was turning toward him, Jian Chen hastily cupped his hands together.

The elder continued to walk forward without looking at Jian Chen for a moment before speaking, “The Heaven Tier Battle Skill is in the upper levels, follow me.”

“Yes, senior.” Jian Chen hurriedly followed the elder.

“You’d best be careful and not damage any of the items in here.” The elder spoke with a calm expression, but there was an unmistakable amount of power radiating from him.

Promptly responding to the elder, Jian Chen knew that the entire pavilion was filled with things that this elder was especially fond of. If he were to cause just the slightest amount of damage, then there would be a major headache for him.

Jian Chen carefully followed behind the elderly man through the pavilion. His footsteps were especially light since he didn’t dare step too heavily.

Not too long later, Jian Chen found himself with the elder on the

highest most level. There was only four bookshelves here, but each one differed with the amount of books. Some had a few hundred, some had only a few dozen.

Suddenly grabbing a thin book, the elder handed it to Jian Chen, “This book has descriptions of both Heaven Tier Battle Skills and Heaven Tier Cultivation Methods. Take a look and then take your pick.”

Taking the book from the elder, Jian Chen began to flip through the pages. Indeed, what the elder said was correct. The book was a catalogue of every single Heaven Tier Battle Skill or Cultivation Method. This was especially surprising for Jian Chen, since he was able to see hundreds of battle skills and cultivation methods. He became tongue tied when he began to read through the list.

A Heaven Tier Battle Skill was a treasure to the current world. Each one was worth an immeasurable amount of money, but in this armory, Heaven Tier Battle Skills were almost as common as rice. If the sheer amount of these battle skills were to be announced to the world, then the entire continent would be shocked.

“Senior, with so many Heaven Tier Battle Skills, has no one tried to steal them before?” Jian Chen asked suddenly.

The elder gave a look of disdain as he heard those words, but he refused to say a word.

At this point, Jian Chen suddenly realized that he had asked an

extremely foolish question. Mercenary City had no one that would covet these battle skills and at the same time have the ability to steal them.

With no more questions, Jian Chen began to look for a Heaven Tier Battle Skill and Cultivation Method.

A moment later, Jian Chen finally decided on a battle skill and cultivation method. Without any further words, the elder walked to two different book shelves and took out two books before handing them to Jian Chen, “These are the items you want.”

Taking the two books with quivering hands, Jian Chen couldn’t believe that the two objects that he had just been given were a Heaven Tier Battle Skill and Cultivation Method.

Jian Chen had chosen the Heaven Tier Battle Skill called the “Nine Cloud Movement”. This was a Battle Skill that anyone could learn and did not require a specific attribute Saint Force or any other strict conditions.

The Nine Cloud Movement had a total of nine forms, with each form many times stronger than the one before. It was rumored that the very final form was capable of breaking the heavens and shaking the world.

Leaving the armory, Jian Chen followed the elder that guided him earlier back to where they had come from.

On the way, the elder spoke to him, “The holy lands will open in three days. By that time, someone will come get you, so it would be best for you not to leave Mercenary City before then.”

“Yes, senior.”

Without any further delays, Jian Chen and the elder returned to the halls where a single Space Gate was open for Jian Chen to walk through.

When he saw this Space Gate, Jian Chen felt a flutter of apprehension in his heart. Could it be that he wasn't in Mercenary City and was actually within a pocket of space?

Without any more hesitation, Jian Chen crossed through the Space Gate and found himself back within the plaza of Mercenary City. The only difference now was that the large arena was nowhere to be seen, leaving behind a giant flat piece of ground.

The multitude of people that had occupied the area before had long since vacated the area so not many people were in sight. Despite the competition having only been finished two hours ago, the announcements for the top ten had already been announced by a large white banner in the sky with everyone of the top ten combatant's names written in a fancy manner.

The number one person was Jian Chen with Zaar Ere in second place and Ming Dong in third.

“Ai, look! The number one person from the Gathering of the Mercenaries, Jian Chen...!” Suddenly, a youth discovered the existence of Jian Chen and cried out in excitement.

Hearing the youth’s shout, everyone in the area suddenly turned around to look at the white robed Jian Chen. Envy, jealousy, and admiration adorned the faces of everyone staring at him, and plenty of pretty, young females didn’t bother to hide their eyes of adoration.

Jian Chen was a handsome person with a handsome face, and so he was definitely a person that could lay claim to a girl’s heart with his appearance. Right now with the glory of being the King of Mercenaries along with the recent show of his strength, he had already become the shining white knight for most girls.

# Chapter 342: The Departure Of Ming Dong

---

Separating from the crowd, Jian Chen finally managed to get away from the multitude and return to the very first inn he had rested in.

Within the tavern, countless of men were chatting while eating their meals. The topics in every single group revolved around the number one ranker in the Gathering of the Mercenaries, Jian Chen.

“Who would have thought that Jian Chen would seize the first place spot? I’ve heard he only has a strength around the First or Second Cycle Earth Saint Master level. For him to beat Zaar Ere, a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master with a Radiant Saint Force, it’s almost inconceivable.” A middle aged man with a refined look and a well educated manner spoke. With a single look, the man could be taken to be a scholar.

“That’s right, I didn’t expect to see Jian Chen defeat Zaar Ere, it cost me 3000 purple coins! If I had known earlier, then I would have bet on Jian Chen.” Another doughty looking man poured a cup of wine into his mouth with an indignant face from the memory of him losing 3000 purple coins.

“Haha, young man, you’ve only lost 3000 purple coins, so what? Compared to those who have gambled away millions of purple coins, your loss is nothing but a drop in the ocean.” The scholar laughed.

The four other mercenaries sitting at the table had one of the men give a long sigh, “Ai, a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Even if I were to live out my entire life now, I would not be able to find one myself. For Jian Chen to be able to obtain one so easily, I am envious of him.”

“Big brother, we were just born in the wrong time. Otherwise, we would have been able to participate in the Gathering of the Mercenaries as well.”

“You wish! Do you think first place is that easy to obtain? Did you not see those that were far stronger than us participate and be eliminated before they could enter the top ten? Even if we were participants, it would be a miracle for us to enter the top hundred.”

“That’s right, we aren’t all that strong, so it’s best not to think about these things. The Tian Yuan Continent is quite large and has no shortage of geniuses. Each one has been specially trained since young, so their strength should be strong enough to become an Earth Saint Master at a young age. Furthermore, they have access to the most profound battle skills and cultivation methods. Did you not see that Ming Dong? He was already able to use an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill at his young age and yet he was still only third place. I’m sure that first place Jian Chen is strong enough to even fight against Heaven Saint Masters.”

.....

From the chatter of everyone around, the majority of the people were envious and full of admiration for Jian Chen.



But then, a sharp eyed fellow had noticed Jian Chen walking in before crying out in surprise, “Everyone, look! Isn’t that the winner of the competition, Jian Chen?”

Upon hearing his voice, everyone immediately stopped eating and swung their heads to look at where the man had pointed. Each one looked on in shock at the white robed Jian Chen. Within the previously loud inn, no one dared to make a sound.

Jian Chen ignored all the gazes on him, since he had no interest in any one of them. With that, Jian Chen left for the upper levels of the inn.

The moment Jian Chen disappeared, everyone in the inn immediately exploded with chatter.

“Jian Chen’s in this inn? Do you think he’s renting a room here?”

“Jian Chen looks even younger than I thought. With one look, I could tell he is from a large family with a strong potential. Not only is he young and promising, but he is quite handsome too.”

“At such a young age, Jian Chen was able to defeat the Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master Zaar Ere, his potential is truly unlimited.”

“The Heaven Tier Battle Skill and Cultivation Method Jian Chen

won from the Gathering of the Mercenaries surely has to be on him right now, how envious.”

“Pay attention to what you say so you don’t get in trouble for it. Do you not have a filter on what words you speak out loud?”

A few of the inn residents continued to talk among each other, even the busy waitresses hurriedly spoke to each other, “Hurry up and report to the shopkeeper! The King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen is in our inn, this is a great event!”

.....

Arriving at the second floor of the inn, Jian Chen immediately walked to where Qin Xiao’s room was. They had already prepared a private room where all sorts of exotic delicacies were prepared for him to congratulate him on his win.

Seated at the dinner table already was Dugu Feng, Tianmu Ling, Qin Ji, Yun Zheng, Senior An, Ming Dong, Qin Xiao, Qin Jue, and several others. Aside from them, the Grand Elder of the Tianqin clan could be seen waiting with a smile.

Among all the people Jian Chen was familiar with, all of them except Huang Luan had gathered here.

At the dinner table, everyone congratulated Jian Chen on his win; even the Grand Elder of the Tianqin clan had changed his attitude toward Jian Chen to a more respectable status. Even Qin

Ji and Tianmu Ling were given respect from him.

That was also because the three outsiders of the Tianqin clan, Dugu Feng, Qin Ji, and Tianmu Ling were all from three different factions with even more strength than what the Tianqin clan could afford to provoke. Qin Ji especially had a very extraordinary identity..

After the meal when everyone had left, Jian Chen and Ming Dong both returned to Jian Chen's room where Ming Dong spoke, "In two days, uncle Tian and I will go bring my father and mother here so I will be gone for some time."

"That is no problem, be at ease. In three days, I will be leaving to enter the holy land for half a year." Jian Chen laughed as he waved his hand in a casual manner.

Sitting by Jian Chen's side, Ming Dong asked, "Jian Chen, I've known you for quite some time, but I don't know where your family is, did you wish for me to bring some news to them?"

Jian Chen's expression immediately grew conflicted. Some thoughts hidden away in his brain were brought out by this question.

"I've left my home for a good amount of time by now, but I don't know whether or not my mother is faring well. There is also my elder brother Changyang Hu and second sister Changyang Mingyue who have both cared for me always. Changyang Mingyue surely must have married by now, what a shame that I wasn't able

to attend the ceremony.” Jian Chen thought dejectedly. At this thought, he had suddenly realized just how much he desired to return home and see his family once more, it had been far too long since he had left his home.

Seeing the dejected Jian Chen, Ming Dong had an indescribable look in his eye. From Jian Chen’s expression, he could see that something was weighing down on him.

Placing a hand on Jian Chen’s shoulder, Ming Dong spoke lightly, “Jian Chen, what’s wrong? If there’s any trouble, go ahead and tell me. I, Ming Dong, will definitely find a way to help you. If I can’t, then I will definitely ask uncle Tian to.”

Ming Dong’s words had shaken Jian Chen awake from his thoughts. Shaking his head, Jian Chen replied, “No, there’s nothing, I’m just remembering some old memories, that’s all.” Jian Chen needed power to deal with the Hua Yun Sect. Although he knew that asking Ming Dong and uncle Tian for help would easily resolve the matter, and probably touch upon the crisis Gesun Kingdom was currently facing as well, , Jian Chen did not wish to go about this route.

The Hua Yun Sect had forced him to run away from his home when he was only fifteen years old. To Jian Chen, this had carved an unforgettable amount of hatred for them into him. Jian Chen desired to finish this affair with his own power. He did not want any outside power to help him with his revenge.

With a mental sigh, Jian Chen took the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune out from his Space Ring and said, “Ming Dong, your house isn’t

that far away from the Gesun Kingdom, so I hope that during your return trip, you could hand this over to Changyang Ba of the Changyang clan in Lore City.”

Originally, Jian Chen planned on giving the Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill Nine Cloud Movement to Ming Dong to give to the Changyang clan, but after some thought, he decided to instead give them the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune. This was because a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was far too precious. He was afraid that if news were to spread that an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill was at the Changyang clan, there would be trouble.

While the Changyang clan was not weak, they weren’t strong enough to protect two Heaven Tier Battle Skills, especially since one of them was an Advanced Heaven Tier Battle Skill. So, Jian Chen finally decided to let Ming Dong bring the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune back with him because of the special characteristic of the battle skill: when activated, no person would be able to tell that it was a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. This was a battle skill that directly increased one’s strength; it was hard to tell that it was anything special, as it could conceal itself very well, unlike other Heaven Tier Battle Skills, which would display astounding power as soon as they were activated.

Ming Dong took the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune with a serious look as he spoke, “Don’t worry, Jian Chen. I’ll definitely bring this back to Changyang Ba of the Changyang clan.”

“Remember, you must keep that this is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill a secret!”

.....

Ming Dong's departure was sudden, by the second day, he had left Mercenary City with a respectful farewell.

At the same time, Qin Xiao, Qin Jue and the other Tianqin clansmen followed the Grand Elder out of Mercenary City. Although they didn't wait for Tian Zhou, the Grand Elder had concluded that Tian Zhou must have met an unexpected situation, and with only a sad sigh, he said no more about the manner. He knew that gathering tokens within the isolated space was the goal, and even if he found out that Tian Zhou had been killed by someone, he would not be able to find them.

Even Dugu Feng had said farewell to Jian Chen as he took the Ruler Armament along with some other elders out of Mercenary City, leaving only Jian Chen behind.

Because Jian Chen would be residing within the holy land for half the year, he had already dispatched Senior An and Yun Zheng on a mission for the Flame Mercenaries. They were to go to the Gesun Kingdom and ensure that the Changyang clan would be given assistance. Although the distance from here to the Gesun Kingdom was quite large, this would not be a problem for the two.

# Chapter 343: The Matchless Heavenly Enchantress

---

By now, the inn that Jian Chen was residing in had a long red banner waving overhead. Written on it in fancy calligraphy was a single line of words not only congratulating Jian Chen for becoming the King of Mercenaries, but it also notified everyone this inn was the inn he was staying at. Not only did it praise Jian Chen, but it also served to be an advertisement for the inn, improving its reputation. The owner of the inn had valiantly waived all of Jian Chen's expense and treated him as if he were the king of a nation. This type of respect was completely new to Jian Chen, and many times he thought that he had swapped lives with someone else.

The Gathering of the Mercenaries was coming to a close, making the topic of Jian Chen being the King of Mercenaries an extremely popular one. Since the owner of the inn proudly stated who was staying at his inn, the entire Mercenary City had learned that Jian Chen was currently residing at the "Take a Smell" inn. Many people began to draw close in hopes of observing Jian Chen or with some other goal in mind; therefore, many of them had reserved a room in the inn to stay closeby.

In short, the shrewd owner of the inn had transformed his inn into an almost legendary one within Mercenary City.

With his identity and his place of residence revealed, Jian Chen encountered many people arriving at his room, offering all sorts of invitations. In the end, Jian Chen couldn't help it anymore and barred his room shut. At the same time, he notified the owner that

he required a few days to cultivate and did not want to be bothered. He forbid anyone from disturbing him, else he would move inns.

The owner of the inn had been terrified by Jian Chen's words. It was with great difficulty that he managed to have such a deity stay at his inn. How could he let Jian Chen leave so easily? With that, he immediately agreed to Jian Chen's request and had some of the hired hands blockade the entire area for Jian Chen so that no one would be able to enter. Even a Heaven Saint Master was forbidden access, after all this was Mercenary City, meaning not a single person would dare retaliate.

Within the confines of his own room, Jian Chen poured all his efforts into understanding the Illusionary Flash. Although he had already grasped the basics of it, he hadn't mastered the introductory steps. The Illusionary Flash was exceptionally profound and was even more complex to understand than the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. After a few days, Jian Chen had made very little progress, but with his speed he still managed to make a significant advancement.

As Jian Chen's comprehension of the Illusionary Flash grew deeper and deeper, he began to feel that if he were to truly master the battle skill, then he would be able to flash forward large distances at a terrifying speed.

Three days passed by quickly. A member of the Mercenary City ruling party came forward to find Jian Chen before respectfully asking him to come out.



Jian Chen followed the youth to a plaza near a palace like building where he met another resolute looking middle aged man waiting for him.

“Honored Jian Chen, I, Elder Feng, have been commanded to guide you, please follow me.” The middle age man spoke respectfully as he led Jian Chen to a Space Gate.

“Honored Jian Chen, you must travel through this Space Gate to get to the other side, the elder is waiting for you.” The man spoke.

With a word of thanks, Jian Chen stepped through the Space Gate. Jian Chen already had a good understanding of Mercenary City, so when he heard that he needed to travel through a Space Gate, he no longer found it strange since he was used to it already.

With a flash of light, Jian Chen arrived on the other side of the Space Gate where a garden filled with sweet smelling flowers could be seen. Fifty meters ahead, two white robed elders were sitting there playing chess.

Jian Chen recognized both of the elders. One of them was the elder who had provided all of the tokens at first and had been the referee for the finals. The other member was the elder who had been cleaning the armory.

Taking a look around, Jian Chen realized that he was standing in an ocean of flowers where countless of butterflies could be seen floating around. The place seemed as if it was a rare paradise on earth. Aside from the two elders, there was no one else around.

Jian Chen had no idea what he should be doing, so he walked toward the elders slowly with light steps. Finally arriving close to the chess playing elders, Jian Chen waited patiently for them to finish without a word.

The two elders had serene looks on their faces as they concentrated completely on the chess game while completely ignoring Jian Chen's existence.

After waiting for almost two hours, the two elders finally finished their game with helpless expressions.

"So it was a draw again? Elder Hui, it seems that even after deciding on a chess game, a decision was still not easily made." The elder who had been in the armory laughed as he began to place the chess pieces back in a box.

The one called Elder Hui had a bitter smile on his face as well, "That's right, while we don't have much to decide between when it comes to winning or losing, it is still a tough choice."

Quickly, the two elders cleaned up the area before standing up. The elder who had been in the armory, cleaning, looked up at the sky, "It's about time for us to go."

Elder Hui nodded his head, "Then let us be on our way, youngster, follow us." He directed his final words toward Jian Chen.

“Yes, senior!” Jian Chen hurriedly cupped his hands in response. The two elders had to be Peak Heaven Saint Masters at the very least, especially the elder who had been a referee. Many times Jian Chen had fleeting thoughts that he was a Saint Ruler. To such a person, Jian Chen was but only a small dragonfly.

Hearing Jian Chen call him senior, Elder Hui laughed, “Youngster, you are called Jian Chen, correct? You may call me the Thirteenth Elder. As for the other elder, you may call him the Eighth Elder. There is no need to call us seniors.”

“Yes, elders.” Jian Chen cupped his hands hastily. At the same time, he had been shocked to hear that there was at least eighteen elders within Mercenary City.

Following the two elders through the flowery world, Jian Chen finally arrived at another large Space Gate several kilometers down the road.

At that moment, Jian Chen found himself in a desolate area where a large sacrificial platform could be seen with thousands of memorial tablet. By the platform, there were already eight people who were staring absentmindedly at the tablets.

From the eight men, there was a single middle aged man, a forty year old woman, an elder who looked to be a seventy or eighty year old grandmother, and the rest were all quite elderly themselves.

It was as if the eight people had returned to their original state

where their presence had been held back. Each one looked quite ordinary and did not have a single characteristic of being unique in any way.

“These eight are the elders of Mercenary City, each one of them holding a decisive amount of power.” The Eighth Elder spoke.

Growing serious, Jian Chen took a look at each one of them to confirm their identities.

“The way to the holy land will open in an hour, wait for now. Aside from us elders, there are still a few men from Mercenary City that haven’t arrived yet.” The Thirteenth Elder spoke as he and the Eighth Elder both walked toward the platform where the memorial tablets were.

Without a word, Jian Chen followed behind with a strange look at the memorial tablets and a curious mind.

At this moment, a sound could be heard from a long distance away as a cyan robed woman with a zither could be seen flying rapidly toward Jian Chen and the rest.

The woman was quite tall and her hair shined on her cotton robes. Her clear and bright eyes could be seen shining in a way as if they could steal souls. Her fingers gently and tenderly caressed the strings of her zither. With each step, her slim waist swayed to the side gently. Although her appearance was not yet clear to see, the light radiating from her could only indicate that she was a matchless beauty that could cause nations to fall at the blink of an

eye.

The woman gently walked toward the elders from Mercenary City, “This woman has come to greet everyone.” The woman’s voice was extremely charming and bewitching almost as if it was the music from the ninth heaven instead of being from the secular world.

Hearing the woman speak, Jian Chen instantly grew muddled in the head. he had never heard such a beautiful voice before. It was an unspeakable sensation that shouldn’t exist in this world.

Hearing the voice, the other elders slowly turned around before cupping their hands with a smile, “It has been fifty years but the Heavenly Enchantress still remains as beautiful as ever.” One of the elders said.

The cyan robed woman smiled, “Fifteenth Elder is too kind.”

“Heavenly Enchantress, it has been fifty years. You look even more beautiful than before.” The middle aged woman spoke as she looked at her with a breath-taking eye.

“Haha, the matchless Saint of the zither, the Heavenly Enchantress. A beauty that would bring the moon to shame and can captivate even the birds and beasts. The fairy of the Tian Yuan Continent with beautiful grace. With one word, hundreds of flowers grow ashamed of themselves.” One of the elders laughed.

Hearing this, the other men had small smiles on their faces as they too began to praise her.

“Heavenly Enchantress? Saint of the zither? Could it be that this woman is the very same Heavenly Enchantress spoken of by the second miss of the Tianqin clan?” Jian Chen thought with shock as he looked at the stunning woman with a great wave of emotions running through his heart.

# Chapter 344: Entering The Holy Land

---

Judging from the news given to Jian Chen from the second miss of the Tianqin clan, the Heavenly Enchantress was a legendary figure on the Tian Yuan Continent. She was capable of causing a nation to fall with her beauty that was deemed extremely unique. Her ability with the zither was peerless and possessed the Zither of the Demonic Cry that could bring any other expert of the zither to shame with her songs. Even her opponents would be entranced by the melodic songs and would have their souls erased before their bodies would follow suit.

Aside from that, the Heavenly Enchantress had prevented a war between two countries with a single ballad over the battlefield, causing the hundred thousand soldiers on both sides to fall asleep for three days and three nights; a truly fearful feat.

The Heavenly Enchantress had become a Saint a long time ago as well as being a Saint Ruler. A person like this was already standing at the top of the continent and overlook the others. What Jian Chen hadn't imagined was that he would be able to see the once in a generation Saint Ruler the Heavenly Enchantress. This was something that had moved Jian Chen's emotions.

Afterall, a Saint Ruler was right in front of him, even more than that, but this woman was a living legend.

The Heavenly Enchantress had her facial features hidden, but it did nothing to hide the outline and her body. Not only was she quite tall, but her beautiful body was indescribable. One could choke from her beauty, as it seemed as if she was not meant for

this world. And even Jian Chen had found it hard to move his eyes away from her the moment he locked onto her as if she was the only person in the world. The surrounding world seemed to have lost its color while she was the only focal point left.

Then, the Heavenly Enchantress had discovered Jian Chen's gaze and turned to look at him with a surprised look on her face as she spoke with a heavenly voice, "Elders, this must be the King of Mercenaries, correct?"

The Eight Elder laughed, "The Heavenly Enchantress guesses correctly, he is called Jian Chen and is our King of Mercenaries. Although he is only a First Cycle Earth Saint Master, his fighting strength is not weak at all."

Nodding her head, the Heavenly Enchantress spoke no more as if she lost her interest in him. Switching her gaze over to the memorial tablets, her eyes suddenly grew distracted.

Seeing just how the elders were speaking to the Heavenly Enchantress as if they were her equal, Jian Chen was astonished. He couldn't help but think to the words the Thirteenth Elder had said. The holy land was a place that only Saint Rulers could enter, and if one who was not a Saint Ruler wanted to enter, then they would have to be the King of Mercenaries.

"Then does this mean these elders here are all Saint Rulers at the very least? Even the one Thirteenth Elder who had been in the armory is a Saint Ruler too then." Jian Chen thought to himself in shock. For there to be ten Saint Rulers, Mercenary City was far too strong to believe then.



Afterwards, the elders came up one after another to introduce themselves to Jian Chen. As Jian Chen grew to understand their identities, he realized that aside from the first two elders, the rest were all affiliated with other powers but had a friendly relation with Mercenary City.

Right now, aside from Jian Chen, there was 26 people of both genders. The vast majority of the people there were past the age of 70, but there were still a few 40 years old men. Yet, the person with the most attention was the Heavenly Enchantress who stood within a group of people that made her seem as if she was the crane amongst the chickens.

Right now, there was still one more hour remaining when another person had flown through the air and joined with everyone else.

This person was a youth who wore an expensive looking white robe. His age was about 20 years old. He was also extraordinarily handsome on a scale far different than Jian Chen. However, while he was handsome, his face had a slight feminine aspect to it while Jian Chen had a masculine expression.

The youth had a smiling expression that emitted light as he walked towards the Heavenly Enchantress and cupped his hands together, "Heavenly Enchantress, it has been 50 years yet you've grown even more beautiful than before." The youth spoke as if infatuated with eyes that did nothing to show his adoration for her.

The Heavenly Enchantress' eyes narrowed as a look of disgust could be seen. Not even looking at the youth, she spoke, "I thank Bijian Wang for his compliments."

As if ignoring the attitude the Heavenly Enchantress was showing towards himself, the youth walked towards the Heavenly Enchantress with an infatuated expression towards her as he spoke once more, "Heavenly Enchantress, we've known each other for two hundred years by now, when will you invite me to your Three Sacred Isles for a tour? I've heard that the Three Sacred Isles is a paradise on earth without any strife and only a group of harmonious fishermen. This place has long since distanced itself with war as well. I've long since awaited for such a place, I, Bijian, have not fought for so long for such a reason!"

Each one of the elders looked on at this conversation with a helpless face. They all knew that Bijian had admired the Heavenly Enchantress. Back when Bijian had been a middle aged man, when he had came across the Heavenly Enchantress, it had been love at first sight. Using a secret method, he had managed to rejuvenate his face back to his youth so that he could win her affection.

Unfortunately for the love starved wolf, the Heavenly Enchantress had ignored Bijian's enthusiastic attempts in trying to win her love. As time went on however, she had eventually came to loathe him.

"My apologies, Bijian Wang, my Three Sacred Isles is accepting no one." Her voice was as cold as ice now.

As if encouraged, Bijian Wang had an innocent look on his face,

“Heavenly Enchantress, could it be that even I am an outsider too?”

“Naturally!” Spoke the Heavenly Enchantress without taking a second to think while simultaneously giving no face.

Seeing the icy cold attitude of the Heavenly Enchantress, Bijian Wang had a helpless look on his face as he faced the skies and sighed. Afterwards, he walked by the Heavenly Enchantress’ side without another sound. In his pursuit of her, even after so long without success, he did not give up.

At that moment, the space on the platform suddenly began to tremble as a large amount of energy could felt gathering slowly within.

“The time has come, the holy land is about to open.” An elder of Mercenary City spoke.

Everyone’s gaze was sucked towards the space where the energy inside was growing richer and richer in density as well as intensity. At last, the space suddenly seemed as if it was starting to distort.

A few moments later, the large amount of energy already gathered there had reached a limit, causing the space to rip apart to reveal a three feet wide door made of chaotic space that could not be seen through.

“The gate to the holy land has opened, everyone please walk in.”

An elder of Mercenary City spoke with a respectful tone before walking slowly towards the gate and then disappearing into the chaos.

Suddenly, the other elders of Mercenary City bowed towards the gate to the holy land before disappearing inside.

When all of the elders from Mercenary City had entered through the gate, the Saint Rulers from outside the city bowed respectfully at the gate before walking through it as well.

Jian Chen was the last one to enter, although he had no idea why everyone had bowed at the gate before entering, but he too followed suit and gave a bow to the gate before stepping into the chaotic gate to the holy land.

Just as Jian Chen had reappeared, he had found himself standing on a bright ray of light. The atmosphere in this area was far different than before, as it felt as if it was rather moist.

Taking a look around, Jian Chen was startled to find out there was no sky to be seen in this area. The entire area a hundred meters above was a single slab of stone that extended as far as he could see as if it was scooped from the stomach of a mountain. And right in the middle of the ceiling, a single crystal could be seen overhead with a dim light that seemed to fluctuate with energy.

The Eight Elder walked up to Jian Chen's side, prompting Jian Chen to ask in wonder, "Eighth Elder, is this the holy land?"

The Eight Elder nodded his head, “That’s correct, this is the holy land. I am sure that you can see that we are within the stomach of a mountain; the holy land is indeed here. The founder of Mercenary City, Mo Tianyun himself had created a single space within the city as a way to reach the holy land. That would come to be known as the gate to the holy land, and aside from that method, there is no alternative route to get here.”

Jian Chen took a look at the holy land, he had no idea that Mo Tianyun would somehow be connected to the holy land.

Just then, the Eighth Elder looked at the floating crystal suspended overhead and slowly raised his hand as if he was being attracted by a sudden force of attraction. Slowly, the crystal began to slowly float towards the elder’s hand before finally making contact with it.

Observing the item, Jian Chen could see that it was a conical shaped crystal around the size of a thumb and yet sparkled with a bright light from its transparent body. The energy that flowed from it was remarkably pure as if the entire crystal itself was completely pure without a single taint.

“Eighth Elder, just what is this object?” Jian Chen couldn’t help but ask curiously.

# Chapter 345: Cultivation In The Holy Land

---

“This item is something that is produced within the holy land. Every 50 years, another one of these will be made. This is something we call “Mercenary’s Heart” and is given to every single King of Mercenaries in secret every 50 years.” The Eighth Elder explained. “The Mercenary’s Heart is made of the special energy condensed within the holy land. If it is absorbed, then not only will one’s strength be increased rapidly, but it will also increase one’s spirit. As long as one is not a Saint Ruler, then their strength will achieve a great amount of progress and improvement.”

Handing over the Mercenary’s Heart to Jian Chen’s hand, the Eighth Elder spoke, “Take this and swallow it before you go off somewhere and refine it. You will see that you will make an extreme amount of progress.”

“Yes, Eighth Elder.” Jian Chen had no hesitation as he immediately placed the Mercenary’s Heart into his mouth and swallowed.

“Bear in mind, the Mercenary’s Heart must be refined within the holy land. If it is taken out of the holy land, then the energy gathered within the Mercenary’s Heart will quickly evaporate.” The Eighth Elder warned Jian Chen.

“This one understands, I thank the Eighth Elder for his warning.” Jian Chen cupped his hands in thanks as his heart was still reeling with shock. This Mercenary’s Heart was far too strange if it couldn’t be taken outside and was completely useless for a Saint Ruler. But the strangeness wasn’t all too bad. It was still

given freely as a reward to every King of Mercenaries which was coincidentally the only non Saint Ruler qualified to enter the holy land.

“The holy land has a total of four areas. In the first area, the time flow goes ten times faster than the outside world. 10 months in there is 1 month in the outside world. If you wish to try to refine your Saint Force or try to comprehend any Heaven Tier Battle Skill, the first area is your best choice. The second area is best for understanding the six elements of the world. In that area, one could accomplish twice the work for half the effort, making improvements to one’s strength quite rapid and effective.

“The third and fourth area is where the best part of the holy land are. The holy land’s most precious items can be found there such as Saint Tier Battle Skills and even techniques of a senior generation that is comparable to a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Those not of the Saint Ruler realm will find it hard to comprehend, and thus is useless to you.”

“The fourth area is where we elders of Mercenary City have left behind all that we have learned and realized over our years. To you, they are useless because you have no hopes in even coming in contact with it, let alone being able to comprehend the absolute profoundness of them. Thus, the area that suits you best is the first area. You should cultivate there for half a year, it’ll be the same as if cultivating for five years in the outside world.” The Eight Elder explained to Jian Chen. He had been the announcer for the Gathering of the Mercenaries, so explanations had been something he was in charge of. He had a responsibility to explain matters regarding the holy land clearly and did not treat Jian Chen with any special consideration.

After he had finished talking, the Eighth Elder left Jian Chen's line of sight, leaving him the only person around.

Taking an observation of the place around himself, Jian Chen had noticed that the other 20 elders had already disappeared from sight so that he was the last person here.

Not wanting to squander any of his precious time, he heeded the Eighth Elder's words and began to travel for the first area so that he could begin refining the Mercenary's Heart.

The very moment that Jian Chen had entered the first area, Jian Chen felt that the space within this place was completely abnormal that made his body feel quite unsuited for as if the area was objecting to Jian Chen's presence.

"This must be the first area where time goes ten times as fast." Jian Chen thought to himself as his feet continued onwards and took him to the abyss where he could feel the energy density grow even heavier.

As soon as Jian Chen had reached the deepest parts of this place, he took a look around only to see a cyan robed person sitting 50 meters away; it was the Heavenly Enchantress.

Standing from afar, Jian Chen couldn't help but look at her back which concealed not a single part of her stunning body.



With only a smallest amount of hesitation, Jian Chen slowly walked towards the Heavenly Enchantress. As he drew 30 meters closer, Jian Chen suddenly felt the energy in the area suddenly grow richer as it pulled towards the Heavenly Enchantress' body. The speed in which it was being pulled increased, and without any explanations, Jian Chen knew that the area the Heavenly Enchantress was in was the core of the first area.

Jian Chen stopped 10 meters away from her before sitting down. While he knew that the closer he got to where the Heavenly Enchantress was, the richer the energy would be, but at the same time, he did not dare to get too close to her.

“Senior, the holy land's Saint Tier Battle Skill and other cultivational insights left behind by our predecessors, why haven't you gone to find them?” Jian Chen asked the Heavenly Enchantress with confusion. With so many Saint Rulers here, a Saint Tier battle Skill and the insights from those of generations past was an undeniable treasure. But the Heavenly Enchantress had decided to come to this first area to refine her Saint Force, unlike the others.

But the Heavenly Enchantress continued to sit down with her eyes closed as if she hadn't heard Jian Chen at all.

After half a day of waiting without a response, Jian Chen had figured that an expert of the Saint Ruler would be extremely arrogant and would not even stoop down to a level where they would waste words with an Earth Saint master. Without bothering to ask anymore questions, Jian Chen immediately closed his eyes and began to refine the Mercenary's Heart.

“I follow the path of the Zither and use sound to fight. My road is different from the others, their battle skills and insights are unsuitable for me and provide no help.” Just as Jian Chen had closed his eyes, the voice of the Heavenly Enchantress could be heard ringing in the air like the sounds of the song of heaven.

Flashing open his eyes, Jian Chen realized that the Heavenly Enchantress had still not yet moved from her spot, but a cyan colored mist had blocked his line of sight.

Without even waiting for a response from Jian Chen, the Heavenly Enchantress continued to speak, “So you are the King of Mercenaries. I am sure you have already obtained the Mercenary’s Heart, it is a rare treasure that will surely bring about a great deal of change to your strength with fragments of the profound mysteries of the world inside it.” The heavenly Enchantress spoke with her eyes closed.

“I thank senior for her words.” Jian Chen cupped his hands together.

“There is no need to call me senior, just call me Heavenly Enchantress.” She spoke without the initial coldness from before.

Afterwards, the Heavenly Enchantress spoke no more even after Jian Chen had asked several questions. With a dejected look, Jian Chen began to refine the Mercenary’s Heart once more.

The Mercenary’s Heart was extremely magical. Absorbing and

refining the energy within it was fast enough for his speed and spirit to make leaps and bounds, almost as if the Mercenary's Heart was hiding some sort of strange energy that Jian Chen could use to blend into his own body and strengthen him. Furthermore, there were even some of the fragments that the Heavenly Enchantress had spoken about.

With one month inside the holy land being equal to 10 months in the outside world, Jian Chen had already spent two months inside before the Mercenary's Heart was finally refined. His strength by that point had made an extreme change, bringing him up to the Third Cycle Earth Saint Master realm and was already on the verge of making the breakthrough to the Fourth Cycle.

After this increment of strength, Jian Chen's spirit had also made a significant change. Compared to before, his spirit was three times as big as before, a drastic change that had made Jian Chen unbelievably happy.

And once the Mercenary's Heart had been absorbed, Jian Chen's mind had many different slivers of mysterious rays of light that were hard to grab hold of. These rays of light were seemingly the profound mysteries of the world, yet at the same time, they were also something different, causing Jian Chen to feel confused. Although Jian Chen could understand that these were the fragments that the Heavenly Enchantress had talked about, he still couldn't fully understand it.

It could be said that he had a mysterious treasure but was unable to find the key to unlock it and comprehend the secrets within.

Two months later, Jian Chen had opened his eyes once more only to see the Heavenly Enchantress still in the same place with her eyes closed as well. Standing up, Jian Chen had completely refined the Mercenary Heart and had now wanted to take a look at the other three areas.

Leaving without a sound, Jian Chen had arrived at the second area which had six different caves. Each cave was different and had six different types of elements; light, dark, fire, earth, water, and wind.

Deciding upon the light attribute cave, Jian Chen saw that the inside of the cave was extraordinarily bright, giving a sensation of dryness. It was almost as if the sunlight had been intensified within this cave, but unlike the normal rays of light, the light here was giving him a painful sensation almost as if the light was trying to kill him.

Within the light filled cave, Jian Chen could feel an abundance of Radiant Saint Force. Radiant Saint Masters were majestic within the Tian Yuan Continent since they could use the Radiant Saint Force to heal the injuries of others. Some of the stronger Radiant Saint Masters could even bring a person back to life and violate the natural order of the heavens. This type of Radiant Saint Master would be by no means a weak individual.

On the other hand were the Radiant Warriors who were given the nicknames of being undying. Radiant Warriors were filled with Radiant Saint Force and were exceedingly rare. Although they could control the Radiant Saint Force, they followed the way of the hegemon, which contrasted against the Radiant Saint Master's way

of the king. They could only heal themselves and could not heal anyone else.

Radiant Warriors were also able to use their Radiant Saint Force to harm others as a form as an attack. If used on their own bodies, it would heal them, but if used on someone else, it would cause damage instead. Thus, in terms of healing, they were not equal to a Radiant Saint Master.

As for the light attribute cave, Jian Chen could feel both the soft rays of Radiant Saint Force as well as the hard tyrannical ray of Radiant Saint Force. So with the harsh rays of light stabbing into his body, Jian Chen would naturally feel a sharp stabbing sensation.

Not only could light help men, but it could also kill them.

# Chapter 346: Saint Tier Battle Skill

---

Jian Chen was a Radiant Saint Master and not a Radiant Warrior in that regard. A Radiant Saint Master succeeded in using their spirit to augment and strengthen their control over the Radiant Saint Force in the world to heal those that needed it. A Radiant Warrior cultivated like any other cultivator in order to fight and improve their own strength. Spirit was secondary to them since it was absolutely unrelated to improving their strength. Thus, the light attribute cave would not be extremely effective for him since he wasn't a light attributed cultivator.

A Radiant Saint Master and Radiant Warrior had only a slight difference in name, but they walked two different paths of cultivation. One focused on the spirit and the other focused on Saint Force.

He quickly left the light attributed cave. Jian Chen knew that the light attributed element inside was meant for people to comprehend, but it would not serve him any use. Not only that, but he couldn't handle the painful stinging sensation.

Afterward, Jian Chen visited the other caves. Aside from some small increase in his understanding, since his inner Saint Force had no attribute, he felt no connection to any of the caves.

Quickly, Jian Chen arrived at the third area which was a single huge mountain wall. There were eight abnormally large caverns positioned on the cave walls. While most of the caves were located very high up on the wall, the lowest cave was only thirty meters high. The highest one was over a hundred meters up, reaching

almost to the top of the cave. The entire wall was as smooth as a shiny mirror with no footholds, meaning that those without strength would find it impossible to climb.

Above the entrances' to these caverns were a few words; the very first cavern had the words, "Second Heavenly Layer Saint King Yunyang Wudi's remnants."

The top three caves had the words, "Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King Tian Qinyu's remnants!" "Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King Xue Wuya's remnants!" "Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King Langsi Xiexun!"

Jian Chen's eyes swept across the caves with awestruck fascination. These eight caves all held the remnants of Saint Kings! The top most three caves had even housed Saint Kings at the Ninth Heavenly Layer!"

"Could it be that all of these Saint Kings were from Mercenary City?" Jian Chen muttered. It was only now that he realized the power he had seen in Mercenary City was the tip of the iceberg.

Mercenary City towered over the Tian Yuan Continent for countless of years as the pinnacle city. Not only did they have several Saint Ruler experts, but they also had some Saint King overseers. This type of colossal power was akin to a ferocious warbeast that no one had the possibility of killing.

Suddenly, Jian Chen couldn't help but think back to when he was in that isolated space collecting tokens for the competition.

When he had been in the shrine, Ming Dong's uncle Tian had been a Saint Ruler 5000 years ago. Could it be possible for him to have made a breakthrough to become a Saint King after so long? Or maybe even a Saint Emperor? Since he had been residing within the isolated space along with the place used for the competition, could he too be a member of Mercenary City?

Sucking in a deep breath, he slowly started to try and calm himself down. With a single leap, he landed within the lowest cavern.

The passageway within the cavern was quite long and curvacious. After walking about 300 meters, Jian Chen finally arrived at a dead end which was a single spacious cave around fifty meters in width. There wasn't any sources of light, but what should have been a dark cave somehow was bright. Similar to the light outside. But the source of this light could not be found, giving this cave another sense of mystery.

All around the cave were various paintings of men. Each painting was almost lifelike, and in each painting, the person drawn within seemed to be performing some sort of graceful movement.

Within the center of the cave, three men were sitting idly while staring at the paintings with a stiffness similar to that of a statue. Not a single hair could be seen moving, and within the three of them, Jian Chen recognized the Thirteenth Elder.

"Could it be this painting portrays one of the legendary Saint Tier Battle Skills?" Jian Chen thought. Walking toward the three men, he followed suit and began to stare fixedly at the painting.



But after half a day, he had failed to understand anything from the painting.

“Jian Chen, how did you come to be here? Did the Eighth Elder not tell you to stay at the first area to cultivate?” Suddenly, Jian Chen could hear the wizened voice of the Thirteenth Elder who spoke with shock.

“Thirteenth Elder, I was only taking a look around. I heard from the Eighth Elder that the third area had a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Could this painting be it?” Jian Chen asked. Since he was afraid of disturbing the other two men, Jian Chen spoke in a quiet voice.

“Correct, this is indeed a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Since you are here, I presume that you have seen the other caverns. This is one of the riches of Mercenary City. In total, there are eight Saint Tier Battle Skills; the equivalent to the Eight Senior Elders of Mercenary City. Each one of them reached the Saint King realm and these Saint Tier Battle Skills were created by them.” The Thirteenth Elder spoke.

“Thirteenth Elder, with these paintings all depicting a Saint Tier Battle Skill, I don’t see anything for cultivation methods, just why is that?” Jian Chen asked with confusion.

“A Saint Tier Battle Skill is different from a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. There are no Cultivation Methods, each advancement from this point on is dependent on oneself. The use of a Saint Tier Battle Skill is to draw upon the energy of the world. So to comprehend and understand a Saint Tier Battle Skill, one must be a Saint Ruler at the very least. That is because once one makes the breakthrough

to become a Saint Ruler, they will begin to understand the profound mysteries of the world and grasp the energy of the world. Jian Chen, a Saint Tier Battle Skill isn't something that you can understand right now. You are merely wasting your time here, hurry on back to the first area and cultivate. You are the King of Mercenaries for this time's Gathering of the Mercenaries. Wait until you become a Saint Ruler and come back for the next Gathering of the Mercenaries to enter the holy land once again." The Thirteenth Elder spoke.

"I thank the Thirteenth Elder for his kind intentions. I had only wished to see this Saint Tier Battle Skill, and even though I was unable to understand it, I was still able to further my insights." Jian Chen smiled.

"It is up to you. You only have half a year's time, I hope you treasure it wisely." The elder said before turning away.

Jian Chen kept calm and looked back toward the first painting. Now that he knew that these paintings were Saint Tier Battle Skills, his attitude toward them changed completely. He no longer looked at them with a simple gaze and instead began to look at them intently so that not even the expressions were neglected.

As he looked at each and every movement within the diagrams, Jian Chen would occasionally feel a small revelation appear within his mind. It was as if he were on the verge of understanding something but was unable to grasp the final step and grew confused once more. Seeing just how each one of these movements and forms had some sort of secret, Jian Chen was unable to completely understand just what was the purpose, leaving him

quite vexed.

With each observation, Jian Chen could feel his thoughts grow more and more chaotic as he felt his mind expand. It was almost as if his head had become a constantly expanding balloon, and since he couldn't bear the "air" expanding within, his head was hurting badly.

Jian Chen knew that this Saint Tier Battle Skill was the cause, therefore he immediately turned away and sat on the ground. He tried to think of nothing, emptying his mind of everything as he fell into a deep meditation.

After an unknown amount of time, Jian Chen had finally regained control of his mind, allowing him to open his eyes and stare at the painting once more.

Now Jian Chen had a better understanding of the first painting. Slowly, he could understand that the people within the painting were like the heavens. They were representatives of the world, their movements were fused together with the world. Each move contained a profound mystery of the world, and each strike contained a profound theory, but that was something Jian Chen didn't understand.

However, when Jian Chen had understood the first part, he could suddenly feel that this one strike displayed on the picture was quite simple and he could work it out. In one moment, he could feel that this move embodied many things; a simple strike that could have countless of variations. In another moment, he could feel that this move was akin to nature and harmonized the body

with the world before shaping it. In the next moment, he could feel that it contained a terrifying amount of power that could scare demons and shatter the world...

With such a simple looking painting, Jian Chen was able to understand so many pieces of information. If the other Saint Rulers were to figure out that Jian Chen was able to grasp this much, their eyes would pop open in shock, and they would look at him with inconceivable looks.

For an Earth Saint Master to gain so many insights after looking at a Saint Tier Battle Skill, was an impossible task. If Jian Chen were to later have a grasp on the profound mysteries of the world, then understanding this Saint Tier Battle Skill was not too far out of his reach. In fact, establishing his own Saint Tier Battle Skill wouldn't be impossible either.

As soon as this bit of information had traveled to Jian Chen's mind, his mind instantly grew chaotic once more as it swelled up, threatening to fracture at any moment.

Jian Chen immediately closed his eyes once more and forced himself to calm down.

After calming down, Jian Chen methodically inspected the paintings over and over again. However, the only information he could gather from them was the fact that these simple paintings seemed to be filled with many mysteries. No matter how much he looked at them, he was unable to progress. Thus, he could only stop here. If he tried to push on, he would get a splitting headache, his thoughts would go berserk, and his thought processes would

slow down.

“It seems that being unable to grasp the mysteries of the world causes one to be unable to understand the Saint Tier Battle Skill. I can sense that this move is filled with many things, but I cannot understand the concepts. Could it be that the profound mysteries of the world are not enough?” Jian Chen thought to himself. With one of the legendary Saint Tier Battle Skills right in front of him but he himself unable to comprehend the meaning behind it, left Jian Chen feeling unwell.

# Chapter 347: Leaving The Holy Land

---

Jian Chen left the first cavern, and visited the other seven caverns, each one contained its own Saint Tier Battle Skill. Without any exceptions, each battle skill was illustrated on paintings that required the cultivator to comprehend it by themselves with no instructions.

A Saint Tier Battle Skill was not like a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Heaven Tier Battle Skills were written using words, and required only a strong amount of practice in order to grasp the fundamentals. They also required time to initialize. A Saint Tier Battle Skill was completely different. This required one's own ability to understand. So if one was unable to comprehend the Saint Tier Battle Skill in their hand, it would be useless.

A Saint Tier Battle Skill was complicated and mysterious. A single Saint Tier Battle Skill could have hundreds of paintings, and each form depicted on them could hold many different mysteries. Some only had three paintings, but each one held mysteries that could shatter the heavens and annihilate the earth. When looking at the pictures, the people drawn within the paintings seemed almost as if they were alive. Each one carried a world-shaking power. If one didn't have a certain base level of strength, they would not be able to endure this incorporeal presence.

Even Jian Chen had felt an indescribable amount of power coming from the paintings, causing him to spit out blood. Even just the grace of the paintings was enough to inflict damage on Jian Chen.

After such an event, Jian Chen had a stronger understanding of Saint Tier Battle Skills. He knew what realm he was currently in, and that this Saint Tier Battle Skill was beyond his level. If he were to never become a Saint Ruler nor grasp the profound mysteries of the world, then the time he had spent trying to understand the Saint Tier Battle Skills would all be for naught.

Leaving the third area, Jian Chen arrived at the fourth. The fourth area was simply a large study room with a table and chairs. Bookshelves could be seen everywhere with books filling up each shelf, bound with the animal leather of magical beasts. There was a strange energy that filled the area attempting to prevent the books from corroding with time.

These books were filled with insights from the previous generations of cultivators. While Jian Chen wouldn't be able to benefit much from them now, he could still memorize them. Then, he would be able to think back to them when his own comprehension was better.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had spent three months within the fourth area. Jian Chen had spent the entire time reading the insights from every single area possible within the realm of cultivation. While it was of no use to him now, they would come in handy later.

During the days within the fourth area, Jian Chen had also tried to establish his foundation even more. The experiences within the books he had read were many, and the amount of insights he could still gleam from them were plenty. Those under the Heaven Saint Master realm would absorb the vital energy of the world to

increase both their Saint Weapon and personal strength, but there was a barrier from the Great Saint Master to Earth Saint Master realm. If one succeeded in crossing the barrier, then they would become like the dragon, but if they failed, they would degenerate to a cripple who couldn't cultivate.

Cultivating as an Earth Saint Master was an extremely simple task with no complications. As long as one reached the Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master level, one could make the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master by the usage of the world's vital energy. With a small step, they would become a Heaven Saint Master.

Heaven Saint Masters were able to fly through the air with the use of their inner Saint Force to levitate. With the world's energy, they could fly through the air without much of a drain to themselves. So, if one wanted to be a Heaven Saint Master, it was necessary to have a grasp on the vital energy of the world.

The last part he grasped was the threshold to become a Saint Ruler. Although making the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler wasn't as perilous as becoming an Earth Saint Master, the chances of making the breakthrough were many times harder.

That was because if one wanted to make the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler, they must have a fundamental grasp of the profound mysteries in the world. There were many secrets hidden within these profound mysteries and they were the reason why there were so few Saint Rulers among the Tian Yuan Continent. This layer of cultivation was far away from the level Jian Chen was currently at.



Leaving the fourth area, Jian Chen still had another month left in the holy land. During this final month, he had planned on going back to the first area to continue his cultivation for what would be equivalent to ten months of actual time.

Arriving at the first area, the Heavenly Enchantress was still sitting in her original spot without any signs of moving. Sitting ten meters away from her so as to not disturb her, Jian Chen sat down with two Class 5 Monster Cores. Although the energy within this area was quite rich, the energy within a Class 5 Monster Core was denser. Now that he was a Peak Third Cycle Earth Saint Master, he was only a small hop away from the Fourth Cycle.

“The energy within the holy land is different from the outside world. The energy in here contains fragments of the profound mysteries of the world. Although they are miniscule, they should still provide a large amount of help to you.” Just as Jian Chen had taken out his Class 5 Monster Cores, the Heavenly Enchantress’ heavenly voice could be heard once more.

Pausing in shock, Jian Chen didn’t think that the holy land’s energy would contain the mysteries of the world. Cupping his hands to signify his thanks to the Heavenly Enchantress, he put the Class 5 Monster Cores back into his Space Belt and began to cultivate once more with the energy from the holy land.

Suddenly, the first area’s energy began to rush toward Jian Chen in a frantic craze while Jian Chen continued to accept all of it into his body like water into a whale. At the current pace, his absorption rate was no slower than the Heavenly Enchantress.

With the help of the Sword Spirits, Jian Chen was able to absorb both the world qi and the energy within the monster core at a rate several times faster than anyone else. Ever since he'd first awakened the Sword Spirits in Huang Village, they had stopped stealing energy from Jian Chen without his permission. Therefore, the energy was now entirely absorbed by Jian Chen alone.

The Heavenly Enchantress' eyes flew open as she realized just how fast Jian Chen was absorbing the energy. After staring in shock for a few moments, she closed her eyes once more.

Half a moment later, Jian Chen's face broke out into a smile in the middle of his cultivation. As expected, he'd discovered that the energy from the holy land was indeed different from that from outside. There were many things he didn't understand mixed into it, like whatever was contained in the strange energy from Mercenary City. These were all impossible for him to comprehend. They seemed like rings of light that flashed in his head fleetingly, unable to be grasped. Such things were no longer strange to Jian Chen; these were precisely the profound mysteries of the world, the level that he could not yet touch.

This realization made Jian Chen happy. Spending the rest of his time in a deep cultivational meditation, he began to absorb some of the fragments of the profound mysteries of the world. Originally, he had planned to try and study the Illusionary Flash, but with this newfound discovery, he completely ignored that previous notion.

Quickly, Jian Chen had spent the last ten months of his time in the first area of the holy land. His strength had already reached the

Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master, and in those ten months, Jian Chen's comprehension of the profound mysteries of the world had substantially increased. His mind was like a world of spirits and the profound mysteries were like a divine light that would occasionally shine. Sometimes, a strange thought would occur in his mind, but Jian Chen had never been able to fully grasp just what the thought meant. At times, his thoughts would be vague as he tried to comprehend them, but they were mysteries for a reason.

With the help of the fragments he had already, Jian Chen was able to establish a strong foundation of the profound mysteries. In his current state, even if he were to absorb any more of the fragments, he wouldn't be able to understand the current fragments.

Today was the day that half a year had passed. The Eighth Elder appeared by Jian Chen's side and spoke, "Jian Chen, it has been half a year. Follow me and I'll guide you out."

Sighing with some regret, Jian Chen had finally recognized the benefits of the holy land. The first area was capable of allowing him more time to understand the profound mysteries. Now that he had a good understanding of the benefits of this place, he was reluctant to leave.

"If only I could just stay here." Jian Chen sighed at that thought. He knew that his wish was impossible, thus he could only follow the Eighth Elder and depart from the first area.

Seeing Jian Chen's reluctant face, the Eighth Elder couldn't help

but laugh, “Jian Chen, are you unhappy to leave the holy lands? Haha, this place is truly a treasured area if even Saint Rulers are attracted to this place so badly. You needn’t worry, with you being this time’s King of Mercenaries, you’ll have an opportunity to enter the holy lands once more at the next Gathering of the Mercenaries after you become a Saint Ruler. Each time the holy land opens every fifty years, you may remain inside for five years.”

“One can stay in here for five years? Then why was it that I am only able to stay for half a year?” Jian Chen asked with confusion.

The Eighth Elder laughed, “Only a Saint Ruler is qualified to stay for five years. Even the number one ranking person in the Gathering of the Mercenaries is only qualified to stay for half a year; that is the rules of our Mercenary City.”

Jian Chen could find no faults in those words. The holy land was their territory after all. Anyone that wanted to enter the holy land had no right to dictate the rules as they personally saw fit.

Afterward, the Eighth Elder took Jian Chen to a Space Gate and left the holy land with him.

# Chapter 348: Being Watched

---

Crossing through the Space Gate, Jian Chen found himself in the flower garden once more. Flowers bloomed everywhere within a fifty meter radius, and the pavilion in the center towered over him as if it were bathing within the field of flowers.

Jian Chen wasn't unfamiliar with this place, he had seen it once before. This was where he saw the Eighth and Thirteenth Elder play chess.

A flying figure quickly made its way toward Jian Chen before falling to the ground. It was a frail looking middle-aged man that seemed quite scholarly, one who enjoyed reading more than anything else. This man wore white robes with grandiose stitching and his eyes shone brightly with liveliness.

Seeing how this man had just been soaring through the sky, Jian Chen could tell that he was a Heaven Saint Master. Without any neglect in respect, the man cupped his hands together and spoke politely, "You must be Jian Chen."

Quickly swallowing the surprise back down his throat, Jian Chen nodded his head, "Correct, I am he."

"The elder ordered me to come and collect you, please follow me." The middle-aged man replied. With a wave of his hand, Jian Chen suddenly felt a formidable amount of energy envelop his entire body before he began to levitate through the air along with the middle-aged man.

“Could this Heaven Saint Master be able to control the energy of the world?” Jian Chen couldn’t help but think about this. Although he was calm on the outside, he was furiously trying to figure out how the energy that was enveloping him worked.

The man was only traveling ten meters above the ground, but the speed in which they were traveling was still very fast.

Not long later, Jian Chen and the man reached yet another Space Gate. Descending down to the ground, the middle-aged man spoke, “You can leave from here.”

Jian Chen returned the way he came: through the Space Gate. He found himself in the plaza where the Gathering of the Mercenaries had taken place. Suddenly, a person came walking out from one of the halls; it was the crane-haired elder. Handing him a badge, the elder said, “This is the emblem of the King of Mercenaries. It is made of a special material and has been interwoven with arrays so that when Saint Force is used to activate it, the vital energy of the world in a ten kilometer distance will be absorbed into it for later cultivational usage.”

Jian Chen’s heart leaped into his throat as he immediately thought about the Flame Mercenaries and Changyang clan. This would definitely be a great boon for the two.

Taking the emblem carefully into his own hands, Jian Chen left the halls under the supervision of the commanding officer and walked out onto the streets.

Jian Chen tilted his head up to look at the sun overhead with a happy expression. After spending a long time within the holy land with no sun, Jian Chen felt comforted by the sun rays basking his body in its light.

By now, half a year had already passed since the Gathering of the Mercenaries had ended and the entire Mercenary City had already gone back to its normal everyday life with the exception of the season being hotter than before. However, the steady stream of people going in and out of the city was still there.

Mercenary City was the holy city for mercenaries and merchants alike. Each of the four seasons was always a busy season and many people traveled to the city.

By now, winter had already passed and summer was fast approaching. With the scorching sun bearing down on the ground, it was already like the top of a burning slab of iron. Since Jian Chen had spent a long time within the dark and damp holy grounds, he quickly found himself dry and thirsty.

Walking to the middle plaza of Mercenary City — the plaza was now a four way intersection for everyone to cross — it was not as lively as it was half a year ago, but it still had many magical beast riders walking on the streets.

As for the founder of Mercenary City Mo Tianyun, his statue stood tall and stared up toward the sky with a real life like figure.

By now, Jian Chen had already stored away some fragments of the profound mysteries of the world within his head. The statue of Mo Tianyun was completely different before compared to his eyes now. To him, the statue seemed to be completely filled with an endlessly profound mystery. Even the seemingly normal hands of the statue were filled with a strange substance that made the statue seem more lifelike. At the same time, it seemed as if the statue was harmonized with the world completely.

After a moment of careful observation, Jian Chen finally regained his bearings and respectfully bowed toward the statue before leaving the area. His understanding of Mercenary City was growing more and more, causing Jian Chen's respect of Mo Tianyun to deepen as well.

Aimlessly roaming around the streets, Jian Chen finally entered an inn so that he could sit down and eat a meal. After residing within the holy land for so long, he hadn't a single thing to eat in ages.

It was already afternoon and past the regular eating time, so the inn was relatively clean with Jian Chen as the only customer.

At that moment, three other men came walking in before sitting down at a table. "Waitress, some wine and meat over here!"

Staring at the three men, Jian Chen looked back to his own table and decided on what to eat.

"Hei Zi, just wait until we finish our mission, then our mercenary



group will become a B ranked group!” Another man spoke to the black skinned man who had talked first.

The dark skinned man nodded his head, “Right, we were only a C ranked group three years ago. But three years later, we’ve accomplished many missions and our own merits aren’t bad either. Just wait for this mission to be finished, and we will truly become a B ranked group.”

The three men were seasoned mercenaries. While they ate, they would occasionally talk about other mercenary related affairs while simultaneously looking at Jian Chen every so often.

After some time, Jian Chen had ate and drank his fill. With a satisfied clap, he spoke, “Waitress, is there a room free to stay for the night? I would like to reserve one.” Jian Chen spoke as he placed a purple coin on the table.

“Yes, sir, we’ll prepare a room for you right away, please wait one moment!” The waitress retrieved the purple coin with a smile and immediately left to make preparations.

With a look toward the three other men, Jian Chen had a meaningful smile on his face as he walked over, “Fellow friends, what might your names be?”

Jian Chen’s sudden movement toward them had caught the three off guard, but they quickly recovered and had one man cup his hands with a smile, “This one is called Jian Hua, and these two are my close friends, Hei Zi and Bao Yue. I could tell that fellow

brother's Qi was quite unordinary, what might be your name?"

"I am called Jian Chen!" Jian Chen smiled.

Hearing that, the three men instantly grew shocked. With an incredulous look, the one called Jian Hua turned to look at Jian Chen with doubt, "Could you mean that you are the Jian Chen that won the Gathering of the Mercenaries half a year ago?!"

"I am he!" Jian Chen's smile had a strange look to it.

"Ah, so you are Jian Chen, how disrespectful of me! Truly disrespectful! Brother Jian Chen's name is a name that is as well known as a thunder clap to the ears! Who would have known that the three of us would be as fortunate to be able to come across brother Jian Chen today?" Jian Hua boomed outward with a respectful manner as the other two hurriedly cupped their hands in a respectful salute.

Seeing their attitudes, Jian Chen revealed a cold smile on his face, "Fellow friends, spare me your theatrics. Speak of your plans right now."

Hearing this, the three men looked at Jian Chen with shock and vacant stares. Shaking his crew cut hair styled head, Jian Hua spoke with confusion, "Brother Jian Chen, what are you talking about?"

Jian Chen snorted, "You three have been following me for a good

while, do you think that I wouldn't know? Speak of your purpose, I hate wasting time."

Still staring blankly at Jian Chen, Jian Hua could only smile as he continued to speak, "Brother Jian Chen is quite the jokester. How would we have followed you? This meeting was a coincidence."

"If my instinct isn't wrong, then you three are either from the Jiede clan or Shi family." Jian Chen's eyes grew cold as his sharp eyes pierced into them with his gaze.

The three men continued to stare blankly while Jian Hua forced a helpless smile on his face, "Brother Jian Chen, I'm afraid I still don't understand. Might've you mistaken us for someone else?"

Seeing how their faces didn't seem to be hiding anything, Jian Chen knew that asking anymore questions would be pointless. Without wasting anymore time, he left for the second floor of the inn.

Right as Jian Chen had disappeared, the shocked expressions of the three men instantly grew dark as they leaned closed to each other.

"I didn't think he would be that vigilant, he already spotted us from far away!" Jian Hua whispered.

"What should we do now?" Hei Zi asked.

“What else could we do? Let’s report back to the elder.”

Afterward, the three men placed a purple coin down and left the inn at a fast pace.

.....

Within a grand looking inn, the furious expression of an elder stared at the three men in front of him as he pointed and shouted curses at them, “Useless! Absolutely useless! All I see is a pile of garbage right in front of me! You’ve let the person you were trailing see you, just what use are you for other than eating?”

These three men were Jian Hua, Hei Zi, and Bao Yue. Each one of them had a pale face as they shivered in fear and didn’t dare to utter a single sound.

“Elder, this isn’t our fault, our target was already extremely careful and far too powerful. Otherwise, we wouldn’t have been noticed.” Jian Hua spoke with a quavering voice of fear in hopes of placating the elder’s anger.

At that moment, the doors to the room opened as another elder came walking in. Upon seeing the three men in front of him, the new coming elder narrowed his eyes and spoke, “Fourth elder, what happened?”

“These three pieces of garbage were easily detected by Jian Chen after his return from the holy lands! With their presences being

detected, all of our plans have now gone up in smoke!” The fourth elder exploded with anger as he swore once more.

## Chapter 349: A Conversation

---

Hearing the words of the fourth elder, the newly arrived elder grew serious as he whispered, “It can’t be, although we haven’t come across him before, he was still able to spot us? That is an exceptionally smart mind with a cautious character. Now that he knows we are watching him, unless he is sure he can escape our grasp, he will definitely refuse to leave Mercenary City.”

“But that’s just it! Our plans were to wait for Jian Chen to leave Mercenary City before we come and reclaim our items. But at the most critical moment, these three pieces of trash ruined it all! Now Jian Chen knows that we are watching him, he won’t dare leave the city now.” The fourth elder spoke.

“Ai, if I had known Jian Chen’s skills at detection were so high, I would have tracked him myself. Now that the situation is like this, it’s quite troublesome. If Jian Chen continues to stay within Mercenary City, then we won’t be able to make a move at all.” The elder spoke with a sigh.

“Third elder, you are the intelligent one; what should we do in this case?” The fourth elder calmed himself down.

The third elder’s eyebrows creased together in thought as he muttered, “This Jian Chen was able to become the King of Mercenaries with relative ease, a person like this is by no means ordinary. Since he knows that we are currently watching him, there is no need for us to be secretive about it anymore. Third elder, let us go talk with him and see if there is any way for him to hand over the Seal of Treasure Mountain to us. As for the death of

the third young lord, we can wait another day. At the very least, we can recover the Ruler Armament,”

The fourth elder nodded his head, “I thought as much. Ai, the family head was far too greedy if only he hadn’t wanted the third lord to try and take the Solunar Bow from the Huang family during the competition. In the end, we didn’t obtain the bow and the Seal of Treasure Mountain was lost to us. This is truly a disgrace.”

“Forget it, fourth elder. There’s no use trying to think anymore about this matter. Right now we should meet with Jian Chen and hope that we can reclaim the Ruler Armament. Here, eat this.” The third elder spoke as he handed a red pill toward the fourth elder.

The fourth elder had a lot of trust in the third elder, and so without any more questions he took the pill and swallowed it.

Afterward, the two elders headed toward the inn Jian Hua had explicitly said housed Jian Chen.

At this moment, Jian Chen was on his bed and was studying the Illusionary Flash once more. The moment he sensed the elders, he opened his eyes and stared at them.

The third elder stared at Jian Chen for a moment before paying a compliment, “No wonder you are the King of Mercenaries with such a talent like this. Jian Chen, we are from the Shi family. If our third lord Shi Xiangran has ever offended you in the past, we would sincerely like to apologize to you and hope that you do not take this personally.”

Since the other party had not been rude to him, Jian Chen returned the smile, “Senior is too polite. For such a small matter, I, Jian Chen, have already forgotten about it. As long as no one else looks for trouble with me, then I will not recklessly declare anyone as my enemy.”

The fourth elder nearly rolled his eyes at Jian Chen’s words as he cursed him internally. Jian Chen had killed their third lord and had also stolen the Shi family’s Seal of Treasure Mountain heirloom; therefore, it was only natural that the Shi family would chase after Jian Chen.

The third elder laughed, “Haha, brother Jian Chen is really courageous. I wonder if you are willing to return the Seal of Treasure Mountain to our Shi family? We should exchange our weapons of war for gifts of silk. After all, the Seal of Treasure Mountain cannot be activated without a combination of our Shi family’s blood and a special, secret technique. It’s useless in your possession, and it would make our Shi family feel extreme resent toward you. This will greatly impact your relationship with us. Can you please consider our offer?”

“Naturally, if you are willing to return the Seal of Treasure Mountain, then we will naturally give you fair compensation for it.”

The third elder’s words were sweet to hear and he held no ill intent behind them. Even his tone had been calm and cordial without any sense of anger.



Unfortunately, Jian Chen knew better than to believe his words and sighed in disappointment, “I’m afraid to disappoint seniors, but the Seal of Treasure Mountain has already been handed to someone else and is no longer within my possession.”

Jian Chen’s words caused the two elders to reveal horrified expressions as the third elder tried to keep the calm look on his face, “What? The Seal of Treasure Mountain is no longer on you? Is that true?”

“When I entered the holy land, I gave the Seal of Treasure Mountain to Qin Ji, so it is no longer on me.” Jian Chen spoke.

“You hoodlum! To give away such a precious treasure as if passing a gift, you... you ruffian! Are you not afraid of death? The treasure of the Shi family... just how could you give it away?!” The fourth elder exploded with a furious rage as he pointed at Jian Chen with a quivering finger. If it were not for Mercenary City, he would have long since tried to strangle Jian Chen.

The third elder’s expression grew dim as his eyes gained an unholy light to them. Then, while he was thinking, he suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood and began to write on the air with his blood, forming a complicated looking array after some time.

With an explosive shout, the third elder pressed against the core of the formation, “Seal of Treasure Mountain, return!”

As soon as he spoke, Jian Chen’s expression grew startled as he felt the Seal of Treasure Mountain within his Space Ring suddenly

begin to tremble and shake as if trying to separate itself from the Space Ring.

Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat; he hadn't thought that there would be such a summoning skill. Fortunately, the attractive force was not all that strong, otherwise Jian Chen was afraid that the Space Ring would be unable to hold it in.

Jian Chen clenched the Space Ring tightly so that the Seal of Treasure Mountain wouldn't escape.

The bloody formation slowly began to grow faint before disappearing from view completely. However, the third elder who had drawn the formation grew pale in the face. It would appear that this secret skill had used up a lot of his energy.

"Jian Chen, you cannot deceive us, it is still within your possession. You should hand it over to us so we may return home without any further conflict." The third elder's expression was weaker than before, but the honest face was still there.

As it was now, Jian Chen didn't bother to hide anymore secrets and spoke, "Seniors, you should go home."

"Are you certain that you will not return the Seal of Treasure Mountain? It will only bring you more trouble." The third elder asked Jian Chen once more for confirmation.

"That is not your business to worry about." Jian Chen didn't plan

to return the Seal of Treasure Mountain. In fact, he would rather give it to someone else rather than return it to the Shi family. He knew that even if he were to give it back, the family would still not forgive him. He was already well experienced in matters like this.

The third elder sighed before taking out an embroidered pouch, “Jian Chen, do you know what this is?” When Jian Chen didn’t answer, the third elder continued to speak, “This is a poison I spent a dear sum of money to purchase from a friend. Inside is what is known as the Hundred Poisons Powder. Its poison is extremely toxic and is the amalgamation of hundreds of poisons. It is without flavor or color and can be spread through the air. As long as this poison enters the body, then even a Heaven Saint Master will not escape unharmed. Aside from a specially made antidote, this poison is incurable.”

Hearing this, even the fourth elder had become surprised. “Third elder, you truly are a mastermind! How admirable, no wonder you had me eat a pill early, that was the antidote?”

The third elder laughed and nodded his head before looking at Jian Chen smugly, confident that he had power over Jian Chen’s life now.

Jian Chen also smiled as he looked at the elder, “Third elder, if you could tell me, am I poisoned?”

“Correct!” The third elder nodded his head, “Jian Chen, ever since we entered the room, I used this powder to send poison through the air, spreading it throughout the room. You’ve already breathed in the poison, but you weren’t able to detect it.”

Unable to stop himself from laughing, Jian Chen threw his head up carelessly for a moment before looking back to the indescribable faces of the third and fourth elders.

“Third elder, I’ve neglected to tell you, but my body is immune to many things. Your poison holds no power over me.” Jian Chen laughed as if he had shared a funny joke.

The third elder’s face looked as if he had suffered a terrible blow as his expression immediately scrunched up to look rather vicious and ugly like. Originally, he had thought he had finally cornered Jian Chen, but Jian Chen had somehow managed to cross the wall he had put up without any effort at all.

“Fourth elder, we’re going!” With a swish of his robes, the third elder returned the powder to his sleeves and turned around.

The fourth elder glared coldly at Jian Chen, “Youngster, you had best stay within Mercenary City for the rest of your life.” With that, the fourth elder left the building.

That night, while Jian Chen had noticed that there were no more uninvited guests, countless of hidden eyes had started to look at Jian Chen around the clock.

Jian Chen knew that both the Jiede clan and Shi family were now monitoring him in an effort to prevent him from escaping from under their eyes and take their Ruler Armament away with him.

# Chapter 350: Departing With Ease

---

As for the Jiede clan monitoring him, Jian Chen didn't care at all. This sort of development was something he had predicted a long time ago.

On the second day, Jian Chen left his room to stroll around the streets of Mercenary City. He walked east, he wandered west, there was no definite location in sight. But right behind him, several groups of men followed him from a decent ways away. Since they no longer feared being detected by Jian Chen, they didn't care for being stealthy.

Jian Chen led the group on a day long walk before finally returning back to his inn for the night. On the day after, Jian Chen left the inn once more. When he left, the attendants behind him followed Jian Chen thirty meters away.

Not even caring to look at the group of people behind him, Jian Chen wandered around Mercenary City once more. This time, staring toward the east while walking toward the west as if to enjoy the scenery around him.

Soon, Jian Chen came across a gambling house. With a smile that seemed ready to crack a joke, Jian Chen walked into the place with the people behind him following him in.

Within the gambling house countless men were enthusiastically making noise. Those who had won money were crying out in joy while those who had lost were all sighing with regret.

Jian Chen swiftly traveled through a group of people to an even larger crowd before blending in with the other gamblers. His figure instantly disappeared from the gambling house, leaving his stalkers to anxiously look around themselves.

Emerging from the gambling house, Jian Chen immediately switched streets and looked for a different inn to hide himself in.

But by that night, Jian Chen was found out once more as his stalkers surrounded the inn.

“What an annoying group of flies.” Jian Chen sighed to himself without any choice. With this group of people constantly chasing him, Jian Chen couldn’t leave Mercenary City. In the case the Jiede clan and Shi family leaders found out that he had left and his whereabouts, he would most likely be killed.

The next day, Jian Chen left his room and headed for the plaza where the palace was in Mercenary City. This area was where the inner city was connected to the outer road and the outside world.

Since Jian Chen was the King of Mercenaries, his special identity allowed him to enter this place without any obstructions. However, a middle-aged man came to meet him this time instead.

“Senior, this one would like to see the elders, would that be possible?” Jian Chen asked him politely.

The man shook his head, “Out of the question, seeing the elders is not something that can be so easily done. Your ceremony has long since passed, unless the elders wish to see you first, you cannot see them.”

Jian Chen had a dejected look on his face, but he asked, “Then would it be possible for me to leave Mercenary City via the Space Gate?”

“Our Mercenary City’s Space Gate is for entering the city which can only be used by the inner members. As for exiting the city via the Space Gate, you must have the permission of the elders, otherwise, even the inner members are forbidden from using it.” The man explained.

Depressed, Jian Chen left the area. If he had known about this earlier, he would have asked the Eighth Elder for permission to leave the city during his time in the holy land.

Wandering around the streets of Mercenary City once more, Jian Chen began to think of an escape plan. After he had used the gambling house to escape his stalkers, they were now cautious of a second escape plan. Even the distance had decreased from twenty meters to a measly five meters. Even more audaciously, the group were now following Jian Chen with an unbridled amount of arrogance, causing Jian Chen no small amount of annoyance. If it were not for the fact that Mercenary City forbade violence, then Jian Chen would have beaten them all up long ago for their arrogance.

Jian Chen knew that shaking them off at such a close distance

would be too difficult. Even if he were to use the Illusionary Flash, if there were any wind attribute cultivators who were Earth Saint Masters, then at least two of them would be able to catch up with him.

That night, Jian Chen entered a random inn and ordered a meal and a room for the night to rest. The ones that were still following him had stumbled in as well and booked the adjacent rooms. The other group of men surrounded the inn in tight proximity to avoid Jian Chen from escaping from them.

The following morning, Jian Chen left his room once more after eating an early breakfast. Then, he walked back into his room and began to cultivate.

For the next couple of days, Jian Chen hadn't left his room at all other than to eat a meal. The rest of his time was spent studying the Illusionary Flash. While the men outside his room still kept up a vigilant watch, they all realized that Jian Chen was most likely planning to stay where he was for a long time, so they were now relatively relaxed. They needn't be on guard as they were a few days ago, but they still maintained a strong watch over Jian Chen. No matter if it was day or night, there would still be someone watching, so it was as if there was a giant net being placed over the inn.

In a flash, ten days had passed by with Jian Chen spending most of his time researching the Illusionary Flash. If he could understand the fragments of the profound mysteries of the world within his mind, then his comprehension of the Illusionary Flash would multiply several times over. He had already mastered the



basics, allowing his speed to be double that of when he was in the Gathering of the Mercenaries. By now, Jian Chen was almost comparable in speed to a Sixth Cycle wind attributed Earth Saint Master. At the very least, he could survive against a Heaven Saint Master.

Of course, this was only just a conservative guess. He had only mastered the basics, so he could only guess how fast he was. Just how fast he was exactly, he didn't know since he hadn't been able to test it out yet.

Early one morning, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes from his meditative posture and looked at the blooming skies. Muttering to himself, he spoke, "It's about time to leave." With that, Jian Chen got off his bed and allowed a faint glow of azure and violet to be emitted from his finger. Floating overhead, it reached the wooden ceiling and immediately bore a hole into it, causing the wooden ceiling to shred apart like tofu. With a gentle push, Jian Chen removed the half a meter long circumference hole from the ceiling, revealing a single hole.

Seeing the large hole, Jian Chen cracked a smile before putting the wooden hole back in place for the meanwhile and then he left the room.

As per usual, Jian Chen walked down for an early breakfast. After finishing, he walked back to his room and closed the doors and windows. Immediately, he began to take out a variety of herbs from within his Space Ring to begin to paint his face.

Half an hour later, Jian Chen lifted his head to reveal a

completely different face than before. By now, his face was that of an ordinary looking middle-aged man with several cut marks and even a beard, giving him a fierce look.

Looking at his own reflection, Jian Chen nodded his head. Suddenly, a cracking sound could be heard as Jian Chen's stature suddenly grew thicker and even his height was increased. In no time at all, Jian Chen's physique had grown burly, the complete opposite of what he was before.

Adorning a black robe from within his Space Belt, Jian Chen once more cut off the long hair that had trailed down his shoulders, leaving behind a greatly diminished amount.

Once this had been done, Jian Chen was a completely different person in appearance with absolutely nothing that could link the two together. Even Ming Dong and Qin Xiao who were both friends with Jian Chen would not have been able to tell that this burly looking man was him.

Inspecting his face once more, Jian Chen made sure nothing had been overlooked before taking out the wooden hole cover from the ceiling. With a tiny leap, he immediately landed in the room above before replacing the hole. Closing the door to the room, Jian Chen walked outside.

And just like that, Jian Chen had been able to avoid the eyes and ears of everyone else. As he strutted his way out, not a single person doubted him, let alone looked at him.

As a result of the past few days, Jian Chen had deliberately allowed everyone to become accustomed to his habits. After his morning meal, he would shut himself up in his room in order to cultivate. Not a single one of them had figured that Jian Chen would change his appearances and try to leave.

Walking onto the streets, Jian Chen walked himself into a bustling inn that had plenty of people already inside. After ordering a room, Jian Chen disguised himself once more as a thin looking middle-aged man before leaving the building.

With all of this done, Jian Chen walked to a store where he bought a map and several other items necessary for living in the rural areas. Then, he walked to an isolated alleyway and changed his appearances once more.

This time, Jian Chen disguised himself as a prominent son of a powerful clan. With a wig on his head and a Class 3 Magical Beast, Jian Chen rode the magical beast toward the merchant's gate outside of the city where he took a leading position in front of a merchant group that was just getting ready to leave. This way, he was able to make the facade that he was the leader of the caravan group.

# Chapter 351: Hero Saving The Girl (One)

---

Half a day later, Jian Chen had managed to evade detection by following the caravan out of Mercenary City. Walking without leaving behind any tracks, not a single person was able to detect him.

After some distance away, Jian Chen split off on his own path, away from the caravan, and the moment he saw no one around, he dismounted from his magical beast and began to use his Illusionary Flash.

“Whoosh!”

With the Illusionary Flash being utilized, Jian Chen shot forward like an arrow, leaving behind only the faintest of his mirror image as he flew at tremendous speeds.

Running at full speed, Jian Chen’s ears could only feel the wind blow past them in a deafening manner, causing him to be unable to hear anything. Even the scenery on both sides of him was rapidly blurring away, allowing him to only see a mixture of color, nothing too specific.

This was the very first time that Jian Chen could use the Illusionary Flash to travel at high speeds across such a vast space of land, so the speed he was traveling at had astounded Jian Chen himself. With this speed, Jian Chen was certain that he could beat a Sixth Cycle wind attributed Earth Saint Master in speed and only a flying Heaven Saint Master would be able to keep up.

With this inconceivable speed brought to him by the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen could only feel an intense amount of satisfaction. He wouldn't fear even a Heaven Saint Master chasing him now, plus, his mastery over the Illusionary Flash was only limited to the very basics still. Jian Chen couldn't help but wonder, if he were to master it to an extremely high level, just how fast could he travel?

The Illusionary Flash was endlessly profound. Jian Chen had spent a long time just reaching a mastery over the basics. The difficulty as he grew to a higher level of understanding would only grow more. Ever since the beginning, when he had first started to learn the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen felt that there was a deep connection with space regarding the Illusionary Flash. This had meant that Jian Chen would need to understand the profound mysteries of the world, which by extension had also meant that until he was a Saint Ruler, he would not be able to master the Illusionary Flash to a high extent.

“It's no wonder that this was an ancient skill that the past races had deemed to be a supreme technique that surpassed most in its complexity.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

Flying southward with the use of the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen was trying his best to avoid the Jiede clan and Shi family's Heaven Saint Masters should they come.

Across the vast plains, Jian Chen's figure had turned into a missile that flew across the world. With the battle skill that allowed him to travel far beyond what he used to be capable of doing, the intense gales of wind had kicked up a giant dust trail. It

was quite a stunning sight, but fortunately for Jian Chen, there was not a single person around, so no one would be able to see it.

Two hours later, Jian Chen had traveled countless of kilometers away from Mercenary City. In the past, if Jian Chen were to try to guess how much he could travel within this same time span, he would never guess the amount he was traversing now.

However, in these two hours, Jian Chen's Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master level of Saint Force had already been halfway used up. The Illusionary Flash was a supplementary battle skill of the Heaven Saint Tier level and not a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Thus, the amount of Saint Force used for this battle skill was terrifying and Jian Chen himself would be only capable of keeping it up for four hours.

"Hou!" Suddenly, five kilometers away, a three meter tall black Devil Panther had discovered Jian Chen and instantly flew toward him like a speeding bullet.

Any panther modeled magical beast was especially adept in speed. Furthermore, this was a Class 5 Magical Beast so its speed was even higher.

Staring at the Devil Panther with contempt, Jian Chen ignored it and continued to blow past it with his speed maxed out.

The panther's maw bit at empty space before howling angrily and chased after Jian Chen. Despite it being extremely fast, Jian Chen was even faster, so the distance between the two only

increased more and more.

Another hour later, Jian Chen had traveled over at least a thousand kilometers away from Mercenary City. With no other choice but to stop, he looked for a safe looking spot to rest for a moment. Taking out a Class 5 Monster Core, he began to absorb the energy within to recover.

After those three hours of running, Jian Chen had already used up three quarters of his total Saint Force. If he didn't recover and he were to come across any unexpected trouble, he would be in no shape to deal with it.

After four hours, Jian Chen's Saint Force had been fully recovered, allowing him to travel with the Illusionary Flash once more.

Two days later in Mercenary City, the men on the watch for Jian Chen hadn't seen any signs of Jian Chen. However, each one had thought that Jian Chen was merely stuck within a deep meditative study. After all, men of their caliber would often go for days without eating or drinking in order to focus on their cultivation. So this did not worry the stalkers too much. There were also countless men surrounding the inn day and night as well. Even a housefly wouldn't be able to escape if they wanted, let alone a person.

At this moment, several mercenaries entered the inn. After a meal, one of them climbed up to his reserved room.

“Bang!”

Very quickly, a loud sound could be heard throughout the tavern as a furious person roared from the second story, “Mother f\*cking bastard, shopkeeper, just what kind of broken inn are you running?! Just how could there be a hole on the ground, f\*ck, I goddamn fell from the third floor to the second floor!”

Hearing the angry roar, all of the people in charge of watching out for Jian Chen were all stunned and instantly responded. Immediately running for the second floor where Jian Chen’s room was, they flung open the door only to discover that a single man was swearing furiously on the floor. On the ceiling was a single half meter wide hole.

“Not good, he escaped!” Everyone instantly grew pale as they immediately reported to the others before setting out to look for him.

Not too long after, news of Jian Chen’s sudden disappearance had been reported to the Jiede clan and Shi family elders. Immediately, the two elders exploded with rage as they rained curses on their men.

“Useless, you useless pieces of trash! Are each and every single one of you blind? You are all truly trash! With so many people watching just one man, he still managed to slip away from under your nose! Hurry up and look for him! If you can’t find him, then don’t even bother coming back!” The fourth elder of the Shi family howled.



The third elder was calmer than the fourth and looked down at the kneeling men in front of him. “You didn’t see Jian Chen leave or even when?”

One men instantly reported all that he knew to the third elder.

Hearing this, the elder hummed in contemplation. “It seems that this Jian Chen had altered his appearances and slipped away in secret. I didn’t think that he would have such a skillset like this, how extraordinary.”

“Third elder, then what should we do now?” The fourth elder spoke. The third elder had been the smarter one of the two and so he wanted to see just what new plan could be made.

“What else? Have everyone start searching for Jian Chen and send news back to the clan so they can send over some help. Then, have someone go and put a bounty on Jian Chen.” The third elder spoke.

“Jian Chen is the King of Mercenaries, if we were to go to the Mercenary Union and place a bounty on him, then wouldn’t the entire Mercenary City know that we are his enemies? This would reflect poorly on us.” The fourth elder was afraid of the repercussions.

“Don’t worry, fourth elder. Even if they know the city wouldn’t bother to interfere. It would be only if they had a connection with each other that they would interfere, but other than that, they

won't." The third elder spoke with confidence.

Putting his faith in the third elder, the fourth elder commanded to the others, "You've all heard the third elder's words, go and do it!"

At the same time, the two Jiede clan elders were glaring dangerously at the group of men in front of them. The ones responsible for watching over Jian Chen, "A pile of trash! Hurry up and look for him! Hire some men to comb the city, and if you don't find him, then don't ever return!"

"Yes yes, we will go immediately." The few men all spoke as if hoping to gain amnesty before retreating out of the room.

.....

After two whole days of constant journeying, Jian Chen had figured that he had already traveled over ten thousand kilometers away from Mercenary City and was now temporarily safe.

Within a small brook nearby, Jian Chen began to bathe himself. Then, taking a new set of clothes from his Space Belt, he changed his appearances once more to resemble an ordinary looking youth before setting out once more.

Because of the tournament, many people knew of Jian Chen, thus, he had no other choice but to change his appearances.

Afterward, Jian Chen slowed down his pace. From what he knew of his position on the map, there was another Second Class City a hundred kilometers away.

The sounds of battle could be heard not too far away. Upon closer observation, Jian Chen noticed that it seemed to be a battle royale with around a hundred ordinary looking people riding on horses. Judging from their appearances, they looked to be bandits. The opposing side only had thirty men who were all desperately trying to defend a luxurious looking caravan.

At this sight, Jian Chen couldn't help but think about the time when the Boundless Bandits had attacked him when he was escaping from the Gesun Kingdom. At that moment, Jian Chen had only been a lowly Saint and had been driven to the brink of exhaustion by a Saint Master. At that time, a Great Saint Master had been an unbearably strong expert.

But now, several years had passed. Even the strongest of Great Saint Masters was only a horsefly to him, but this still didn't prevent Jian Chen from sighing.

## Chapter 352: Hero Saving The Girl (Two)

---

“You Blackwind Bandits are too annoying! We gave you money already, why don’t you leave now?” A middle-aged man slashed at three of the Blackwind Bandits with a furious howl.

From the hundred bandits, one man who seemed to be the leader began to laugh, “I’ve heard your Lanming clan has a beautiful looking miss with a divine grace. Why don’t you deliver her to Dang Yazhai of the Dang family to be his bride? To your Lanming clan, this won’t be such a bad thing.”

“Don’t you even dream about it! The miss is the beloved pearl of our clan and the one our patriarch dotes upon most! If the miss were to have an accident here and now, then our Lanming clan would do everything possible to track down you Blackwind Bandits!” The middle-aged man roared, this person had to be the leader of their group.

“Hahaha, your Lanming clan is a clan we are well aware of. With just your Lanming clan alone, us Blackwind Bandits aren’t even afraid.” The leader of the bandits boomed with laughter. “My brothers, carry on! When the carriage is delivered to the Dang family, everyone will definitely benefit from this!”

Immediately, the morale of the bandits skyrocketed as they all began to fight even more passionately, bringing the thirty bodyguards under an overwhelming amount of pressure. Some of the bodyguards were slashed down by the weapons of the bandits and fell to the floor as blood spilled on the ground. Within a flash, only twenty men remained to defend desperately. As for the

Blackwind Bandits, it was as if they were on stimulants as their fighting strength and enthusiasm increased; each sword strike grew heavier and filled the air with Saint Force.

In a short moment, another ten bodyguards had fallen while barely a dozen of the bandits had died. Their casualties were very minimal, keeping an overwhelming advantage over the other party.

“You will regret this! Be prepared to pay the price, our patriarch will definitely never forgive you!” The middle-aged man roared fiercely. He was a Peak Great Saint Master, but at the moment, he was fighting two Middle Great Saint Masters who pushed him to his limits. With such a heavy battle, his wounds were no longer few and minor. Blood trailed down his body at a fast rate, and if this continued, he wouldn’t be able to go on for much longer.

“Hahaha, your words are too serious. When your precious daughter of the Lanming clan becomes the bride to Yazhai, the two sides will be family. Just how could you point your weapons at family, don’t you feel that this is a wrong thing to do?” The bandit laughed.

The middle-aged man’s face began to ashen as his eyes narrowed in hatred. Unfortunately, he was helpless at the moment. The last ten remaining men were all surrounded by the Blackwind Bandits and their power was not enough for them find a way out of this situation.

Seeing each and every single one of the bodyguards beside him fall, the man’s face finally began to show the tiniest amount of

despair.

“This old man will throw away his life if it means that you won’t be able to claim your prize so easily!” The man howled as the Saint Force within him burst outward. Abandoning all defense, he began to fight against three people at once.

“Quickly, he’s about to use his Earth Tier Battle Skill!” The bandit leader barked out.

Even as the bandit leader spoke, the middle-aged man had already turned to slash his giant sword at the man.

The two other Great Saint Masters that were fighting with the man earlier were clearly experienced with fighting the leader. They matched each other’s movements and tried to break the man away from his concentration.

“Bang!”

Following the loud bang, a crater formed right underneath everyone’s feet, causing all four of the fighters to fall down. Each one of them grew pale in face and began to spit out a mouthful of blood.

The middle-aged man tried to crawl up from the ground, but his wounds were already quite serious. A nearby bloody bodyguard gave support to him with a worried look, “Captain, are you alright?”

The other three bandits hadn't received any major damage, so they had quickly gotten back up. One of them roared out, "Hurry up and kill them, but don't damage the carriage!"

"Yes!"

Every bandit cried out in agreement as they flew at the remaining bodyguards with their Saint Weapons ready to strike.

Pch! Pch! Pch! Pch!....

Just as several of the bandits brought their hands down to strike, something strange happened. Every single bandits had their heads sent flying into the air before their headless bodies began to splurt blood a meter high into the air.

This sudden development caused everyone to become startled with some puzzlement. Not a single one of them had known just what happened and so they couldn't react to it.

Heads of the bandits continued to fly into the air as each bandit lost their head. As pumpkin sized heads filled the air, many of the bandits were left dead on the ground within the time span of two short breaths.

This bizarre event caused the remaining ten bodyguards to look on with eyes wide open in utter disbelief at what was happening right in front of them.

“Wh... what’s happening? Who’s... who’s killing them?” The bandit leader cried out in terror as he watched the headless bodies of his comrades rain blood onto the ground. His voice was quavering as he spoke, and of the hundred men they had started with, only three were left.

Suddenly, even his body froze up too as he spotted the terrifying image of a black robed person flying at him from the side.

The figure was a rather skinny looking youth who was wearing a black robe. His hair was extremely short and his appearance was quite average. If he were to be placed within a large group of people, he wouldn’t be out of place. Most importantly was the fact that he didn’t look a year older than thirty.

The leader of the bandits stared in horror at the oncoming youth before stuttering, “I-is it y-you that’s kil-killing... my men?”

Staring at the remaining three bandits and then at the ten bodyguards and the middle-aged man who was severely injured, the youth took out a pill filled with Radiant Saint Force from his Space Ring and threw it at the middle-aged man to eat.

Swallowing the pill that had been thrown into his mouth, the man’s face began to improve as he felt the effects of the pill. “This... this is a Radiant Spirit Pill!” In his shock, the middle aged man immediately cupped his hands in gratitude toward Jian Chen, “This one thanks my lord, our Lanming clan will definitely thank you.”



“That won’t be needed. I only came here in passing, nothing more.” The black robed youth that was Jian Chen stated.

The three remaining bandits all looked at Jian Chen with a stupefied look. So many people had been killed by this black robed youth within just a few moments. This type of strength had left them utterly confused and afraid. Even the Dang family wouldn’t have such a strength like this.

“R-run aw-away! He-he’s an Ear-earth Saint Ma-master!” One of the bandits stuttered with fear as his face lost all color. Even his speech had been utterly incomprehensible as he tried to run away. The other two men had been spooked at the mention of an Earth Saint Master and tried to run on foot as well.

“If you don’t wish to die then stand still!”

A loud command could be heard, causing all three bandits to nearly fall down to the ground due to the overwhelming power, but they managed to stand still in fear of making another step.

“Oh great swordsman, please forgive us! We have a family to take care of and feed. They are depending on us to take care of them, but if we are to die, then they will have no way of living!” One of the bandits cried with mucus dripping from his nose. Against an Earth Saint Master expert, not a single one of the three believed they could escape from him.

“You three come here.” Jian Chen’s eyes grew cold as he

commanded the bandits.

Each of the three bandits looked at each other with a desperate look before apprehensively approaching Jian Chen and kowtowing to him.

Looking at the three men, Jian Chen turned to the other middle-aged man behind him, “These three men you can take care of.”

“I thank the young lord!” The middle-aged man spoke out in gratitude before commanding the other three, “Find some rope to tie these three up, we shall deliver them to our patriarch.”

Upon this, the three bandits grew even more pale, but with an Earth Saint Master right there looking at them, they didn’t dare make any sudden movements.

Soon the three bandits were tied up like haybales.

“Guard Yun, what is going on now?” Suddenly, the soft sound of a lady could be heard from within the carriage.

The middle-aged man immediately spoke up to respond, “My lady, there is nothing to report now, a strong young lord was able to rescue us. My lady, if you could please come out to greet our benefactor.”

For a moment, the carriage went silent before the doors finally opened and a red robed girl stepped outside.

This was a beautiful young girl with a near devastating beauty. Her skin was like pure white jade and her eyes seemed as if they were capable of enrapturing any soul that gazed into them. From her appearances, she looked to be around 22 years old and had a scholarly look to her.

She hadn't differed from Huang Luan's appearance much, but the major difference between the two was that this girl was kind in nature in contrast to Huang Luan's crafty and headstrong personality.

Because of the frightful event that was happening to her earlier, her face was still quite pale, since not enough blood was reaching her face. Her eyes still had a lingering trace of fear, but as she looked around at the bloody landscape, her entire body began to tremble and grew even more pale than before, causing everyone to be worried.

This was the very first time she had ever seen such a bloody massacre.

Trying to force herself to become calm, her eyes quickly landed upon the black robed Jian Chen. Immediately curtsying, she spoke kindly, "We thank our hero for his assistance. We are eternally grateful to the hero."

Jian Chen waved his hand nonchalantly, "It was no bother since I was passing along the same route. I've come to dislike bandits as well. Since your group is safe now, I shall be leaving, goodbye!"

With that, Jian Chen turned to leave. Although he saw that the young lady was quite beautiful, Jian Chen was not a lecherous man. For such a pretty sight like her, Jian Chen saw nothing but trouble.

Not a single person had thought that Jian Chen would have been so blunt with his words and leave when he said he would. The middle-aged man hurriedly came up to block his path and pleaded with him. “Fellow hero, please take a look at the wounds of us guards, moving would be no problem, but fighting is outside of our grasp! Please take mercy and escort us to Thacia City, otherwise, if we were to come across someone with wicked intentions on the road, we won’t be able to defend ourselves!”

Jian Chen had some hesitation at accepting such a request, but in the end he agreed since Thacia City was also the same place he was traveling to.

# Chapter 353: The Lanming Clan Of Thacia City

---

When Jian Chen had agreed to protect them until the city, the bodyguards had been ecstatic. To have an Earth Saint Master join their ranks, their journey would be undoubtedly safe without worry or fear of anyone with malicious intent like the Blackwind Bandits.

Jian Chen had been courteously invited to sit in the carriage, and death be unto those who would ask Jian Chen to travel on foot. All of the horses that they had, had either been killed or had run away. Aside from the three Class 2 Magical Beasts pulling the carriage, there were no other horse to sit on.

Unable to refuse the hospitality and well meaning of the middle-aged man, Jian Chen chose to sit on the part of the carriage where the driver would usually sit to direct the animals.

“Little brother, the wind outside is quite big, you should head in!” The man smiled at Jian Chen with a polite air.

An Earth Saint Master would be considered a top tier expert within Thacia City, and the Lanming clan could be considered one of the two top clans since even their patriarch was an Earth Saint Master. If they were to lose their patriarch, then their position within Thacia City would irrevocably change. At the very best, the clan would be considered a high quality clan. There were already a few dozen of these types of clan in Thacia City, so it could be seen that an Earth Saint Master was a high and mighty position.

“It’s fine, I enjoy sitting out here.” Jian Chen spoke.

The middle-aged man didn’t bother to say anymore, if he were to try to convince him to sit elsewhere, then it would do more harm than good.

At this moment, a delicate fragrance could be smelled from behind as the doors to the carriage opened up, revealing the red robed girl who was walking out. Sitting next to Jian Chen on the driver’s seat, her beautiful eyes stared at Jian Chen as she spoke gently, “Many thanks to our benefactor for saving our lives. This girl is named Lanying, if I may ask for my lord’s name?”

Jian Chen swept a glance at the beauty next to him before turning back to look at the front. “You flatter me too much. My name is Yang Yutian.”

“So it is lord Yang. Where might lord Yang be traveling to, and where might lord Yang be from?” Lanying’s eyes stared at Jian Chen with her bright eyes, but when she saw the slightest furrowing of Jian Chen’s eyebrows, she spoke up in a hurry, “This girl was just curious, if lord Yang does not wish to answer, then please forgive this girl for being rude.”

Laughing, Jian Chen spoke, “The young lady is too serious, I’ve come from a far away nation to travel the entire continent and increase my knowledge and experience. The sky is my ceiling and the earth is my bed as I travel.”

“Then it is no wonder lord Yang is so strong with a long process of cultivation like that.”

.....

The carriage continued to move slowly as the remaining ten bodyguards traveled close by the sides of it. On the road they came across several ordinary mercenary groups who were riding horses. The middle-aged man had then spent a wealthy sum of money to purchase a few horses so that the ten bodyguards could double up on a horse.

Four hours later, the ten blood soaked bodyguards and the carriage finally entered the city. On the road, everyone had begun to notice their identities and began to talk among themselves.

“Isn’t that the Lanming clan? For them to have so many injuries, did a powerful faction decide to be their enemy?”

“The Lanming clan is one of the top two clans of Thacia City, I’ve heard their patriarch is an Earth Saint Master as well. Who could possibly dare try to provoke the Lanming clan and the Huo Niao clan....”

The black robed Jian Chen continued to sit on the driver’s seat of the carriage as the bodyguards nearby guided him while Lanying remained inside the carriage.

Suddenly, the sounds of frantic pattering could be heard up

ahead as a large group of magical beast riders charged toward the carriage. Charging ahead of them was an elderly man who was riding the Class 4 Magical Beast, Storm Wolf.

The moment the middle-aged man saw the elder, an immediate smile greeted his face as he cried out, “It’s the patriarch! The patriarch is here!”

The patriarch of the Lanming clan quickly reached the entire group, causing the entire group of bodyguards to salute, “We greet the patriarch!”

Without even glancing at them, he flew off of his mount with an anxious expression and cried out loud with an anxious worry, “Ying’er, Ying’er! Are you alright, Ying’er!”

The doors to the carriage opened as the red robed Lanying walked out. When she saw the elder, she immediately began to cry out with tears, “Grandfather!”

Seeing that Lanying was completely unharmed, the elder’s face immediately slackened as he jumped to hug Lanying, “It’s okay then. Everything is fine now, Ying’er. This was your grandfather’s fault, I didn’t hire a good enough bodyguard and so my daughter has suffered.”

This elder was the patriarch of the Lanming clan and doted upon his granddaughter. She was the pearl of the clan and someone he had always protected. When he heard that several bloody bodyguards of the Lanming clan had appeared by the city gates, he



had instantly guessed that the bodyguards that were protecting Lanying had been ambushed. In fear for the life of his granddaughter, he had immediately ran for the gates as if he were on fire.

As he consoled his granddaughter, he turned his icy eyes toward the middle-aged man who was in charge of protecting her. “Guard Yun, just what in the world happened on the road? Who would dare cross paths with our Lanming clan?”

“Patriarch, we had encountered the Blackwind Bandits who had far outmatched our strengths. If it were not for lord Yang who was passing by in our time of need, then I’m afraid we wouldn’t have been able to come back to report to you.” Guard Yun spoke with regret.

Hearing that, the patriarch of the Lanming clan turned to look at the cross-legged Jian Chen on the carriage as if to quickly measure him up. Then, he cupped his hands together, “I thank little brother for his assistance. My Lanming clan will be sure to reward you.”

Jian Chen laughed, but returned the polite gesture, “Patriarch is too kind, but your thanks will be unneeded. This one was only there by coincidence.”

“Little brother here has saved the life of my Lanying, this is something my Lanming clan will never forget. If you could come by our Lanming clan and be our guest, it would be my greatest honor to receive you.” The patriarch spoke earnestly.

For a moment, Jian Chen hesitated, but in the end he replied with a smile, “Then I’ll be troubling you for a place to stay.”

“Trouble? It’s no trouble at all!” The patriarch waved his hand with a merry laugh.

At that moment, guard Yun pointed at the three firmly wrapped up bandits and spoke to the patriarch, “Patriarch, these three were the ringleaders of the Blackwind Bandits. Lord Yang was the one who captured them and they now await your verdict!”

The three bandits had their mouths wrapped up so all they could say were muffled cries of forgiveness as they pleaded at the patriarch’s feet.

The patriarch’s eyes grew cold as he ordered, “Take them back first.”

.....

Traveling to the north eastern part of Thacia City, the group soon reached a large and expansive house that was extraordinarily pretty. Even the decorations added to its beauty as the patriarch led Jian Chen to the receiving halls where they began to talk while the patriarch slyly tried to figure just what identity he had.

Jian Chen calmly answered each and every question the patriarch had, but when it came to answers regarding himself, he

had naturally answered with what he had told Lanying.

Jian Chen had even masked his aura so that the patriarch would be unable to ascertain Jian Chen's true strength. However, the guard Yun had guaranteed that Jian Chen was an Earth Saint Master, so the patriarch had been extremely courteous without bearing any tint of arrogance.

Then, Jian Chen changed the topic by asking, "Patriarch, might you have heard of something called the Space Gate?"

"Space Gate? What is that?" The patriarch was confused, clearly not understanding what that was.

A look of dejection could be seen on Jian Chen's face. His purpose on coming to the Lanming clan was to find news if there was a nearby Space Gate. Since this place was extremely far away from the Gesun Kingdom, he had wanted to travel via Space Gate to shorten the trip. Otherwise, even if he were to use the Illusionary Flash, the journey would be extremely long and the Saint Force consumption would be unbearably high.

Back when he was leaving the Blue Wind Kingdom, the relations between the Gesun Kingdom and its neighbors had already been extremely tense. Two years had passed and he didn't know what the current state was or if war had already broke out. Unfortunately the place he was in right now was too far away to hear news of the Gesun Kingdom. After all, the Gesun Kingdom was rather small, and the amount of kingdoms within the Tian Yuan Continent numbered over the hundreds. Even if one were to be extinguished, the rest of the continent would still carry on.

That night, Jian Chen and the rest of the high ranking members of the Lanming clan dined on fine delicacies. Right now the Lanming clan was enthusiastically talking to their new guest while at the same time in a closed off area, another group of high ranking members were talking secretly.

“Father, I don’t find this method appropriate. We don’t know anything about the identity of this Yang Yutian and have only come to know him for a small amount of time so we have no idea of even his personality. Just how can we so easily betroth Ying’er to him, we cannot be careless about this.” A middle-aged man said, this was Lanying’s father.

“Patriarch, that man is an Earth Saint Master. While his appearances are rather average, if he was able to reach the Earth Saint Master realm by the age of thirty, that means his potential is unlimited. It is possible that he could make the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master soon. In the case that we have the support of a Heaven Saint Master, then our clan would undoubtedly become stronger.”

## Chapter 354: Class 6 Magical Beast

---

“Langen’er, your way of thinking is far too simple. We don’t understand this Yang Yutian at all. If he has a strong background, then this would certainly bode well for our Lanming clan. But you didn’t think this through, in the case that this Yang Yutian has offended a terrible enemy, then our Lanmin will be dragged into this situation. Although our Lanming clan is extremely high in position in regards to Thacia City, that is still a small area in comparison to the Tian Yuan Continent where we are nothing more than an insect to be stamped on. We simply cannot afford to be caught up in any trouble, so I do not approve of betting on Lanying’s happiness for this.”

“Your words have merit; the identity of this Yang Yutian is still unclear. Right now, we are unable to predict whether or not this betrothal will bring fortune or destruction, this is far too risky.”

“Don’t think of this situation so pessimistically, as the proverbs say, ‘To find treasure, you must take hold of it from the jaws of trouble.’ Just how do you expect to catch the cub of a tiger without ever entering the cave? If we do not take this risk, our Lanming clan will forever be holed up within this small Thacia City. This is an opportunity for our clan. Young individuals with a strength like this are rare to see on the continent, but each one of them are unparalleled geniuses with a future like no other. This is the Lanming clan’s chance to rise.”

.....

Several men stood around in a circle as they each debated about

the matter of betrothing Lanying to Jian Chen. Some were in favor of this idea, some were not. But each one of them had a logical explanation for their reasons, so even after an entire day, they had not reached a conclusion.

“That’s enough. Everyone please settle down, we are getting nowhere with this. Why don’t we listen to the patriarch’s words?” A man spoke.

Immediately, everyone’s eyes turned to look at the patriarch of the Lanming clan.

The patriarch looked at everyone with an expressionless face for a moment before speaking, “Each and every single one of you should think about it for a moment. Do you really think an Earth Saint Master would be that easy to rope in? This youth is a strong individual with a proud air. Although he is undoubtedly not a low ranking figure, he is also not a person that our small Lanming clan would be able to grab hold of. We don’t even know how long he will stay in our Thacia City; but that’s enough. We shall talk no more about this. I shall take the matter in my own hands, if you still have enough time to think, then think about what action we shall take toward the Blackwind Bandits. Hmph, to dare move against our precious pearl, if we don’t take action against these bandits, I would be ashamed to continue living in Thacia City.”

“Yes, patriarch!” Everyone spoke up at once. The patriarch’s might within the clan was far too high, and when he spoke, not a single one would dare to not listen.

.....

The next morning, Jian Chen told some servants of the Lanming clan before heading out of the clan compound and walking out onto the streets to roam around the city.

Thacia City was a Second Class City, so the amount of people walking in and out was quite high. The city streets were filled with richly dressed people as well as many different burly looking mercenaries. The scars on the streets were remnants from when the carriages rolled over it, showing what state the city was in.

“Out of the way, everyone get out of the way!” Suddenly, a group of twenty mercenaries on mounts flew out from behind and continued to run like the wind much to the amazement of everyone watching.

“That has to be the Black Wolf Mercenaries! Seeing how much of a hurry they’re in, something must have happened to them.” A bystander spoke up to the person next to him.

“Don’t you know? Yesterday night, a piece of information could be heard. According to these rumors, a Class 6 Magical beast was spotted 500 kilometers away on Thousand Poison Valley. While it’s heavily injured, it’s fighting strength is still stronger than that of a Class 5 magical Beast. With the Black Wolf Mercenaries running like this, I’m sure it’s because they tried to kill it. Whoever could kill a Class 6 Magical beast would definitely earn a plentiful profit.” The other person spoke.

“You jest! Saying there’s a Class 6 Magical Beast that’s heavily

injured, just where do you get off?” The first person cried out in doubt.

The mercenary had a helpless look on his face, “Despite it being an injured magical beast, it’s still quite hard to deal with. With my trifling Saint Master strength, it’d be impossible for me to even run away. I’ll sit this situation out, otherwise, I won’t live for long.”

From not too far away, Jian Chen’s ears began to prick up at the sound of the topic of the two men. Walking toward them, he spoke, “Fellow brothers, is what you say about this Class 6 Magical Beast true?”

“Of course it’s true. I came from that place last night, a large group of people have already gathered there. Practically everyone is a Great Saint Master with just a few Earth Saint Master. Do you think this is false?” The second mercenary spoke with a face that made it seem unlikely to be untruthful.

At that moment, another hurried cry could be heard from ahead as a group of thirty began to rush to the outsides of the city gates while on horseback.

“That must be the Golden Unicorn Mercenaries, if you look up front, those are the captain and vice captains. It seems like they’re heading for the Thousand Poison Valley.”

Just as the Golden Unicorn Mercenaries rushed out, another group of men eagerly followed.



“That’s one of the strongest clans of Thacia City, the Huo Niao clan.” Another person cried out in shock.

“Even the patriarch of the clan is there, he’s one of the strongest three men in Thacia City. For an Earth Saint Master like him to run out in such a hurry, could something big have happened?” Another person spoke out.

Not even seconds after the Huo Niao clan had left, another group of horseback members flew towards the gate in a hurry. When Jian Chen saw these men, he had a shocked look on his face. This was because the person leading up front was the patriarch of the Lanming clan.

The moment the Lanming clan were about to run past Jian Chen, he walked out to block their path. Just as the Lanming clan were about to cry out in fury, when they saw it was Jian Chen that had blocked them, the angry scowls on their faces disappeared in an instant and were replaced with smiles and polite greetings.

Even the patriarch had a smile on his face, “Little brother, so you’re here?”

“Patriarch, seeing how much of a hurry you are in, did something happen?” Jian Chen asked.

The patriarch nodded his head, “Correct, yesterday night we came across some news that a heavily injured Class 6 Magical Beast appeared at Thousand Poison Valley 500 kilometers away. We’re

on our way to that area now in fact. Earlier this morning, we had sent someone to invite you over, but there was no sign of you. With little time to spare, we could only have our servants tell you the message when you returned so that you could catch up with us later. Little brother, are you interested in coming with us to the Thousand Poison Valley?”

“So this was the reason?” Jian Chen muttered before finally replying to the patriarch’s question.

Afterward, another person let Jian Chen ride his horse before sharing a horse with another person.

Without any more words, the group began to travel toward the Thousand Poison Valley, leaving behind a group of confused mercenaries who stared at the receding figure of Jian Chen. “Just who is that person to have even the patriarch of the Lanming clan be so polite to him? Ai, if I had known earlier I would have tried to be friendlier with him.”

While Jian Chen and the Lanming clan continued to travel toward the valley in a mad rush, the patriarch continued to explain to Jian Chen all of the information he knew.

With Class 3 Magical Beast mounts, everyone quickly exited the city and continued on the roads with haste. After an hour, they had finally reached the place where they could see a gigantic mountain peak whose peaks were hidden by the clouds and fog. Each mountain peak was around 4000 meters tall, and a faint layer of poisonous fog could be seen swirling around.

On the outskirts of the valley, a group of a thousand people were already gathered densely on a flat clearing with tents everywhere.

The Lanming clan stopped a little ways away from the clearing before the patriarch handed Jian Chen a bottle, “Little brother, this is an antidote to this poison. Although the poison isn’t too strong it will limit our strength, if one spends their time too long here, the effects will show, so we may as well protect ourselves from it.”

Nodding his head, Jian Chen took a pill and then swallowed it as easily as eating a soybean.

The Lanming clan had everyone in their group swallow the pill before dismounting. Leaving behind two soldiers, everyone began to enter the poisonous valley.

Walking into a very dense area, it began to grow hard to differentiate just what direction they were walking in. But because there was a path made for them by the footprints of the ones before, all they had to do was follow this path in a straight line without deviation.

The weakest members there were all of the Great Saint Master realm, but their speed was still fast. Not too long after, their group finally reached the apex where they finally stopped in their paths. That was because there was already several hundred men gathered there with serious looks on their faces.

Jian Chen leaped nimbly on top of a tree branch and began to look up ahead only to see an entirely white tiger lazily sitting around with its eyes closed while protecting the cave behind it. The tiger wasn't too big, only three meters long with white fur all over, contradicting the information from the mercenary in Thacia City. Right in front of the tiger was a giant pool of blood where hundreds of corpses littered the ground with their lifeless poses. Among these bodies was an Earth Saint Master.

# Chapter 355: The Strong White Tiger

---

At this scene, Jian Chen couldn't help but doubt his eyes. Was this really the injured Class 6 Magical Beast that was currently as strong as a Class 5 Magical Beast? No matter how he looked, it did not seem right.

Right now, he and the other hundred men anxiously staring at the tiger were all feeling the same amount of doubt. Even if there were twenty Earth Saint Masters, even they would not be able to fight against a Class 6 Magical Beast.

The sight in front of them was a complete contrast with their thoughts. The tiger's fur was still pure white without a single speck of blood. But all around it were the corpses of hundreds of bodies, including some Earth Saint Masters. To be able to kill that many people without getting itself dirty with blood, this was not something an injured Class 6 Magical Beast should be able to do.

"It seems that there's some discrepancies in the information. While this is indeed a Class 6 Magical Beast, it is not heavily injured at all." Jian Chen spoke to himself.

A snowy white tiger cub half a meter long could be seen walking out from the cave behind. With an adorably shaggy white fur, the tiger seemed as if it was just born not too long ago since its eyes weren't even open. Crawling out of the cave seemed to have taken most of its effort as it tried to continue walking with its trembling four limbs.

The only strange thing about this tiger cub was that there was a pair of wings on its back. This was something a tiger based magical beast should not have, so this feature was noticed by everyone straight away.

“Look! That Class 6 Magical Beast cub, my god, it has wings! Does that mean that this cub could fly later on when they mature?”

“A Class 6 Magical Beast cub has appeared, how strange....”

“This magical beast cub was just born into the world. If we can take it and bred it now, then it will undoubtedly grow into a loyal steed with a tremendous amount of power!”

“A recently borne Class 6 Magical Beast, how priceless!”

Seeing the little cub that exited the cave, everyone instantly began to grow excited as flames of enthusiasm sparked in their eyes. Greed overcame them as they looked at the cub, and some of them started to rub their hands in premonition of the wealth to come as if they were already envisioning the cub in their hands.

The excitement from the throngs of men had caused the mother tiger to open both of its eyes slowly. With a powerful roar as if to threaten the group, it raised its head and pulled the cub toward its body with a paw. There was a myriad of emotions in its eyes such as affection, sadness, pain and sorrow, but that had gone unnoticed by everyone.

Except Jian Chen who was sitting on top of a tree branch saw it. In that instant, he had clearly seen the grim that was ominous in nature. However, it did not hide the moment of weakness at all, allowing Jian Chen to understand just how much in despair the tiger was in.

The cub frantically tried to escape from the grasp of its mother as it tried to poke its head out from the mother's fur. But in the end, the cub continued to be coddled by the mother as it let out a small crying sound.

There was a motherly look in the mother's eyes as it continued to watch over its cub affectionately as a loving mother would without any malice. Behind the kindhearted eyes of the mother, there was a flash of pain that was already forcing the tiger to blink away some tears.

Everyone behind the tiger mom could only watch the pair of tigers with disbelief. Not a single one of them could believe what they were looking at since the emotions that this tiger was displaying were far too rich for them to believe that they came from a magical beast.

Suddenly, a group of a hundred men came running over before forming a line so that no one could pass through. Then, one of them spoke, "Out of the way, everyone out of the way! The Moyun clan has arrived, make way for us!"

The moment everyone heard of the name "Moyun", they instantly grew startled and hastened to make a path for the clan.

The group of men from the Moyun clan were all wearing black and flew on by toward the front without any obstructions.

“Elder Bai, take a look, it’s the cub of a Class 6 Magical Beast. Dear heavens, it even has wings!” A Moyun clansmen spoke out in awe at it.

Upon hearing this piece of information, the other middle-aged man next to him had a pleasant smile on his face. The moment he saw the amount of bodies that littered the ground by the tiger, he grew serious once more. “Be careful, this Class 6 Magical Beast isn’t injured at all. Even if it’s not as strong after giving birth, we still aren’t strong enough to defeat it.”

“Elder Bai, it’s the cub of a Class 6 Magical Beast! Right now, no one is capable of stealing it away from us, but with time, more and more people will come, making it less likely for us to be able to get it for ourselves.”

“That’s right, Elder Bai, if we hurry, then we won’t have any opposition. This is our chance! If we wait, then obtaining that cub would be impossible.”

“Elder Bai, we have a dozen Earth Saint Masters and seventy Great Saint Masters, that’s more than enough to provide a good chance against this Class 6 Magical Beast and to get the cub.”

A few men spoke to Elder Bai with low voices as if trying to convince him.



At this, the elder Bai had a thoughtful look as he pondered the situation for a moment before finally saying, “Elder Kai, take your Earth Saint Masters to fight the Class 6 Magical Beast. I will go and retrieve the cub, then in the case that we obtain it, we will retreat immediately.”

“Yes, elder Bai!” The few Earth Saint Masters nodded their heads in excitement. If they could take back the Class 6 Magical Beast cub, then it would be a tremendous boon to their clan.

After their response, they talked for a moment about their plans before the Moyun clan had each one of the Earth Saint Masters take out their Saint Weapons. Forming a barricade, they ran toward the Class 6 Magical Beast. Elder Bai stood where he was with a look of concentration as he waited for the first group to attract the tiger’s attention before flying toward the cub with an incredible speed.

Just as the Moyun clan made their move, the other factions of power leaped into action as well in participation of vying for the cub.

Sensing the intentions of everyone around him, elder Bai cried out coldly, “If anyone dares to try and ruin this for our Moyun clan, then we will definitely not forgive them! A Class 6 Magical Beast cub isn’t something just anyone can obtain. Everyone should take heed, is it worth trying to get the cub and incur our wrath?”

When the crowd heard elder Bai’s threat, many people began to

stop in their tracks and sigh to themselves. In their hearts, they had already given up trying to compete with the Moyun clan for the cub. First of all, they couldn't offend the clan, and secondly, obtaining the magical beast cub was not an easy task. The Moyun clan had over a dozen Earth Saint Masters and even more Great Saint Masters, this was an amalgamation of power that many were afraid of.

“Just what type of clan is the Moyun clan for them to be so arrogant?” Jian Chen muttered from the treetop.

“The Moyun clan is the strongest clan in our Skohl Kingdom. In terms of influence, it is ranked third in the kingdom and is reported to have at least fifty Earth Saint Masters within their ranks. Furthermore, there are even three Heaven Saint Masters watching over the clan.” The patriarch of the Lanming clan spoke to explain it to Jian Chen.

“Three Heaven Saint Masters? Haha, this Moyun clan isn't someone that anyone could belittle then.” Jian Chen laughed as he turned his head back to watch the events. After his time in Mercenary City, Jian Chen's outlook had been expanded. Mercenary City had the employ of several Saint Kings and multiple Saint Rulers acting as the elders of the city. Three Heaven Saint Masters were not of anything noteworthy in the eyes of Jian Chen.

Seeing just how Jian Chen had downplayed the Moyun clan, the patriarch of the Lanming clan couldn't help but wonder and try to guess at Jian Chen's identity. For him to not even care for a clan with three Heaven Saint masters, just what kind of power was he capable of?

“Hou!” A loud primal roar could be heard as the tiger let out an energy blast from it’s mouth. The energy blast was like sharp blades of wind that shot toward several Earth Saint Masters in an attempt to cut them down.

Several of the Earth Saint Masters didn’t have enough time to react to the gust of wind and were promptly speared through the chests. With a miserable howl of pain, they fell to the ground without a sound or any further movements.

This sudden change in development caused elder Bai who was chasing after the cub to stop in his tracks as he stared at the several downed Earth Saint Masters in horror, “Elder Kai, Bentley, Zaegar, are you all alright?”

For a long time, Elder Bai heard no response. That was because not a single Earth Saint Master had gotten back up from the ground.

Elder Bai’s face instantly paled as he turned his head back to the three meter long tiger with horror.

“N-no, that can’t be!” The elder muttered. He hadn’t thought that a single tiger – even if it were a Class 6 Magical Beast – would be able to kill a dozen Earth Saint Masters at once. Maybe Great Saint Masters, but not anyone higher.

Leaping off of the tree branch he was on, Jian Chen stared at the white tiger with some dejection, “So this is a Class 6 Magical Beast,

just how in the world is this considered weak?”

## Chapter 356: Class 7 Magical Beast

---

The single explosive roar of the white tiger had killed a dozen Earth Saint Masters, astonishing both elder Bai from the Moyun clan and even Jian Chen. The other hundreds of spectators had watched this with a growing look of horror at the tiger.

“Heavens, this tiger is terrifying! In a second, it killed a dozen Earth Saint Masters, can even a Class 6 Magical Beast achieve this?”

“There is a large difference between a Class 5 Magical Beast and a Class 6 Magical Beast that just cannot be quantified by man. Unless it a Heaven Saint Master or higher, no one can hope to go against a healthy Class 6 Magical Beast.”

“Impossible, while a Class 5 and Class 6 Magical Beast are indeed far apart, the difference can’t be that big! This must be a Class 6 Magical Beast without a doubt, otherwise, a simple roar wouldn’t be able to kill several Earth Saint Masters so fast.”

“That’s right, this magical beast has to be a Class 6 Magical Beast at the very most. There’s no way for so many Earth Saint Masters to be killed so quickly, especially if they were working together to divert the magical beast’s attention.”

The people watching the fight were all gobsmacked as they continue to talk among each other. Each one were nervously standing around as they looked at the dead Earth Saint Masters and then the tiger. They were all just Great Saint Masters, the

realm of the Earth Saint Masters was something they couldn't hope to reach. But even then, an Earth Saint Master was nothing more than a weak entity in the eyes of the white tiger, so there was no hope for them to attack it.

“To think that there's a Peak Class 6 Magical Beast in front of me, good heavens, this is an entity that only a Peak Heaven Saint Master could hope to fight...” A mercenary spoke.

.....

The strength of the white tiger had terrified everyone. Although it had already killed a hundred people before this, those were not all Earth Saint Masters. This sudden and major development had instantly made all of the Great Saint Masters renounce any plans they had of capturing the cub and many had even decided on retreating.

The white tiger's strength was truly too terrifying. Only a Heaven Saint Master would be capable of having an even match with this beast.

Elder Bai of the Moyun clan was speechless for a moment, but with the Class 6 Magical Beast cub right in front of his eyes, he was forced to retreat.

“Hurry back and report this back to the to the clan!” The elder spoke to another person from his clan.

“Yes!” The person immediately left on his horse.

In a flash, two days had gone by with more and more people coming to the Thousand Poison Valley. Rumors of the Class 6 Magical Beast were being quickly spread about so that clans even stronger than the Moyun clan were starting to show up. Practically every group had brought at least ten Earth Saint Masters, making the amount of Earth Saint Masters there over a hundred.

It was even said that the Heaven Saint Master ancestor himself had shown up not too long afterward. Evidently, even he was enticed by the allure of a Class 6 Magical Beast cub.

“Out of the way, the Sect of Dragon and Tiger is here...”

“If everyone could please move out of the way, we are from the Spirit Haven Sect...”

“The Baiyue Clan is here, move out of the way....”

“We are the Mercenaries of the War God, yield the way...”

A constant stream of strong factions came one by one to the valley when they had heard about the Class 6 Magical Beast. Each one was waiting for a chance to arise for their groups of eagerly awaiting Earth Saint Masters.

With this pace of development, the Lanming clan had already decided to not get involved. With the patriarch deciding that

striving to enter the tiger's cave for the cub was no longer a plan that could work and cleaned his hands of the affair.

Today, the heads of every powerful faction had gathered together in order to discuss the matter of the white tiger. While they were each Earth Saint Masters and could most likely fight a Class 6 Magical Beast, they did not want to pay a heavy price for it. Each one knew that fighting one wouldn't be too hard, but defeating it was not the main problem at hand.

“Let's see it this way, you've all seen the amazing power of the Class 6 Magical Beast for yourself. It was easily capable of destroying several Earth Saint Masters at once. Why don't we each join together to fight the Class 6 Magical Beast, then in the end, we shall all fight for the cub?” A middle-aged man from the Baiyue clan spoke.

“No, that won't do. What would we do if one of us takes advantage of the situation to steal the cub?” The captain of the Mercenaries of the War God said.

“Who would dare do such a thing? With so many people within our ranks, we could easily encircle this person.” One of the experts of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger spoke.

“Fine, we'll do it this way then, prepare your men.”

In a flash, the several powers had all reached a conclusion. The only group that wasn't happy was the Moyun clan since their Heaven Saint Master ancestor was not here yet. If they could only



delay for time until he arrived, then they could snatch the cub without anyone hoping to go against them.

Unfortunately, every other person knew of this, so they didn't hesitate and went to mobilize their men quickly.

Jian Chen had watched the group from the tree branch above. Since the Lanming clan feared accidentally causing trouble, they all moved back. Among this gathering of experts, not a single clan was someone they could bully.

The group had already ordered fifty of their Earth Saint Masters to make a circle around the white tiger and then charge at the final moment when ready.

The tiger lazily lay where it was before with its eyes closed as if uncaring for the situation occurring around it. However, Jian Chen understood the white tiger perfectly well. While the tiger had seemed as if it wasn't weak at all and was lazing about without fear, Jian Chen had a suspicion that the tiger couldn't stand. In the past two days, the tiger hadn't moved at all as if it had run out of energy.

If the tiger truly had any fighting strength, it would have killed every single one of the humans that dared to act against its cub, but it had done nothing at all. This was the most doubtful point since an act like this was almost contradictory to a magical beast's instincts.

“Human, help my child!” At this moment, the weak sound of a

voice entered Jian Chen's ears.

This sudden sound had caused Jian Chen to jump up with a quivering motion before falling down from the tree branch. Looking around himself vigilantly, Jian Chen saw no one around him.

Jian Chen's heart skipped erratically as he flew down to the ground. He hadn't sensed anything nearby him, so when he heard someone's voice near his ear, he had been shocked beyond his wits.

"Human, I beg of you to save my child." At the same time, the same voice could be heard within Jian Chen's eardrums. The voice carried a pleading yet weak voice as if it was without energy.

Quivering for a moment, Jian Chen quickly brushed off the shock to calm himself down before realizing the sound was coming from up ahead. What was more unbelievable was that it was coming from the tiger.

"Who are you!" Jian Chen's lips had barely split apart, but he was sure that the owner of the voice would be able to hear him.

"I am called Rum Guinness, the magical beast right in front of you." The weak voice spoke. From the voice, Jian Chen could detect a feminine tone to it, but it was still very weak nonetheless.

Hearing this, Jian Chen was shocked down to his core. He never would have thought that the voice he was hearing belonged to a

magical beast. It was as if there was no distinction at all between a magical beast and a human, but Jian Chen had no idea just how he could understand.

Suddenly, a thought flashed through his mind as Jian Chen's face grew stunned. "Could... could you be a Class 7 Magical Beast and not a Class 6 Magical Beast?"

Back in Kargath Academy, Jian Chen had read many books about magical beasts. He knew that Class 7 Magical Beasts could transform into a humanoid shape and speak the human tongue without any distinction.

"According to what you humans classify us as, I am indeed a Class 7 Magical Beast." The tiger's weak voice rang out once more as if it was whispering something private to Jian Chen so that only the two of them could hear.

"A Class 7 Magical Beast– that's... that's the equivalent to a Saint Ruler in the human realm." Jian Chen was in shock as his heart went into chaos. He just couldn't believe that this tiger that was blocking the cave behind it for two days was in fact a Class 7 Magical Beast.

If news of how this was a Class 7 Magical Beast were to be spread out, then everyone would have run away. In the face of such a tiger, just who would dare try to steal the cub?

"Human, I beg you, help my child." The tiger's voice could be heard once more with a begging tone.

Quickly reigning in his shock, Jian Chen forced smile on his face as he thought out loud to himself, “You Class 7 Magical Beast ask of something impossible. I am but a mere Earth Saint Master, just how could I help you? With so many people here, you could ask any one of them.”

“Human, from everyone here, I can only trust you. The rest are unreliable, would you help my child?” The tiger asked once more.

“You don’t even know me, just why do you think I am the most trustable person here?” Jian Chen was amazed at the sloppiness of this tiger’s reasoning.

“Intuition. We beasts have a keen sense of instinct. Without it, we would not be able to sense any other being stronger than us. My instinct does not lead me wrong, it tells me that among all humans here, the only one that I can trust is the one that will be able to protect my child from the rest. Human, will you help my child?”

# Chapter 357: Winged Tiger God

---

Jian Chen couldn't help but feel awkward a little, he knew that this wouldn't be an easy assignment.

Thinking for a moment, Jian Chen spoke, "Could you tell me just what problems you have, and how I should help you?"

At that moment, the sounds of yelling could be heard as the amalgamation of powers suddenly charged toward the tiger with all fifty Earth Saint Masters.

"Hou!" The tiger's eyes gained a dangerous gleam before turning its head to the skies and roaring so loudly that the entire valley shook. All those within the valley couldn't help but shiver with dread as they began to fear for their lives.

The tiger who hadn't climbed up for two days suddenly shot straight up. With a furious blood thirsty glare, it leaped into the group of fighters.

The tiger wasn't gigantic in scale, it was only three meters tall, but it had a terrifying amount of strength. With the tiger among the humans, it was like a wolf among lambs. With a single swipe, it caused a massacre since no one was able to evade its claws. Anyone that was hit by the claws naturally perished to them, and not a single person was able to strike it successfully.

In a short ten breaths, each and every single one of the fifty Earth Saint Masters from each faction had been eradicated. Not a single

one was left, and no matter where the tiger turned, there was no one left to see.

After killing all fifty Earth Saint Masters, the tiger glared dangerously at the leaders of the factions, causing everyone to flinch back in fear.

Instead of advancing to kill off the rest, the tiger slowly turned around toward the cave, but the weakness in its eyes grew more and more clear.

Slowly laying back down on the ground, the tiger lay its head on the ground and closed its eyes again.

The leaders of the powers all looked at the white tiger with an equally white face. Unable to say anything for a very long time, they couldn't help but just stand there in utter shock.

“Th... this... this is... a magical beast that's far stronger than even a Peak Class 6 Magical Beast.” At last, one of the leaders spoke with a trembling voice in complete and utter shock.

“We're no match for it, what should we do? Even if we were to fight now with just us leaders, we wouldn't be an opponent.” Another spoke.

“This is wrong, that magical beast is abnormal! With so much strength, why didn't it kill even us? For the sake protecting its child, this is abnormal behavior.”

“That’s right, this is far too strange. Take a look at that magical beast, just why is it so listless? It’s even napping with its eyes closed.”

“The rumors said that it was severely weak due to the wounds it has, is that why it didn’t fight all of us?”

After the shock of the recent massacre, everyone began to talk among themselves. A magical beast’s protection of its cub was absolute and would definitely not let go of any human that would dare try to steal it away. Anyone that would try would face the wrath of the magical beast, so this white tiger’s actions were a tad queer.

At that moment, the tiger’s voice came into Jian Chen’s mind once again. “Human, I cannot hold on for much longer. I beg of you to promise me that you will bring my child away from here. You are the only one among this crowd that I can trust. I do not wish for my child to be left in the hands of any other.” Right now the tiger’s voice was even weaker than before.

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s eyebrows furrowed before nodding his head, “Fine, I promise to take care of your child.”

“Human, I cannot thank you enough. My intuition tells me that entrusting my child to you is the most sensible path. I can also sense that whatever danger my child comes across in the future, you will be able to help him, is that right?” The white tiger spoke happily.

“Correct!” Jian Chen nodded without hesitation.

“Human, I, Rum Guinness am truly grateful to you. Although this will add onto your troubles, I have no other solutions. Enter the cave and I will explain some things to you.” The tiger spoke.

Without hesitation, he flew out past the crowd and into the cave behind the tiger like a bolt of lightning.

“F\*ck, who’s that, are they trying to die?”

“That guy doesn’t wish to live anymore...”

Not a single one of the group had tried to block Jian Chen and instead looked at him go toward the white tiger as if he was an idiot.

However, much to everyone’s complete and utter shock, Jian Chen managed to slide into the cave without any problems before disappearing from sight. The white tiger in front of the cave seemed to have completely disregarded Jian Chen as if it didn’t even sense him.

“Is the tiger asleep or something?”

Plenty of men began to shift around uneasily as they all thought with jealousy about how easily Jian Chen had managed to slip in.



Most of the men in fact had been tempted to follow in his footsteps.

Then, two figures came bursting out of the crowd and flew for the cave behind the tiger with a speed comparable to Jian Chen's. This was all for the sake of the tiger cub inside the cave.

“Hou!” Suddenly, the white tiger that had been motionless until now let out a ferocious roar as it swiped its claws. In an instant, the two figures had been cut in half in midair and fell to the floor in a rain of blood and gore.

The two had been Earth Saint Masters, but they were easily killed as well. At the same time, this had also shut down any notions that anyone had about following Jian Chen in.

After killing the two, the white tiger glared dangerously at the rest before slowly walking into the dark cave, disappearing from sight. The tiger's actions left everyone completely puzzled on why the tiger had left the first person that entered the cave untouched,

Within the cave, a single night pearl hung overhead, illuminating the cave with some light. All around the cave was dark shadows, and in the corner of a cave, the tiny tiger cub was curled up sleeping. This sight was rather cute, but the wings on its back made it seem anything but normal.

The white tiger slowly walked into the cave and looked affectionately at the tiger cub. Then, its entire body took on the shape of a middle-aged woman before Jian Chen's amazed eyes.

The woman was rather tall at two meters in height, which was taller than Jian Chen by a head. Even her physique could be comparable to Qin Xiao's.

Jian Chen stared at this previously tiger shaped woman in a daze. Although he knew that a Class 7 Magical Beast could transform into a human, this was still the very first time he had seen such an event. This was quite mystical, almost far too mystical for anyone to believe.

If he were to see this sight in his previous life, he would have called this woman an evil spirit. An evil spirit that could cultivate and was a tiger.

When Jian Chen came to this world, he knew that it was far different than the world he used to live in. The average lifespan for a person here was around 200 years old, an Earth Saint Master could live up to 500 years old, and a Heaven Saint Master could live up to a thousand years old. Back in his old world, even the experts that stood on top of the world could only live up to 100 years old. Dugu Qiubai himself was the only being that had been able to live to be 200 years old.

The newly changed woman embraced the cub affectionately before turning to look at Jian Chen, "Human, I thank you for looking after my child. Your kindness is something that I, Rum Guinness, will never be able to return."

"Eh...that is, would you tell me what trouble you came across? I

can see that you are extremely weak, could you be at the end of your lifespan?" Jian Chen didn't know what to ask, he still found it hard to believe this motherly like woman was actually the ferocious white tiger from before.

With a sorrowful sigh, the woman spoke, "Human, I shall not hide anything from you. Allow me to explain everything in detail. I can only hope that you will not abandon my child after listening."

"You needn't worry, I, Jian Chen, do not go back on my word after it is given. I am not one that breaks their word." Jian Chen pledged.

The woman's eyes grew bright as she looked at Jian Chen, the weakness in her eyes could still be seen. "I believe you, my intuition tells me that you are not a human of deception."

The woman went silent for a moment as if she was remembering painful memories. "On Cross Mountain, there lies a magical beast clan that commanded the entirety of the mountain with high ranking magical beasts. This clan was called the Gilligan clan."

"Within the Gilligan clan, there are two kings that are separated between the land based magical beasts and the sky based magical beasts. Those of the tiger based magical beasts and the roc based magical beasts are considered royalty within the Gilligan clan. That is because the king of the land magical beasts was a Golden Fur Tiger King, and the king of the sky magical beasts was the Legendary Roc. As for I, I was a high ranking elder of the Gilligan clan."

“The father of this child was a Golden Fur Tiger King who was the younger brother of the current king of the land magical beasts. Another Class 7 Magical Beast as you would. The father and I loved each other for over a hundred years, but it was not until twenty-two years ago that I grew pregnant. Maturing for twenty years, it wasn’t until two years after that much to the delight of the father and I, I had given birth to the race of the ancient emperor of tiger based magical beasts – the Winged Tiger God.”

---

## Chapter 358: Saving The White Tiger

---

The moment she spoke of the Winged Tiger God, Rum Guinness began to feel emotional, “A Winged Tiger God is the king of the tiger type magical beasts. They hold supreme status among us tiger type magical beasts and are also a god of magical beasts. It was only because of a Winged Tiger God that all magical beasts were unified as one in the best. Leading us magical beasts over the oceans after being driven out by the Bai clan, we finally came to occupy this continent.”

“When the father and I heard that our child was a Winged Tiger God, the two of us were happy beyond belief. Unable to contain his excitement, the father went off to tell the good news to his elder brother. However, the nightmare began at that point. We never would have thought that the elder brother would suddenly have evil thoughts invade his mind. He was afraid that the Winged Tiger God would soon be a threat to his power and thus he tried to kill our child.”

“For the sake of our child, the father and I both left the Gilligan clan, but the king had no intentions on letting us go. While keeping the matter of there being a Winged Tiger God a secret, he had come after us in person. My husband and I together were no match for him and had sustained heavy injuries as a result. However, in the final moments, my husband sacrificed himself to allow our child and I to escape. Right now, I can no longer feel the Qi of my husband, he has already succumbed to the schemes of his elder brother.”

As she told her tale, Rum Guinness’ face revealed a sorrowful look as tears flowed from her eyes.

“Taking my child and running away from the Cross Mountains, I came to this place. Perhaps it was divine providence, or the heavens wished that no harm should befall my child, but thanks to whichever supernatural event, I was able to come across a dependable human after half a year before I reach the end of my lifespan. Perhaps your coming was what the heavens have decreed?”

“The end of your lifespan? Could you be injured beyond any sort of healing?” Jian Chen asked.

With a grieved look, Rum Guinness spoke, “Correct, back when the king of the Gilligan clan was fighting me, a pure dark energy was forced into my body. These days, there is nothing I can do while it ransacks my insides. This dark energy is the from the king himself, and I found no way for me to find a way to stop it. All I can do now is to slowly watch my body be engulfed by this energy. If it were not for the superior advantage magical beasts have in their body strength, I would have died long ago. Right now, I only have three days at most.”

Jian Chen couldn't help but feel shocked as he listened to Rum Guinness. “Then is there no other way to eliminate the dark energy within you?”

Rum Guinness shook her head, “There is none. The king of the Gilligan clan used his own energy to strike at me with the dark energy. Not only is it strong, but it has permeated my entire body and has destroyed any chance of me living. Even if the dark energy was purified, with my current injuries, I would not have much

longer to live.”

“Then what if there was a Radiant Saint Master, would that help you recover.” Jian Chen stared at Rum Guinness with a focused gaze.

Shaking her head lightly once again, Rum Guinness spoke, “This dark energy is not something that a normal Radiant Saint Master could purify. If there was a chance, a Seventh Class Radiant Saint Master would be needed. But those are as rare as the feathers of a phoenix wing and not someone I could come across easily in the short amount of time I have left. Even if I could find one, they would not be able to heal me so easily. You do not understand the relationship between the Gilligan clan with you humans. There would be no way for them to assist me.”

“Why not let me try to see if I could help.” Jian Chen spoke seriously to Rum Guinness.

“It is no use, human. You are merely wasting your energy. My time is not long here, you would best take my child and leave from this place. I will use the very last of my energy to help you get away from anyone and secure your safety while fleeing from this area.” Rum Guinness spoke calmly with preparations of leaving this world. With that, she looked off in a distance with an unfocused gaze, “Husband, you will not be alone for much longer, I will be coming soon. Let us watch over our child from the next world. Together.”

Rum Guinness’ expression caused Jian Chen to feel some grievance as well, but he spoke no words. Slowly closing his eyes,

he began to control the Radiant Saint Force in the world. Although he knew that he could not cure Rum Guinness' injuries, he could at least give it a try.

A milky white glow of light could be seen forming in between Jian Chen's hands. With time, it quickly began to glow even more dazzling with a gentle but strong light that was comforting to look at. The rays of light that could be felt from this ball of light would make anyone feel happy.

Rum Guinness grew startled as the grieved expression was squashed. Staring at Jian Chen, she spoke with shock, "You're a Radiant Saint Master? Just... just how?" Rum Guinness had been wholly astounded by this sight.

Jian Chen knew that the dark energy within Rum Guinness was far too strong, so he had spared no effort in trying to condense the Radiant Saint Force. Because of that, he wasn't able to clearly hear what Rum Guinness had said.

In another moment, the Radiant Saint Force had reached the best Jian Chen could manage. Extending his arms, the Radiant Saint Force ball slowly began to float toward Rum Guinness before engulfing her.

Rum Guinness instantly grew shocked as the Radiant Saint Force made its way inside her body. But after a moment, she shook her head with a sigh, "No, your Radiant Saint Force is too weak. It's not enough to purify the dark energy left inside my body. At the very most, it can only delay it."



With a light in his eyes, Jian Chen asked, “How much longer will it be contained for?”

Rum Guinness went silent for a moment as she tried to estimate before finally saying, “The Radiant Saint Force is like the nemesis of the dark energy. If I can continue to gain enough Radiant Saint Force and incorporate it into my body, then I can temporarily seal away the dark energy. However, in this time, I must focus entirely on trying to seal the energy and cannot move against any human.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen felt some relief in his heart. He could not let this Saint Ruler like magical beast die here. Mustering up some emotions, he spoke, “Then how about this, I shall supply you with Saint Force, and you will try to seal away the dark energy within your body?”

A flicker of surprise crossed Rum Guinness’ eyes before quickly growing calm once again, “No, if that is done, then I will not be able to use my energy to fight any human. With so many humans out there, you alone will not be enough to fight them all. Although you have hidden your presence, I can sense that your strength is not enough to deal with everyone out there. I can also sense that a Heaven Saint Master human is on his way here, he won’t take long to get here, I must ensure that I kill him.”

The moment he heard that a Heaven Saint Master was on the way, Jian Chen’s face changed slightly. Although the white tiger in front of him could kill a Heaven Saint Master, her life would take a turn for the worse. With each movement she made, she would only harm herself even more. If she continued to exhaust her energy by

fighting, then she wouldn't have enough to seal the dark energy later on.

“You needn't worry. I can deal with the men outside, I've also the ability to shake off any Heaven Saint Master after me. Right now you should use my Radiant Saint Force in order to seal the dark energy within your body.” Jian Chen spoke staunchly before forming even more Radiant Saint Force for Rum Guinness to use to heal.

“Human, why do you help me to this extent? I have already entrusted my child to you with no other wish. Right now I only wish to join my husband in the next world, he is alone there.” Rum Guinness' eyes had tears in them as a small guttural sound could be heard from her throat.

“You are a mother, that means you should take responsibility over your own child. Could it be that you wish for your child to grow without a mother or father? Do you not know the pain this would inflict on your child, this is something that cannot be fixed by any means. Thus, I will do all that I can to help you for the sake of your child. Or do you not wish to take revenge for your husband? Could it be that even after your husband was mercilessly killed by his elder brother, you will do nothing but to take it in silence? Or will you throw all your hopes of revenge onto your child to bear? Are you a mother or not, you are not thinking about your child.” Jian Chen spoke passionately. By the time he reached the end of his rant, he had already begun to growl slightly. He did not wish for Rum Guinness to die at all; that was because after listening to her tale, Jian Chen's emotions had been affected so that he sympathized with her. Another reason Jian Chen had for her survival was that he truly did not wish for a being that could

rival a Saint Ruler to die.

Rum Guinness grew speechless at Jian Chen's speech. With only the slightest of cries, Rum Guinness' determination on dying here had been ultimately shaken by his words.

Sucking in a deep breath, Jian Chen said once more, "We must take the time to quickly seal off the dark energy within your body. No matter what, you must live for the sake of your child."

---

# Chapter 359: Leaked Identity

---

Rum Guinness nodded her head in anguish before crying, “I shall listen to you. For the sake of my child, I will live on. I will not allow such an arduous task to fall upon my child, I will definitely take revenge for my husband and look after my child grow old.”

Seeing Rum Guinness have a new resolve over her life, Jian Chen let out a sigh in relief. He had managed to rescue a Saint Ruler being potentially.

“The dark energy has already entered my bone marrow. The Radiant Saint Force is coincidentally the bane of it, so you will be able to force out the dark energy with it. Allow me to deal with the next step.” Rum Guinness spoke calmly towards Jian Chen afterwards.

Afterwards, Rum Guinness and Jian Chen spent two hours on trying to use the Radiant Saint Force to seal away the dark energy within her body. At the same time, the Radiant Saint Force would sometimes fail to make any progress since while the Radiant Saint Force was effective against the dark energy, it was still too weak.

Not too long after however, Rum Guinness had lost her ability to fight as a Class 7 Magical Beast since she couldn't use the energy within her now. She would have to fight using only her own physical strength, but that would be far less than before.

An hour later, Jian Chen had finally managed to allow some of the injuries on Rum Guinness' body recover before preparing to

take Rum Guinness out and away from here.

“Human, I can no longer use my strength to protect my child. You should take him instead.” Tears formed in Rum Guinness’ eyes, reluctant to part from her child just yet.

Jian Chen looked at the still sleeping cub and nodded solemnly, “You needn’t worry. I will do my best for your child, and when I can reach the Seventh Class Radiant Saint Master level, I will clear away the dark energy within you.”

Emotionally, Rum Guinness looked at Jian Chen, “Human, I can sense that you mean what you say. You truly care for this mother and child. This kindness of yours is something I will never forget.”

“One more thing, since my child is a Winged Tiger God, his growth rate will be rather slow. Swallowing valuable resources will allow his growth to accelerate, and when he grows up, he will have the ability to find them for himself.”

After explaining several more things of importance, Rum Guinness had made sure to remind Jian Chen that news of her cub being a Winged Tiger God must not be revealed.

Carefully remembering every single detail given to him, Jian Chen spoke, “I know what to do, but we should leave now. The longer we idle here, the more variables there will be.”

With that, Jian Chen spent no more time and held the tiger in his

left hand with a bundle of clothes covering its body. Then, with a leap, he flew outside in an attempt to escape.

“He has the Class 6 cub, don’t let him escape!” Unfortunately, there had been a sharp eyed person who had immediately guessed what the bundle of clothe was.

In an instant, everyone had burst into motion. The remaining fifty Earth Saint Masters flew forward to block Jian Chen’s path.

A fierce killing intent appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes as he instantly materialized the Light Wind Sword into his hand with a glow of azure and violet to the sword. Seeing only the flash of a sword and the impeccable speed of Jian Chen, the three Earth Saint Masters who were blocking him were brought down in an instant.

The surrounding people had already been seduced by the Class 6 cub. Each one of them could only stare at the bulging bag that Jian Chen had. While they couldn’t see what was inside, at this point, that wasn’t necessary.

Jian Chen had been able to enter the cave without being obstructed by the white tiger. Then, the white tiger had went into the cave for a long amount of time without any sounds of battle being heard. This made everyone believe there had to be some sort of relationship between the white tiger and Jian Chen. When they saw Jian Chen dash out of the cave, it didn’t take a genius to know that Jian Chen was taking the Class 6 cub with him.

Jian Chen's instant takedown of three Earth Saint Masters hadn't made anyone afraid, the remaining group of Earth Saint Masters had already resolved to block him and encircle around him with their Saint Weapons.

Fending off the attacks with his sword, Jian Chen's eyes grew even more fierce as the azure and violet glows of light increased in intensity as well. The sword began to blur in the air as it filled the area with its mirror images, ready to make a bloody pathway for him to escape.

By now, Jian Chen was already a Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master with even more strength than before. With the help of the Sword Spirits, he was like a wolf within a flock of sheep, no one would be able to block him.

"The cub's with him, we must stop him or else the cub will get away!"

"All Great Saint Masters retreat! Earth Saint Masters, form a circle around him! Even if he is an asura, we must not allow him to get away!"

At the commands of the higher ranking members, all of the Great Saint Masters drew back while the Earth Saint Masters flew forward.

In a flash, Jian Chen was completely surrounded by Earth Saint Masters. There were around ten of them that were also blocking Jian Chen's path.

“Stand in my path and perish!” Jian Chen barked out loud as he advanced. His left hand held the cub entrusted to him by Rum Guinness, and his right hand held the Light Wind Sword. In an instant, the azure and violet light on his sword was thrust in ten different motions toward the ones that blocked his path.

By the time Jian Chen had swung his sword, very few could see that he had moved while the rest couldn't even react before the sword stabbed through their throats. For those that had brought up their Saint Weapons to block his sword, the Light Wind Sword had already stabbed straight through it and forced them to fall back with blood leaking out from their throats.

In a single instant, the ten Earth Saint Masters that went up to block Jian Chen had instantly crumbled.

In the next moment, ten more Earth Saint Masters came forward with their Saint Weapons ready to chop and block Jian Chen's escape path.

With a sneer, Jian Chen activated the Heaven's Stolen Fortune and increased his strength three times over. His sword flickered and blurred mid swing as a series of metallic clangs could be heard when Jian Chen blocked sword after sword. But each time his Light Wind Sword clashed with one of the swords, the swords instantly broke apart to reveal jagged edges.

With the Saint Weapons damaged, the owners instantly spat out a mouthful of blood before gasping in shock.



A few of the men had stopped when they saw the azure and violet glow. In an instant, they cried out, “His Saint Weapon has an azure and violet glow, crap! It’s Jian Chen, the first place ranker of the Gathering of the Mercenaries!”

Like a stone that caused thousands of ripples, everyone instantly looked at Jian Chen in shock and disbelief. While this was thousands of miles away from Mercenary City, it was still relatively close for people to know of Jian Chen’s name. He was a figure whose name was like a thunderclap, and after becoming the King of Mercenaries, countless of people knew of his name. Thus, people came to know that his Saint Weapon carried an azure and violet glow to it and could easily break the Saint Weapon of a Great Saint Master. By now, the azure and violet Sword Qi was Jian Chen’s symbol since no other person on the Tian Yuan Continent controlled such glows. In fact, no one had ever even heard of such an energy before.

What had caused even more shock however, was the fact that it was the King of Mercenaries that had snatched the Class 6 cub. This result was enough to cause everyone to be shocked and not knowing what to do. Every single King of Mercenaries would at the very least become a Heaven Saint Master or higher. This was not someone they could afford to offend.

Once Jian Chen’s name had been announced, everyone began to argue louder and louder on what to do. In a moment, practically everyone in the Thousand Poison Valley knew that the King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen, was here.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed as he listened to his identity get announced to the world, there was no way for the Jiede clan and Shi family back in Mercenary City to not know about this. The amount of people here were far too many; Jian Chen had counted around a thousand, there would be no way for him to realistically deal with them all.

Without any more hesitation, Jian Chen flew forward while everyone was stunned in an attempt to escape.

“Quick, after him! It doesn't matter who he is but he has the cub!” One of the commanders called out.

“Stop him, don't let him run away! We have so many men, we must take that Class 6 cub!” The Class 6 cub was something that everyone desperately wanted, so the major powers had decided to overlook Jian Chen's identity. This Class 6 cub was far too precious to give up.

The Earth Saint Masters hesitated for a moment before biting their lips in frustration and running after him. They all knew that Jian Chen was strong and did not wish to be his enemy, but they had no choice but to obey the order.

After running away for some time, Jian Chen had made use of the Illusionary Flash to increase his speed so that his pursuers could only watch Jian Chen grow further and further away.

The heads of the powers could only look on helplessly as they had some men carefully enter the cave. Unfortunately, the cave was

empty. There was no class 6 cub, or even the mother.



# Chapter 360: Fighting A Heaven Saint Master

---

Within the Thousand Valley, Jian Chen had used the Illusionary Flash so he could come to the predetermined place where he and Rum Guinness had spoke of.

Not too long after he had arrived, a white figured had leaped into the area with a speed that was barely slower than the Illusionary Flash.

In a short moment, the white figure came to a stop before Jian Chen's eyes before turning into the white tiger, Rum Guinness.

Rum Guinness looked at Jian Chen holding her cub with a reluctant look as from before. With another sigh, she spoke "Your strength still astounds me. Even with many people there, no person was able to stop you. I've heard from the other humans that you are called, Jian Chen, correct?"

"En, my name is indeed Jian Chen," Jian Chen replied.

"Then I will call you Jian Chen from here on out. Jian Chen, I can no longer use my inner energy to fight and will have to rely upon my physical strength. I cannot even assist you since the Gilligan clan will surely find me if I cause too much of a disturbance. The next few days will require me to hide away, thus, I must implore you to look after my child once again." Rum Guinness spoke this time in a human voice, but because of her true tiger form, the voice sounded neither like a man nor a woman.

Jian Chen nodded his head seriously, “Be at peace, I will definitely look after your child. Wait until I have the ability to cure you of your dark energy.” Then, Jian Chen had another thought, “Ah, how should I come and find you later?”

Revealing a tuft of tiger hair, she dripped some blood on it, dying it completely red. Handing it over to Jian Chen, she spoke, “If you wish to find me, then have my child drip his own blood on this, it will guide you to me.”

Jian Chen carefully took the piece of fur into his hands.

“Jian Chen, the items you use to disguise yourself may protect yourself from a Heaven Saint Master, but it will do no good to those of the Saint Ruler realm or Class 7 Magical Beasts. You would do well to be careful.” The tiger spoke.

Hearing that, Jian Chen held up a hand to touch his face with a bitter smile. His disguise had been perfect and had allowed him to travel anywhere with ease. He hadn’t thought that Saint Rulers would be able to ignore this completely.

With a final look toward her cub and a few words to Jian Chen, Rum Guinness disappeared.

“Wuuu... wuuuu... wuu...” The cub that Jian Chen was holding suddenly opened its eyes as it began to cry out loud. Unable to detect whether it was because of the pain of having the mother leave him or the goodbye itself, the cub began to struggle as it tried

to stand up on its own power.

Jian Chen gently caressed the cub's head as if to soothe the cub into safety while showing a kind expression on his face.

Jian Chen had no desire to stay here any longer. the valley was no longer safe for him to stay, therefore the only choice was to quickly leave the area. Leaping up into the trees, Jian Chen began to borrow the tree branches to get farther and farther away.

Right behind Jian Chen, the group of men in front of the cave could only shake their heads in regret and disappointment. A Class 6 Magical Beast had been right in front of them, but it had been taken away by the Gathering of the Mercenaries winner, Jian Chen. This was something they still could not accept.

Suddenly, the strong Qi of a person could be felt from far away as someone with unbelievable strength arrived right in front of the cave.

In a flash, the sound of wind suddenly stopping could be heard as a crane haired elder appeared in midair. Floating, the elder looked down on everyone with his sharp eyes without any feelings in them as if he was a king over the mass.

“It's an Heaven Saint Master!”

The group went into an uproar as everyone began to feel the giant pressure radiating from the Heaven Saint Master. Everyone

could only look up with both fear and respect reflected in their eyes at the elder.

Seeing the elder, the Moyun clansmen were all overjoyed as the leader spoke out, “Bai Yuanjin greets our ancestor.”

“We greet our ancestor.” The Moyun clansmen all followed elder Bai’s example and knelt down with a reverent pose.

The Heaven Saint Master took a look around before speaking calmly, “Where is the Class 6 cub?”

“Honored ancestor, the Class 6 cub was taken away from us.” Elder Bai spoke with concern toward the Heaven Saint Master expert that was floating right in front of him.

Hearing this, a flash appeared in the elder’s eyes, “Do you know which faction took it?”

“Ancestor, the one who took the Class 6 cub is the King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen. His strength was far too much for anyone of us to stop him.” Elder Bai spoke.

“Jian Chen, so it was him.” The ancestor of the Moyun clan furrowed his eyebrows in hesitation before a dangerous glint appeared, “Which way did Jian Chen go?”

“That way!” Elder Bai pointed off in the direction. Right now he could only hope that his ancestor would be able to catch up to Jian

Chen and claim the Class 6 cub for their own clan.

The ancestor immediately flew off in the direction pointed out to him and quickly went out of sight.

“Quickly, report this back to the sect, we can only rely on the sect elders to help us.”

“Hurry up and hire some men to come over, report this to the patriarch straight away!”

...

The Heaven Saint Master from the Moyun clan caused an annoyance to the other powers who quickly tried to report back to their own factions.

At this moment, Jian Chen was using the Illusionary Flash to transverse across the valley. His path was not in a linear direction and had often times changed directions to throw off anyone chasing him.

Two hours later, Jian Chen had traveled several hundred kilometers. Stopping by the side of a valley, Jian Chen stopped for a moment to regain his energy. With the cub sleeping by his feet, Jian Chen began to recover his Saint Force.

With the large battle and his use of his Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen had already used up two thirds of his Saint Force. With his



identity revealed and a Heaven Saint Master most likely after him, Jian Chen would need to conserve all of the strength he could to fight a Heaven Saint Master.

The dog sized tiger cub obediently lay by Jian Chen's leg with a slumbering snore. His white wings were folded against his fur in a way that made them quite hard to see without looking for them.

Jian Chen sat in a cross-legged position with the Sword Spirits trying to rapidly absorb the energy within the monster cores to help Jian Chen recover. Under the disguise of the weeds, he was especially hidden from sight.

Four hours later, a boom could be heard as a gray robed man suddenly flew overhead Jian Chen and then out of sight.

Jian Chen could sense the figure fly by overhead while he was recovering his Saint Force with a nervous expression. "He is truly fast, this must be the Heaven Saint Master from the Moyun clan. I didn't think that even after changing my direction so many times, he would be able to catch up with me, it's a good thing I am hidden."

However, Jian Chen's face changed as he thought, "Not good, I'm sure I am already found then." Jian Chen immediately leaped out from the weeds and used the Illusionary Flash to take him and the tiger cub away.

He had been recovering using the energy from the monster cores when the Heaven Saint Master appeared. With such a short

distance, there was no way for such a high level expert to miss the ripples of energy coming from the monster cores.

Sure enough, just as Jian Chen left, the Heaven Saint Master suddenly turned around and discovered Jian Chen running away. With a renewed burst of energy, the Heaven Saint Master chased after him.

Using the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen was quickly traveling through the Thousand Poison Valley. Since the terrain was complicated and the ground uneven, the true power of the Illusionary Flash could not be revealed and he was unable to shake off the rapidly catching up Heaven Saint Master.

Seeing the Heaven Saint Master get closer and closer, Jian Chen gained a fierce look in his eyes as he suddenly stopped in his tracks. Holding the still sleeping tiger cub in his left hand, he flew at the Heaven Saint Master and brought out his Light Wind Sword in his right hand with the azure and violet glow shining on it.

In these four hours, Jian Chen had recovered about eighty percent of his Saint Force. Now that he couldn't escape, it was better to put his all into the fight. Plus, he had never fought against a Heaven Saint Master before, so he could use this chance to test just how long he could last against one.

The Heaven Saint Master was about thirty meters away from Jian Chen and floated above him. Staring down onto Jian Chen, he looked at the tiger cub in his left hand and spoke with a slightly happy expression, "Jian Chen, I don't wish to be enemies with you. My Moyun clan is in need of that Class 6 cub, so I must ask you to

resign with parting yourself from the cub. My Moyun clan will definitely reward you with a handsome prize and help you unconditionally within our scope of power.”

# Chapter 361: Fierce Battle

---

Jian Chen didn't hesitate to decline the offer, "My apologies, but I am protecting this white tiger. As long as I, Jian Chen, am alive, I will not allow anyone to lay a hand on him."

"Jian Chen, why would you go through such trouble? A magical beast usually has an exceptionally slow mature rate. A Class 6 Magical Beast could take at the very fastest ten years, or a hundred years at its slowest to mature. Then if we were to include the countless resources, it would be an extravagant cost. With your talent, it would take another ten or so years for you to become a Saint Ruler I'm sure, by then, you could tame another docile Class 6 Magical beast without having to go through the costs of raising one yourself while avoiding any trouble with our Moyun clan." The Heaven Saint Master clearly did not wish to be enemies with Jian Chen and was hoping that Jian Chen would take the initiative to give up. That was because every single King of Mercenaries have always been a Heaven Saint Master at the very least, and a Saint Ruler for the vast majority, meaning that Jian Chen was someone they couldn't afford to offend later.

"I, Jian Chen, am not a man who goes back on his words. You might as well give up on those thoughts, I will take this cub away from anyone else." Jian Chen's eyes grew cold as he prepared to fight without fear of the Heaven Saint Master.

The ancestor of the Moyun clan gave a small sigh as he spoke, "Jian Chen, the Class 6 cub is something my Moyun clan desires. If you wish to continue on with this charade, then you will be offending our Moyun clan."

The fierce glow in Jian Chen's eyes grew colder and colder before they seemed to have intensified into a sharp amount of Qi toward the elder, "If you dare make a move, then consider your Moyun clan dead to me. There will be no compromise, I will annihilate your Moyun clan."

With that, the ancestor's face grew startled for a moment before he too glared back at Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, you aren't thinking about what you are saying. Although you are talented, but even with your strength, you do not have the qualifications to say such words to me."

"Hmph, if you don't believe me, then feel free to see for yourself. All you have to do is make a move, and your Moyun clan will be enemies with me until death. If you do not wish to see your Moyun clan come across any trouble, then take a step back. I, Jian Chen, will naturally do nothing in that case." Jian Chen's stare was as sharp as his sword, and his words left room for no doubt.

The Moyun clan's ancestor grew dark at the very thought of a tiny Earth Saint Master threatening him. Despite being an extremely talented one, he was still not someone that he could consider an opponent. There was a clear divide between an Earth Saint Master and a Heaven Saint Master almost as different as the heavens and earth themselves.

He had previously been polite with Jian Chen due to his fear of Jian Chen's talent and wished to be on good relations with him in hopes that they could one day be friends with a Saint Ruler. But with these threatening words, the ancestor could not have those

thoughts any longer. He was a Heaven Saint Master with an illustrious status. On the Tian Yuan Continent, Saint Rulers were existences that even Earth Saint Masters would have no choice but to be extremely respectful to unlike Jian Chen who had decided to give no face toward a Heaven Saint Master.

Not only had Jian Chen's attitude failed to cower to the ancestor, but it had instead infuriated him. With a thunderous expression, he spoke, "What-what an audacious brat. A Class 6 cub is something our Moyun clan needs! If you do not wish to hand it over, then I will personally come and retrieve it!" With that, the ancestor reached out his hand with an frantic amount of energy bursting toward his arm. A giant yellow colored sword appeared, symbolizing him as an earth attribute cultivator, before he swung it at Jian Chen.

With a small whistling sound, the Heaven's Stolen Fortune had increased his strength by three-fold, giving him enough strength to out rival even a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master and contend against a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. With an impressive aura, he flew at the ancestor with no fear at all.

The Light Wind Sword danced as the earth Saint Force was scattered apart by Jian Chen before reforming straight away. Without any further impediments, Jian Chen shot toward the ancestor and stabbed for the ancestor's throat with his sword.

Snorting, the Moyun clan's ancestor raised his sleeved hands. In an instant, the energy around him flew gathered on the ground around him before condensing into a two meter earthen pillar that flew at Jian Chen's head.

Waving his Light Wind Sword, Jian Chen borrowed the power of the Sword Spirits and shredded apart the pillars like tofu before finally arriving at the ancestor's height. With another flash of silver light, the sword flew at the ancestor's throat once more.

"So you have some skill after all." The eyes of the ancestor flashed once more as the earth attributed Saint Weapon in his hand moved to block the sword.

"Ding!"

A crisp sound rang through the air as Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword was parried. The sword did not stop there and with a short burst of strength, it disappeared into hundreds of mirror images that stabbed at the Moyun clan's ancestor.

The ancestor grew serious at the speed of Jian Chen, this was a speed that even a Heaven Saint Master would have to be cautious around.

In a short moment, Jian Chen's sword had already reached an inconceivable speed as it struck out dozens of times, forcing his opponent to be unable to retaliate. Soon after, Jian Chen's figure had already dropped down from the air and landed back on the ground.

The ancestor was growing quite unsightly by now as he looked down at his own Saint Weapon. On it, there were a few dozen tiny holes on it. His Saint Weapon to be damaged to such an extent

caused him a tidal wave of shock, forcing him into disbelief.

“To have such strength like that is quite terrifying.” The elder thought with some fear toward Jian Chen.

Right after touching the ground, Jian Chen leaped into the air as he tried to fly at the still floating ancestor with his Light Wind Sword.

This time, the ancestor did not wait around to block and took the initiative to gather even more Saint Force to his Saint Weapon. With another way of his sword, a tremendous amount of earth attributed Sword Qi shot toward Jian Chen as a way of attack.

Since he was in midair, Jian Chen had nowhere to run and could only take the Sword Qi head on. The sides collided, resulting in a large bang as the shockwave sent Jian Chen careening into the ground with an equally loud boom.

“Wuuuu... wuuuu...” The tiger that had been wrapped around Jian Chen’s chest had been shaken awake with a baleful cry as it began to move its four paws against Jian Chen’s chest. Opening its eyes slowly to reveal the treasure like pupils, it began to look at the outside world with a curious expression.

In order to protect the tiger wrapped around his chest, Jian Chen had smashed into the ground with a miserably pale face. This strike from the Heaven Saint Master had taken a toll on him.



Suddenly, a tremendous amount of pressure originating from the floating elder filled the air. The earth attributed Saint Weapon had already transformed into pure Saint Force and came down on Jian Chen ruthlessly.

However, this strike from the Heaven Saint Master was one that Jian Chen was not willing to accept. Dodging it with his Illusionary Flash, he swiftly blew past the strike.

“Bang!” The heavens shook as dirt flew everywhere around the trembling earth. Where Jian Chen had once been, there was a five meter crater that was several meters deep.

A black figure appeared to the side; Jian Chen had been completely unaffected by the ancestor’s show of strength. In an instant, the Light Wind Sword flitted forward and struck out at every single place simultaneously with a speed so fast that the entire area was filled with its mirror images.

“What a fast sword!” The ancestor thought to himself gravely. Jian Chen’s sword was truly too fast, and with each collision from the swords, the ancestor’s own weapon was slowly being riddled with even more holes that in turn caused damage to him. Although it didn’t cause enough damage to him at the time, if the battle went on for any longer, then it would soon turn life-threatening and could even handicap him.

A layer of Saint Force wrapped around the ancestor’s body defensively. Although Jian Chen had his sword with the azure and violet Sword Qi, the Saint Force would still be able to slow it down.

Hurriedly blocking each strike from Jian Chen while retreating, the ancestor tried to widen the gap between him and Jian Chen. With an explosive shout, the sword in his hand burst into a dazzling show of earth Saint Force before immediately filling the entire area and pressing down on Jian Chen. This attack caused Jian Chen's body to feel incredibly heavy as if he was carrying a large mountain, making movement difficult.

“Jian Chen, you've forced me to use my Advance Earth Tier Battle Skill, you should be proud.” The Moyun clan ancestor didn't mince any words and immediately slashed down toward Jian Chen.

Another gleam of light appeared in Jian Chen's eyes as he pushed the Heaven's Stolen Fortune to the limit. The previously three-fold increase had increased so that he could now beat most Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Masters and smashed his Light Wind Sword into the ancestor's own sword. A blast of energy wrecked havoc in the area as the surrounding environment was blown apart. The mud on the ground flew into the air, and the valleys themselves began to shake so much that a fissure opened up on the ground.

The heaven Saint Master that was just using an Earth Tier Battle Skill had instantly been heavily damaged by Jian Chen. His face immediately grew pale as his body flew backward while a trail of blood left his lips.

“Wuuu... wuuuu...” The tiger that was still wrapped around Jian Chen's chest began to cry out even more as his entire body felt pain from the shockwave.

An intense killing intent entered the ancestor's eyes. The recent attack from Jian Chen had caused a flash of fear to enter the ancestor's face. Since he and Jian Chen were enemies now, the best method would be to kill him now before he matured any more. This, or else there would be danger for the Moyun clan in the future.

# Chapter 362: Inflicting Serious Damage To The Heaven Saint Master

---

“Jian Chen, if you truly desire to annihilate my Moyun clan, then do not blame me for being merciless. For the sake of my clan, I must kill you.” The ancestor spoke coldly as the earth Saint Weapon began to billow with even more Sword Qi than earlier before he struck out at Jian Chen.

Although Jian Chen had already taken heavy damage, his fighting strength was still frightfully terrifying. Immediately shooting up from the ground, he dodged the strike of Sword Qi.

“Bang!”

The ancestor’s Sword Qi strike was almost like an explosive bomb as it exploded right where Jian Chen was. As the ground exploded and sent dirt flying everywhere, the following grass and mud covered the skies.

Within the dust, Jian Chen was like a bullet as he sped toward the ancestor. With his Light Wind Sword emitting Sword Qi as well, the azure and violet Sword Qi on the blade was exceptionally eye-catching.

The elder from the Moyun clan had a look of contempt, “You cling to life like a praying mantis. However, you are only just an Earth Saint Master and not an opponent against me. Resistance is futile.” With that, the elder waved his sword as another wave of Sword Qi flew from his sword toward Jian Chen.

Gritting his teeth without a sound, Jian Chen's eyes grew as sharp as a sword before instantly disappearing away from view with his Illusionary Flash. As he dodged the Sword Qi from the ancestor, Jian Chen reappeared by his side and thrust his sword forward.

With a cold sneer, the giant sword in the ancestor's hand transformed into a dazzling light of yellow before the energy surged from within, causing the space around the sword to distort. At the same time, another large amount of pressure came toward Jian Chen and pressed down on him like a heavy stone.

The ancestor was using his Advanced Earth Tier Battle Skill once more. With his strength as a Heaven Saint Master, there would be no need to spend any time to prepare for its usage, therefore it could be used almost instantly.

“Allow me to see just how strong your determination to live is.” The ancestor's eyes grew dark as a fierce killing intent flooded them. In an instant, the earth attribute Saint Weapon flashed for a moment before flying straight for Jian Chen like a bolt of lightning.

At this current moment, there was only a single meter between Jian Chen and the ancestor. Thanks to the severe damage from earlier and the pressure from the ancestor, mobility was quite hard. Every step required an equally large amount of energy, and with the ancestor striking at him, it was impossible for him to try and attack the ancestor.

There was a strange smile on Jian Chen's face before the Light Wind Sword in his hand suddenly flew away from his hand and transformed into a sword that seemed as if it had gained a soul. Against all expectations, the sword had begun to fly through the air before striking for the heart of the Heaven Saint Master.

“Pch!”

Suddenly, there was an extreme change across the elder's face from the unavoidable blow. The Light Wind Sword had managed to pierce straight through his heart and explode out from his back with a bloody mess.

At the very same time Jian Chen's sword had pierced through the ancestor's heart, the giant sword had managed to stab into Jian Chen's chest as well. The energy within the sword had begun to wreck havoc within his intestines, shaking his inner organs and causing significant damage to his entire body, inner and outer.

Spitting out a large mist of blood, Jian Chen's face grew unimaginably white. Meanwhile, the blood on his chest had already started to drip down onto the pure white fur of the tiger cub and stain it red.

The Sword Spirits within Jian Chen's dantian shook before beginning to emit an attractive force. Straight away, the energy that had been causing Jian Chen's body to take damage were immediately sucked in by Sword Spirits, preventing them from causing any more harm.

The ancestor had received an incredibly serious wound now that his heart had been obliterated. There was also some Qi left within his body from when the Light Wind Sword had ran straight through him. Although he was a Heaven Saint Master, his inner organs were weaker than Jian Chen's. In contrast, the energy he had left behind in Jian Chen's body was far stronger than the energy that Jian Chen had left within his. However, this was still the very first time he had sustained such a heavy injury that he could not take.

Spitting out a large amount of blood, he looked at Jian Chen with a dark glare, "It is no wonder you are the King of Mercenaries of the last Gathering of the Mercenaries. To have such strength, I've underestimated you if you could force me to such a disastrous state. Even when you die, you should be proud of this fact." With that, the ancestor clenched tightly to the sword that was still in Jian Chen's chest. Just as he planned to cut Jian Chen in two, an ear splitting sound could be heard from behind him, filling his face with shock.

"Pch!"

The throat of the ancestor was split apart as blood came rushing out of the new wound. The Light Wind Sword had finally made its way back after piercing the elder's heart, since the elder was not prepared to defend against such an attack, it had worked.

A look of horror flitted across his face as he gave up on his attempt to kill Jian Chen. Then, flying at full speed, he tried to run away from Jian Chen while reclaiming his sword.

“Whoosh!” A loud ear piercing sound could be heard once more as the Light Wind Sword seemingly stopped its backward momentum and flew at the Heaven Saint Master with a renewed speed.

The Light Wind Sword slashed across the elder’s leg, and with a torrent of rain, the severed limbs of his legs could be seen falling down from the sky.

The ancestor let out a pain filled cry as he flew five hundred meters into the air so that he was nothing more than a speck of dust. As he flew away, he could only look at his severed legs on the ground in abject horror and disbelief.

Jian Chen was staring at the ancestor’s tiny dot in the sky with a surprising amount of shock. A Heaven Saint Master’s vitality was indeed extremely strong if his Light Wind Sword was able to pierce through both his heart and throat without him dying. This revelation of information was stunning, not only were Heaven Saint Masters strong, but their tenacity was terrifying.

It was unfortunate that the Soul Sword could only travel 200 meters away from Jian Chen. With the Moyun clan ancestor being 500 meters away, there was no way for his sword to travel that far. This was because after 200 meters, his control over the Light Wind Sword would shrink, and once it reached the 300 meter mark, he would lose all control over it.

The Light Wind Sword returned to Jian Chen’s hand as a ball of silver light. Despite his pale face and his serious wounds, Jian Chen did not want the elder to escape that easily. An azure and



violet light escaped from his Light Wind Sword before shooting out from Jian Chen's mental command.

Floating high in the air, the ancestor could only look down on Jian Chen with a fearful expression. He knew that his current state was dreadful with there being a hole where his heart used to be. This alone was already nearly crippling, but then he now had another hole where his throat was. His body was badly mangled, but in the face of everything, he had not died yet.

Seeing the azure and violet glows of light shoot for him, the ancestor could only hastily throw his body out of the way and try to dodge the blows. Then, casting a poisonous glare at Jian Chen, he flew off.

Right now he had two major injuries on his body. Although they would not kill him, they still required a hasty healing. If he remained here, he would fall prey to another one of Jian Chen's strange tricks and end up dead.

Running away from Jian Chen would leave Jian Chen no options other than to look at him get farther and farther away.

Now that the ancestor was gone, Jian Chen could let out a sigh in relief. After today's battle, he could be sure that his strength was similar to that of a Heaven Saint Master. If he had not the Soul Sword to make any unbreakable guard breakable, then he would have found it impossible to beat a Heaven Saint Master. This type of expert wouldn't be as paranoid about the azure and violet Sword Qi since they weren't like Earth Saint Masters. It was only when their Saint Weapons were to be damaged by it that they would

worry.

“It seems that I must find a way to allow the Sword Spirits to heal as fast as I can. If I could only heal them enough, then my azure and violet Sword Qi would surely grow stronger.” Jian Chen spoke as he tried to sit up painfully. Right now, the azure and violet Ssword Qi weren’t a major problem to any Heaven Saint Master, so he would need to find a way to heal the sword spirit’s strengths. This way, not only would the Sword Spirits be stronger, but the amount of assistance he could receive would be higher too.

The tiger cub that was wrapped around Jian Chen still could smell the dripping blood from Jian Chen and seemed to look as if it was hungry.

Resting for a moment, Jian Chen placed the cub down on the ground for a moment before sitting down and using the Radiant Saint Force to heal his wounds.

“Wuuuu... wuuu...” Just as the tiger cub left his spot on Jian Chen’s chest, he grew unhappy immediately. Starting to cry, his four paws began to scratch the ground before ultimately climbing up Jian Chen’s body with herculean strength and lapped up his blood hungrily.

Seeing the behavior of the tiger cub, Jian Chen didn’t know whether to laugh or cry before feeling a sharp pain in his chest. Taking off his blood soaked clothes, Jian Chen set the tiger on the ground lightly next to it to do as it pleased.

This way, the white tiger cub wouldn't bother Jian Chen and could lick and gnaw at his bloody clothes with vigor as if it enjoyed the taste and smell of it.

# Chapter 363: Inescapable Net (One)

---

After the battle, Jian Chen continued to use the Radiant Saint Force to heal himself. However, since he had used a lot of his “Spirit” to try and seal away the dark energy within Rum Guinness, he did not have enough power to completely recover from his own wounds in one go. After healing himself to a half state, Jian Chen stopped the process and took the tiger cub in order to look for a cave to hide in and resume the process of healing himself.

While the ancestor of the Moyun clan had escaped with grave injuries, he still knew where Jian Chen was. Jian Chen didn’t know when the elder would be back with reinforcements, so he had to quickly heal. As long as he had enough strength, he would be able to escape. If he didn’t, then he wouldn’t be able to run far. In the case that another Heaven Saint Master were to give chase, he would not be able to cope.

Jian Chen spent the rest of the day trying to regain all of his strength before attempting to use the Radiant Saint Force to heal himself once more.

Now that Jian Chen had more spirit than before, his ability to control the Radiant Saint Force was even better now. Despite the severity of his injuries, it only took him another hour to completely heal himself.

After his wounds were fully healed, Jian Chen didn’t stop to rest. Immediately taking out a Class 5 Monster Core, he began to recover the rest of his Saint Force. After using the Heaven’s Stolen

Fortune to multiply his strength by three-fold, the amount of Saint Force that he had used had been hefty. Right now his Saint Force was still not in tip top shape and was slowly recovering from his exhausted state.

Recovering the Saint Force was a slow process. It was only ten hours later that Jian Chen's Saint Force had been fully recovered.

Slowly standing up from the ground, Jian Chen changed into a new set of clothes from his Space Ring before taking the still sleeping white tiger out of the cave.

It was well past the midnight hours, and the poisonous fog around the valley was even more noticeable than before. Yet, it was also weaker in potency as well. This type of poison would pose no problem to an Earth Saint Master at all.

Just past the foliage of the trees, Jian Chen could clearly see the blanket of stars and the bright white moon hanging overhead, shining down on the lands.

Jian Chen was still carrying the sleeping white tiger as he looked around the area. After confirming that it was safe, he left from the area under the guise of the dark night.

Jian Chen quickly flew through the forest at a rapid pace. He had already discovered that there were torches lit from every direction, meaning the other factions had already blockaded the entire area and must have hired countless of men to comb through the forest to look for the white tiger cub.

Knowing that the Thousand Poison Valley was no longer safe, Jian Chen could no longer stay here. Using the cover of night to leave the valley, he began to travel through the forest with the Illusionary Flash.

Four hours later, Jian Chen had traveled a far distance away where the outskirts of a city could be seen to Jian Chen.

Immediately dashing for the city, Jian Chen arrived at the wall of the city before silently and sneakily climbing over it and into the city.

Because it was night time, the city was extraordinarily quiet with not a single inn open. Even the streets were cold and desolate without a single person.

Holding the tiger cub close to him as if he was smuggling something, Jian Chen quickly walked by a quiet looking inn. Jumping up to the third floor, he quietly slipped inside through the window without being detected.

Within the inn, Jian Chen set the tiger cub on the bed and then took out another Monster Core to restore his Saint Force.

On the second morning, Jian Chen had changed his appearances to become a thirty year old youth once more before hiding the tiger cub beneath his clothes and leaving the tavern.

One of the waitresses to the inn stared at Jian Chen's back with a suspicious stare, "If my memory isn't wrong, I could have sworn that I didn't see him yesterday. Could he have snuck in when I wasn't looking?"

After leaving, Jian Chen took himself on a stroll around the city before entering a foodstore, "Shop owner, do you have any fresh magical beast milk for sale?"

This shop owner was a forty year old skinny but scholarly man. When he heard Jian Chen, he turned around without batting an eye at the bulge of Jian Chen's stomach. "Yes yes, naturally, I have some for sale. Whichever type of magical beast milk the honored customer wants, our store will have it."

"Then let's have a look at your tiger milk. Make them all as fresh and as many as possible, money is not a problem." Jian Chen spoke without a question.

"Alright, honored customer, please wait one moment, I will be back with your items." With that, the shop owner walked to the back of the store to fetch the items.

Patiently, Jian Chen stood at the front of the store. The tiger cub hadn't eaten for two days, and while Jian Chen didn't know how often the tiger cub needed to eat, it would be for the best if he had some tiger milk on hand.

Soon enough, the time it took to burn a candlewick had gone by without the shop owner reappearing or any sound coming from

the back at all.

By now, even Jian Chen had an impatient look on his face. But for the sake of the tiger cub's meal, he could only continue to wait.

Afterward, another brief moment had gone by without the shop owner ever returning. A sense of paranoia struck Jian Chen as he decided that staying here any longer would be unwise and turned to walk out.

Just at that moment, a squad of armored guards suddenly walked through the doors toward Jian Chen.

"Crap!" Jian Chen thought, knowing what this matter was coming too.

Then, the commander of the squadron walked up to Jian Chen with a cold glare, "Who are you? Speak your name!"

Without hesitation, Jian Chen responded, "I am Chen Yi, what might the militia want with me?"

The commander of the soldiers looked at the bulge on Jian Chen's stomach for a moment before speaking, "What are you hiding in there, show it to us!"

Jian Chen's face grew dark, "The items in my possession have nothing to do with you."



“Hmph, there has been a spike in criminal acts in the city recently, you must be hiding stolen goods.” The commander spat out the words as if he thought Jian Chen was a fiend.

Hearing that, Jian Chen gently lifted away the robes to reveal the head of the tiger cub who was still sleeping soundly, “Is this an item that appeared to be stolen?”

The soldier’s eyes immediately shined as he spotted the tiger cub, “Quick, capture the cub and report it to the city lord straight away!”

The surrounding soldiers charged at Jian Chen with their Saint Weapons ready to strike.

Snorting, Jian Chen’s hand flashed through the air and shot a strong gust of wind that pierced into their chests before sweeping his other hand across the counter. In a single movement, he had already collected all of the nearby milk bottles into his Space Ring before leaving the shop.

Most of the soldiers were Great Saints while the commander himself was only a Saint Master, just how could they stop him?

Bursting out of the store, Jian Chen immediately held tight to the tiger cub as he ran for the city gates. Leaping across from roof to roof with an impeccable speed, everyone on the ground could only look at him in shock as they talked to each other.

“Qui-quick, send a report to the city lord’s mansion, we’ve found the target!” The commander who had his chest pierced by the gust of wind cried out loud as he clutched at the part of the chest.

In a flash, an ear splitting sound could be heard as a ball of fireworks flew off into the air before exploding loudly.

Not too long after, a figure could be seen flying through the air in the direction of where the firework had exploded.

“Look, that person’s flying...”

“Heavens, who would have known there would be a Heaven Saint Master within our Lanfeng City.”

.....

At the front of the city, a soldier guard cried out in a large voice, “Hurry up and close the gates! Everyone forward! Anyone that disobeys will be killed without mercy! Archers, prepare your arrows and await the signal! Hurry up and get ready!”

Immediately, the soldiers all began to busy themselves with their own respective tasks as the gate began to close. At the same time, each person were shouting out commands to each other.

Continuing to fly along the road, he quickly came to the city gates

which were already closed and had blocked many people from entering or leaving.

With a single leap, Jian Chen had already begun to scale the wall in an attempt to cross it.

“Fire!” The soldier commander had barked out.

Suddenly, the already notched bows of the archers were released, causing a myriad of arrows to fly at Jian Chen while the crossbow wielders launched the heavy bolts at him as well.

With a sneer, Jian Chen let a bubble of Saint Force out from his entire body before spreading out twenty meters away from him with a thickness of two inches so the arrows wouldn't pierce it.

“Fire, fire, fire! Don't let him get away!” The commander cried out.

The soldiers continued to hustle around as they resupplied for the second barrage. Jian Chen's speed was far beyond what they had anticipated and so by the time the archers had notched their arrows again, Jian Chen had already started to run further up the city walls. With each step he made, he accelerated in speed before he finally cleared the wall and escaped the city.

“Commander, he escaped! What should we do now, give chase?”

“Commander, should we bring people to chase after him...?”

The other soldiers could only cry out for the commander and wait for a response, but no response came.

“Commander, what should we do?” A captain had asked once more.

Suddenly, a line of blood could be seen on the commander’s neck. Then, right in the middle of everyone, the head of their commander fell to the ground.

## Chapter 364: Inescapable Net (Two)

---

Outside the city walls was a flat prairie land that Jian Chen continued to fly across at a breakneck speed. With each step, he traversed at least twenty meters; even though he was not using the Illusionary Flash, he was still traveling quite fast.

Now that this situation had occurred, Jian Chen knew that every single surrounding city was no longer safe. Every single power had already put out an order for him to be arrested in the case they discovered Jian Chen. Because the tiger was far too conspicuous and because Jian Chen had promised Rum Guinness that he would take care of the cub, the cub would have to stay with him. Right now, the tiger cub was far too weak to protect itself. If it were to try and live by itself, then there was a good chance a mercenary group or another magical beast would get to it.

While Jian Chen was running, he suddenly felt something coming from behind. Turning his head behind, an unsightly look graced his face as he saw a figure flying through the air a few hundred meters behind.

Jian Chen's heart grew a little heavy at this sight. After fighting the ancestor of the Moyun clan in the valley, he knew just how strong a Heaven Saint Master was. Even if he gave it his all, the two sides would end up being heavily injured. There was just too much of a difference between an Earth Saint Master and a Heaven Saint Master, even after using the Heaven's Stolen Fortune to multiply his strength three-fold, he was only barely able to fight a Heaven Saint Master. Jian Chen wouldn't be able to do anything either if the Heaven Saint Master fled since they could fly through the air while Jian Chen could not.

Looking at the flying Heaven Saint Master darkly, Jian Chen immediately used the Illusionary Flash in order to explode across the plains and travel ten times faster than before.

Jian Chen's sudden burst of speed caused the distance between him and the Heaven Saint Master to increase by a large amount. However, the Heaven Saint Master began to increase his speed as well, following close behind Jian Chen and trying to close the distance.

The Illusionary Flash was a Heaven Tier Battle Skill that Jian Chen had only a small grasp of. Despite it increasing his speed many times over, it would not be enough to outrace the Heaven Saint Master. After all, Jian Chen was running on the ground, but the other was flying through the air.

“Jian Chen, you cannot escape. Why not hand over the Seal of Treasure Mountain back to the Shi family and save your energy.” At this moment, the voice of the Heaven Saint Master could be heard like a sound of thunder that rang through the world.

Hearing this familiar sound, Jian Chen turned back once more only to discover that the Heaven Saint Master flying through the air was the person he had talked to back in Mercenary City, it was one of the four Cai brothers.

Jian Chen continued to silently try and run away, while he had the strength to fight against a Heaven Saint Master, he did not wish to fight just yet. Even if he were to beat back the Heaven

Saint Master, he would have to pay a heavy price for it. With this heavy price, then if any reinforcements came, there would be no strength left in Jian Chen to fight back.

“Jian Chen, just return the Seal of Treasure Mountain, you cannot escape. You most likely don’t know this, but the Shi Family and Jiede clan have joined forces. Aside from us four Cai brothers, there are another four other Heaven Saint Masters watching out for you at the same time. Knowing that you came out of the Thousand Poison Valley, us eight men were able to go to the surrounding cities nearby and wait for you. I’ve already notified the other seven of our location, you cannot escape.” The Heaven Saint Master spoke.

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s face grew extremely dark. He hadn’t thought that eight Heaven Saint Masters would be chasing him. Facing against just one of them was hard enough, let alone eight. With eight, there would be no chance for him to fight back at all.

Jian Chen’s speed continued to increase as he took out a map. The surrounding area was quickly memorized by Jian Chen before he flew off into a random direction without hesitation. Utilizing the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune to increase his speed by triple the amount, he tried to outrace the Heaven Saint Master once more using the Illusionary Flash. All that was left in Jian Chen’s original spot was a tremendous dust storm.

The sudden burst in speed from Jian Chen had caused the elder from the four Cai brothers to be stunned. Looking at the now gone figure of Jian Chen, he could only stutter out a phrase in amazement, “I-im... impossible! Just how... how could he travel so

fast?”

In the next moment, the elder had no other choice but to chase after Jian Chen while trying to ensure that Jian Chen did not get too far away.

With a newfound determination, the elder suddenly flew higher up into the air and began to follow the trail of dust left behind Jian Chen’s extreme speed.

Jian Chen had never traveled at such a speed before. Right now, even the scenery was completely indistinguishable to him since it was going past him at such a blur. The Illusionary Flash and Heaven’s Stolen Fortune combined had allowed Jian Chen to exceed what a Heaven Saint Master could do. However, this would result in an extreme amount of Saint Force being consumed. Being a Fourth Cycle Earth Saint Master, he would only be able to keep this up for two hours. After that, he would be completely out of Saint Force.

Already feeling his Saint Force reserves depleting, Jian Chen quickly took out a Class 5 Monster Core from his Space Ring and began to recover some of the Saint Force while he ran.

Two hours later, Jian Chen had already traveled for well over 2000 kilometers. On the road, he had gone by many cities, but Jian Chen hadn’t dared enter any single one of them.

Now that his Saint Force reserves were empty, Jian Chen took the tiger cub to a giant mountain. The mountain was rather



barren, but the peak couldn't be seen thanks to the clouds.

Carrying the tiger cub, Jian Chen arrived at a stone forest where Jian Chen immediately set about carving a hole in the limestone for him to hide in for now. Aside from the outside markings, there was another giant stone that blocked the entrance so that the cave inside would be hidden.

After all of the preparations were made, Jian Chen stumbled into the cave weakly. Taking out a night pearl to illuminate the cave, he looked around the newly constructed cave.

“Wuuuu... wuuu...” At this moment, the tiger cub began to wail as it started to gnaw on Jian Chen's arm while pressing its paws against his chest. Occasionally, sounds could be heard coming from its stomach, symbolizing that it was hungry.

By now, even Jian Chen knew that the tiger cub was hungry. Hurriedly taking out a milk bottle to feed the cub. he knew that it had been at least two days since the cub had eaten. If it had been a human infant, it would have long since cried out in hunger.

It was only after it had finished off ten kilograms of milk bottles that the cub had been satisfied. The watching Jian Chen had been astonished; the tiger cub was only so big, but it had managed to drink a surprising amount of magical beast milk.

Jian Chen had a total of fifty kilograms worth of milk, but the tiger had already consumed nearly a fifth of it. If the cub's appetite continued on like this, then he would only be able to feed the cub

like this another four times.

“It seems that I need to collect even more magical beast milk. But I don’t even know where and what other resources to gather so that the tiger cub will grow. Just what is this resource that is needed anyways?” Jian Chen threw the empty bottles with a reflective pondering.

The tiger cub lay on the ground with its eyes closed in satisfaction. Curling up in a cute manner, the tiger cub’s wings were still furrowed close to its body in a way that made them hard to see.

Afterward, Jian Chen took out another monster core to heal his Saint Force. Using both the Illusionary Flash and the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune for such an extended period of time had left Jian Chen empty.

Ten hours later, Jian Chen finally stood back up. With the power of the azure and violet Sword Spirits, his absorption rate was far faster than before. In a short ten hours, his Saint Force had already came back to the maximum amount.

Walking to the side of the cave, Jian Chen peaked out from a small crack of the entrance. It was still early with the sun already starting to rise from the west.

Jian Chen didn’t leave just yet however. Vanishing his presence, he slowly moved the stone to enlarge the hole to see what was happening outside.

An hour later, a single person flew past Jian Chen's line of sight before quickly disappearing as fast as it had appeared.

In another moment, a fire red colored figure blew past Jian Chen's line of sight as well.

Jian Chen waited for another four hours before seeing a total of five men fly through the sky. Not too long after, they all disappeared as well.

The sky outside slowly turned to night as the sun began to set. Once more, Jian Chen returned to the inner depths of the cave and began to ponder his next step.

Based off what he had seen earlier, he had known that the two Jiede clan and Shi family were already watching the entire area. Although they hadn't found his hiding spot thanks to the hidden, well concealed entrance, it was only a matter of time before this secret area would be discovered. So this meant he couldn't stay here for long.

Furthermore, Jian Chen was worried that the Jiede clan and the Shi family would hire even more Heaven Saint Masters. After all, they wanted the Ruler Armament in his possession. It would make sense if even their ancestors were to come by themselves personally for the sake of retrieving it.

## Chapter 365: Inescapable Net (Three)

---

Jian Chen sat on the cavern ground with a calm posture. Although it wasn't suitable to stay here for long, it wasn't time to leave just yet. He would have to wait until nightfall before he could leave so that the chance of being detected would be extremely low.

Nightfall was already fast approaching on the outside and cast a dark light over the grounds. On the highest peak of the mountain, eight elders stood in a circle as the violent wind blew their hair into a messy state and forced their clothes to look as if they were ready to tear apart.

“Third elder Cai, do you really think Jian Chen is hiding within this mountain range?” A red robed elder looked at one of the four brothers and asked.

The man nodded his head, “Although he is fast enough to leave me behind, I was able to see that he left no marks traveling away from this mountain range.”

“Then would you be able to ascertain his position within this mountain range?” Another person besides the third brother asked, it was the third elder of the Jiede clan.

The third brother shook his head, “I couldn't. The area here is too complex and is also made of pure rock. Even if he were to leave a trace here, it would be hard to find.”

The other elders went quiet as they all thought about the third

brother's words. They had already searched the entire mountain range for half the day, but there had been no traces at all.

At that moment, the eldest brother of the Cai family spoke, "Third brother, I've heard that Jian Chen's speed was far faster than yours was when you flew through the air, is that true?"

When the third brother thought back to when he was chasing Jian Chen, he couldn't help but let out a sigh as he spoke, "Correct. Jian Chen's speed later on was extremely fast. He was somehow able to outpace me, with that speed, I would say even the third elder wouldn't be able to catch up." The third brother spoke.

"You speak words of crap, the third elder is a wind attributed Fourth Cycle Heaven Saint Master. Aside from another wind attributed Heaven Saint Master, there is no one alive that could outrace the third elder in speed!" The fourth elder exploded with rage. The words that the third brother had said infuriated him.

"Fourth elder!" The third elder waved his hand as if to abate the fourth elder's anger. The four Cai brothers and the Shi family were on special relationships with each other. All four of them were Heaven Saint Masters with high rankings. If the fourth elder were to give them no face by swearing, then a potential problem may occur.

Hearing this insult from the fourth elder, the other three brothers grew dark in the face. The four brothers were friends against the same enemy, so when the fourth elder insulted one of them, he had insulted all four of them.

“Fellow brothers, fourth elder has always had a nasty temper, please forgive us for that. Please put the blame on me instead. I hope that fellow brothers will not hold this against us.” The third elder spoke with a kind expression on his face as he cupped his hands together in a sign of apology.

The four brothers’ faces improved a little after this. They weren’t aware of the explosive temper of the fourth elder, and so they didn’t care for it. With this apology from the third elder, they all immediately gave the matter no more attention.

“Let us discuss our next plan then to find Jian Chen within the shortest amount of time possible. He has the family heirlooms of our two families, we cannot afford to lose them.” The elder of the Jiede clan spoke.

“But the area around this place is vast. Jian Chen could be anywhere within this mountain range. With just us looking for him, I feel that we should ask for more help. Let us hire some people to help us and have some other mercenary groups join in as well.” The fourth brother spoke with a vexed face; the time they had spent chasing Jian Chen had been unbearable.

“This plan has merit to me.” The other Jiede clan elder spoke in agreement.

The third brother of the Shi family spoke, “Jian Chen is an extremely smart person. Whatever we can think of, he will be able to as well. Furthermore, we’ve already administered such a

method once in the Thousand Poison Valley, so he will definitely be prepared for such an event. I say that he will try to take advantage of the night tonight to escape. Thus, this night is the most important night. We should split into eight directions and watch over the area so that he won't be able to escape. After the next morning, we should send one person to go hire several mercenaries to comb the mountains and search for him."

"This method is decent, let's do it."

With the proposal planned by the third brother, the rest of the eight made preparations on which area to guard before splitting up.

.....

Within the dark cave, Jian Chen continued to sit with a calm expression. Although it was extremely early in the morning, he still made no move to leave the cave.

Two hours quickly went by, making it almost four in the morning. By this time, the tiger cub had already woken up and was crawling around the dark cave while mewling with a joyful expression.

Slowly opening his eyes, Jian Chen stood up and listened for movements around the cave. Then, returning the night pearl, he scooped up the playful tiger and headed out of the cave.

Walking to the cave, Jian Chen slowly moved away the stone covering the cave, afraid that he would make a loud sound and alert any of the hidden Heaven Saint Masters.

It seemed as if even the white tiger had sensed that there were dangers hidden in the night and remained quiet. Poking its head out of Jian Chen's clothes, the tiger cub stared all around the area with its bright and curious eyes.

Stealthily walking away from the cave without a sound, Jian Chen began to travel as if he was a spectre in the night. With his presence concealed as he crossed the mountain range, not a single sound could be heard.

At the same time ten kilometers away from Jian Chen, an elderly man was sitting on top of a mountain peak as if harmonizing with the world itself. After cultivating so hard and becoming a Heaven Saint Master, not only was he able to control the world energy to fly, he could also detect any changes that happened within it.

At this moment, the sitting elder immediately opened his eyes as two mysterious glows began to shine within them.

“There's a disturbance in the energy, something's making a move.” The elder's eyes grew fierce as he instantly flew into the sky like a spectre in the night.

Within a few breaths, the elder had landed upon another mountain range where the night had completely overtaken it. Even without much visibility, the elder's eyes could still stare



down and see something of interest to him.

“I’ve finally found you.” The elder let out a smile in surprise. Then, without hesitation, he flew toward the dark figure.

At the same time, the dark figure that the elder saw, seemed to have spotted the elder and immediately sped up in speed.

“Jian Chen, where do you think you’re going?!” The flying elder roared before increasing his own speed to try and overtake the escaping figure.

Within the peaceful night, the elder’s explosive words had rang throughout the area so that the other seven Heaven Saint Masters would be able to hear him loud and clear. Immediately, several sharp sounds could be heard as the other seven Heaven Saint Masters came flying into the area.

Like a pigeon startled by the twang of a bow, Jian Chen immediately gave up all pretense of stealth and flew faster toward the mountain exit.

The darkness of the night was nothing too major for any of the Heaven Saint Masters to be affected by so all of the elders increased their speeds once more.

In this chase, Jian Chen was able to escape the area quickly. With the usage of the Illusionary Flash and the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune to increase his speed, he was like an arrow in the night. In an

instant, he had been able to transverse a long area of ground with a large dust cloud trailing behind.

With the combined usage of both the Illusionary Flash and the Heaven's Stolen Fortune, the flying Heaven Saint Master that were chasing after him quickly disappeared in his wake. Afterward, Jian Chen began to slow down a bit and stopped the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. He knew that if he were to go too quickly, then the dust trail would give his position away and allow for the group of Heaven Saint Masters to quickly discover where he was.

But not too long after Jian Chen had let up his speed, a dazzling cyan light could be seen flying through the dark night with a terrifying amount of speed.

“Blast it all, it's a wind attributed Heaven Saint Master.” Jian Chen cursed before reactivating the Heaven's Stolen Fortune. His speed instantly skyrocketed so as to escape the Heaven Saint Master behind him.

The wind attributed Heaven Saint Master chasing behind him was the third elder of the Shi family and was also the very same person who had initially used the poison to threaten Jian Chen.

Seeing Jian Chen's figure grow farther and farther away, the third elder gasped in shock, “It seems the third brother's words were not false. This Jian Chen's speed exceeds the realm of possibility if it is able to beat mine. This is truly hard to believe that an Earth Saint Master could achieve such a speed.”

Jian Chen's new speed would only be enough for him to travel for two hours. After those two hours, he would be utterly exhausted. He wouldn't even have enough strength to fight, let alone escape.

## Chapter 366: Inescapable Net (Four)

---

As he ran, Jian Chen continued to think about his options. Changing directions every so often, he made a dash for the nearest city.

Jian Chen had already memorized the surrounding environment, so he knew that a thousand kilometers away was a single First Class City. With a wind attributed Heaven Saint Master chasing after him, he would only be able to throw him off temporarily. If he were to stop, then the Heaven Saint Master would quickly catch up.

So running without a purpose or direction was out of the question. Once his Saint Force were to become empty, then he would be at a point of no return. He had to enter a city. With many different types of people around, he could hide himself without being caught.

Quickly, Jian Chen made the journey to the First Class City and when he arrived he leaped over the wall to hide among the buildings sheltered behind it.

Not too long after Jian Chen's disappearance, an azure streak of light could be seen as the third elder flew through the air. Floating in the air during the middle of the night, he stared down toward the city, "What a crafty youngster. Seeing how you stopped within a city, that means you cannot keep that speed up for an extended period of time." Afterward, the elder remained motionless as he studied the city with his eyes, as if trying to find a trace of Jian Chen that could be followed.

Some time later, the sounds of seven Heaven Saint Masters flying through the air could be heard before finally stopping right next to the third elder of the Shi family.

“Third elder, could Jian Chen have hidden himself within the city?” The fourth elder asked.

The third elder let out a sigh, “This Jian Chen’s speed is truly too fast. Even with my entire strength, I was unable to keep up with him. He managed to disappear in the city, and I’ve yet to figure out where he is located.”

“How... how is that possible? Third elder, is Jian Chen’s speed so truly fast that even you cannot keep up?” The fourth elder’s eyes grew extremely wide in disbelief at the words coming out from the third elder’s mouth.

But he wasn’t the only one. The two brothers from the Jiede clan could only stare in disbelief as well. An Earth Saint Master being able to outpace a wind attributed Heaven Saint Master was an impossible feat until now.

Hearing this, the third brother of the Cai family hid a small smile. If even a wind attributed Heaven Saint Master wasn’t able to catch Jian Chen, then Jian Chen escaping from his hands was not too much of an embarrassing thing.

“This Jian Chen is far too crafty. To hide in a city where there are thousands of people and buildings, finding him will become an

extremely arduous task. If we are not careful, he'll take advantage of our carelessness and slip out among the others." One of the elders from the Jiede clan spoke.

"Fellow comrades, it's already dawn, we should hurry up and assign ourselves to a specific area to ensure he does not escape our grasp once more." The third brother spoke.

"The way I see things is that the eight of us should go to the city lord and have him garrison some soldiers to help us. The rest of us will then guard the cardinal gates as well as the other isolated areas of the city. This way, Jian Chen cannot escape from us." Another elder spoke from the Jiede clan.

The third brother nodded his head lightly, "This is the only option left. I will go inform the city lord, the seven of you should go spread out and guard your areas. We must maintain a strict guard, no matter who tries to leave they must use clear water to wash their faces. This is to prevent Jian Chen from changing his face. If anyone doesn't comply, be merciless."

With the plan in place, everyone set out to accomplish their side of things.

Within a large garden, a group of soldiers with torches held high could be seen patrolling the area. Just from their appearances, anyone could tell that this area did not belong to a regular person.

Not too long after the guards had patrolled the area, a dark shadow suddenly appeared from the side. Within the guise of

night, he entered without a sound into one of the empty rooms.

This figure was Jian Chen. After selecting an empty house to reside in, Jian Chen strained his ears for any outside noises before settling down with the white tiger by his side. Taking out another Class 5 Monster Core, he began to recover his lost Saint Force.

The white tiger seemed as if it had sense the danger Jian Chen was in, so on the way, the tiger cub had been very quiet as it remained around Jian Chen's chest. Its eyes looked about the area in curiosity, and when they got to the empty house, it sat by Jian Chen's side. Straining its ears as well, the cub didn't make another move.

Time went by as the sun quickly hung high into the sky. By this point, Jian Chen had fully recovered his strength and stood up to survey the area.

This room hadn't been inhabited by a person for a very long time, so there was a layer of dust on the ground. Furthermore, the arrangements of the furniture were rather basic, as if meant for the next resident to do the arrangements when they moved in.

After sitting in the room for several moments, Jian Chen's eyes fell upon his Space Ring. With some hesitation, he grabbed another Space Ring and began to divide up his things. The Ruler Armaments, Heaven Tier Battle Skill and several other precious objects went into one Space Ring while the other Space Ring contained several sets of clothes, some monster cores, and money.

Then, Jian Chen swapped out his Space Ring for the other one. The Space Ring with his more precious items went into a small box which he began to find a hiding place for it.

Since there were eight Heaven Saint Masters surrounding the city, it was difficult to predict if he would survive or not, so he needed to prepare himself. One plan was to hide the more precious items in a Space Ring and place it in a concealed area. Even if he were to die, Jian Chen had no desire to see the items be recovered by either the Jiede clan or Shi family.

If he were to escape from this calamity, after everything had blown over, he could come back and retrieve the items.

After locking the items within the box, Jian Chen thought for a moment before hurriedly opening the box up once more. Taking the Duanyun Sword and the Seal of Treasure Mountain out, he placed them in a third Space Ring. He knew that the third brother of the Shi family had a method to find the Ruler Armaments, so he needed to separate them from the other precious items.

Nightfall came by quickly, leaving the garden empty. Jian Chen lightly opened the doors and escaped outside with the white tiger. In a moment, he came across the well used by the inhabitants of the building. Taking the Space Ring with the box in it, he tossed it into the well and headed back toward the room he was staying in. Leaping onto the beams of the building, Jian Chen released a sharp amount of Sword Qi from his fingertips and dug a small finger sized hole for the other Space Ring to be placed.

Placing the Space Ring with the Ruler Armaments into this hole,



Jian Chen filled the hole back up, making it extremely hard to notice and utterly impossible for even the gods to know.

After all of this was done, Jian Chen let out a sigh in relief. Even if he were to be discovered, it would still not be easy for either of the two families.

At daybreak, Jian Chen changed his face again. He then hugged the obedient, little white tiger against his chest and lightly rubbed its head as he said in a low voice, “Little tiger, I need to go scout around to figure out the situation, and can’t bring you with me. You have to listen well, and obediently stay here. Don’t go running around, alright?”

The tiger cub’s bright eyes stared up at Jian Chen, leaving him unsure of whether or not his words were understood.

Ignoring the issue, Jian Chen took out several milk bottles and left the tiger cub on the bed before leaving the room.

Jian Chen discreetly made his way onto the streets from the manor. By walking from the alleyway onto the main street, he made it seem like he was just another passerby. He then began to inspect the houses to see what type of area he was in.

On the gates to the villa, a large board could be seen hanging overhead with the words, “Huangpu Trading”. Evidently, this area was heavily reliant on trading.

Remembering the name of the villa, Jian Chen left the area and began to wander around the city.

A First Class City was far bigger and more luxurious than a Second Class City. When one entered a First Class City, one would be able to see several rich and strong looking mercenaries that were clearly not seen in such concentrated amounts anywhere else.

Suddenly, a loud noise could be heard as a squadron of armored soldiers visited store after store as if searching for something. On the road, they continued to question everyone in such a manner that caused everyone to grumble in annoyance and confusion.

Just then, a soldier blocked Jian Chen's path, "Have you seen a person carrying a pure white magical beast anywhere?"

"I have not." Jian Chen's face didn't betray any emotions as he replied.

"You may go. Remember, if you are to see either a snowy white magical beast or a man with perhaps an unnatural bulge, you are to immediately report this to the city lord!" The soldier's face carried a serious look as he stared at Jian Chen.

"Yes, understood. If I see such a thing, I will make sure to notify the city lord straight away." Jian Chen replied.

After that, the soldier didn't pay anymore attention to Jian Chen and left him to interrogate someone else.

After walking down three streets, Jian Chen could see the same soldiers visit every single store or home and block off people to interrogate them.

Carelessly, Jian Chen wandered the streets before finally coming across the city gates. Instead of a steady stream of people walking in or out, there was a large congestion of merchants and travelers.

Walking to the higher levels of one of the nearby restaurants, Jian Chen could only see a large amount of soldiers guarding the city gates with several large vats of water. With each person that tried to enter or leave, the soldiers would use a wet rag to scrub at their faces. Even the rich and powerful were not exempt from this treatment, much to their anger.

Seeing this, Jian Chen couldn't help but smile bitterly. Right now this city was under the complete control of the Jiede clan and the Shi family. With this, they had set out an inescapable net all over the city.

# Chapter 367: Whereabouts Revealed

---

In order to not rouse any suspicion, Jian Chen left the restaurant after some time and immediately went to go buy a Class 2 Magical Beast mount. After disguising himself as a mercenary, he set out for the other three gates to see if they were undergoing a similar situation.

On the way, Jian Chen had been stopped several times over by soldiers. Leisurely answering the questions, Jian Chen could only secretly rejoice to himself about the fact that the soldiers did not require everyone within the city to wash their faces as well. Although his disguise was flawless almost to the point of perfection, it would not hold against water. If he were to be asked to wash his face, his disguise would wash away quickly.

This entire day, Jian Chen could only wander around the city in an attempt to figure out where the eyes and ears of the Jiede clan and the Shi family did not extend to. Although he could see many good places to hide within the city, none were long term hiding spots.

Within the official halls of Huangpu Trading, an elder around the age of seventy could be seen seated at the first spot. On both sides of him, around twenty younger men could be seen with strange glints in their eyes.

The elder sitting at the first spot was the current patriarch of the Huangpu clan. With a bright glow in his eyes, he slowly spoke, "The city is in a strange commotion today. All of the soldiers have been ordered and dispatched to search for a person with an

unknown appearance within the city. I was just notified by the city lord that all of the clans within Moonlight City must comply with the city's operation. In the case that we find a person with a snowy white magical beast or someone with an unnatural bulge, we are to report to the lord immediately." With that, the elder stopped speaking for a moment to look at a middle-aged man near him, "Linde, you are the one in charge of our guards. In a moment go and take half our men to search the area under our control. Then take the other half to comb through our entire compound. In the case that he is spotted, do not let him escape, understood?"

"Yes, patriarch!" The Huangpu clansmen Linde replied before hesitating for a moment, "Patriarch, this is only just a single person, is it necessary to use so much of our resources to find him?"

"That's right, patriarch, I think this is strange as well. Just how could the city lord decree such an order like this. Using the entire garrison to search for a single person within the city, isn't this making a mountain out of a molehill?"

Straight away all of the men sitting down at the table burst into their own misgivings.

The patriarch could only sigh, "This was a sudden development for me as well, but the situation is far more dire than you all believe. If the city lord finds that the person they are looking for was spotted in our territory or decides that we were hiding him on purpose, then the consequences will be severe and our clan may disappear."

Upon hearing this, the group of men sitting down instantly turn pale as they all grew frightened at the consequences.

“Good, this meeting is settled then. Linde, go and lead the search yourself. Do not allow any accidents to happen or any stone left untouched. Otherwise, the damage to our Huangpu clan will be far too severe for us to handle.” The patriarch spoke with a serious look.

“Patriarch, you needn’t worry, I, Linde, will take charge of this matter personally...”

As the Huangpu clan prepared to search for the person, every other minor or major clan in Mingyang City were doing the same thing. The entire atmosphere within the city had grown to a frantic height.

Within the Huangpu clan, a squadron of guards came to the villa to search the place. Whether it was the garden or log house, they did not spare a single room from being searched. Without overlooking anything, they had even searched all of the high ranking member rooms without exception.

At this moment, one of the guards arrived at one of the abandoned rooms and began to search inside.

“Everyone be careful, do not allow even the cupboards to be untouched. Do not let a single detail escape from your eyes.” One of the guards spoke out in warning.

Suddenly, the room that Jian Chen had hidden in was opened with several guards walking in to start rifling around the place.

Sensing the nearby danger, the white tiger cub silently curled up within the corner of the room as both of its bright eyes stared out along with its ears straining to listen for any sound.

At this time, the bedsheets that had fallen to the ground and covered the cub were ripped apart, revealing the face of one of the guards as he looked underneath the bed.

It was very spacious below the bed, and despite the tiger cub's attempt to hide, its snowy white fur was far too eye-catching to escape detection.

“Captain, I’ve found something!” The guard cried out instantly.

Straight away, the captain came into the room with a grace face, “What is it?”

“Captain, take a look under the bed.” The guard crawled down and pointed.

Crawling onto the ground to take a look, the captain soon discovered the white tiger cub that was desperately trying to hide.

“Quickly, notify overseer Linde!” The captain's face grew shocked as he ordered the soldier next to him.

In a flash, the overseer Linde was notified and the moment he saw the white tiger cub, his face grew unnaturally grim as he barked, “Take positions, search the perimeter! In the case you find someone suspicious, apprehend him immediately!”

“Yes!” The guards all replied with equally serious expressions.

Soon after, the white tiger cub had been brought to Linde who then rushed it toward the patriarch’s room. On the way, the white tiger cub had clearly shown its disapproval of Linde by biting and scratching at his arms and chest with a growling sound.

Although the white tiger cub was not an ordinary beast and belonged to the ancient race of the Winged Tiger God, it had only just been born. Right now it was as frail as a newborn infant. Walking was already a hard task, and it did not have enough strength to protect itself.

Within the main halls, the entirety of the upper ranking members of the Huangpu clan had already gathered. Each one with them had a serious expression as they turned to look at the growling white tiger cub in the patriarch’s hands.

“Have you made your investigations? Who raised this tiger cub?” The Huangpu patriarch asked the entire group of people in front of him.

The twenty men in front of him shook their heads slowly before Linde spoke, “Patriarch, I’ve already made inquiries. Within our



Huangpu clan, not a single member has raised this beast, all of them haven't even heard of such a magical beast before."

"Since it's like that, then this magical beast must be the one the city lord is looking for. Linde, go and report this matter to the city lord's mansion straight away." The patriarch spoke gravely.

.....

Even after the city lord had heard the information, the entire city dared not rest. An elder was immediately dispatched to the Huangpu clan, and even the patriarch dared not to say anything out of line to him.

This elder was the third brother of the Shi family who had been waiting in the city lord's mansion for any information. Upon hearing that the cub had been found, the third brother had a small smile on his face, "An entire body of snowy white fur, less than a meter tall and has wings. It appears that this is the tiger that Jian Chen left behind. Haha, Jian Chen, you should know by now. I've already cast an inescapable net across the entire Moonlight City, you cannot escape."

.....

After an entire day, Jian Chen had already transversed the entire Moonlight City on the magical beast mount. The situation had been as he expected, all four gates were being tightly watched and even the inhabitants were being interrogated. Everyone had been forced to wash their faces in order to leave the city, thus removing

any idea Jian Chen had to escape the city with a disguise. His regular appearance had already been drawn and distributed throughout the city, so even if Jian Chen were to use his regular face, he would be spotted instantly.

Jian Chen had rented a room within an inn and had given the Class 2 Magical Beast mount to a waiter to look after. After waiting for nightfall, he slipped out of the inn without a word and leaped back toward the Huangpu compound without being detected. Like a silent shadow jumping over the wall, he carefully ran toward the room where he had hidden the tiger cub.

Creeping into the room, Jian Chen knelt down beside the floor and took out a night pearl from his Space Belt to light up the room. But the moment he looked underneath the bed, it was empty! The white tiger cub was nowhere to be seen.

Jian Chen's face blanched as he immediately looked around the room with the night pearl giving him light. As he looked, he could see a series of footsteps on the dusty ground.

Jian Chen's heart began to beat wildly as his mind came to a single conclusion: the white tiger cub had been captured.

Within the semi illuminated room, Jian Chen clenched his fists tightly as his eyebrows furrowed together. Leaving the room, he immediately raced for the center hall of the compound.

---

## Chapter 368: No Way Out

---

Carefully advancing toward the center hall, Jian Chen began to look around. Jian Chen knew that his identity could be revealed at any moment, but he had to take back the tiger cub at any cost. He had promised Rum Guinness to look after her cub, so he could not allow anything to happen to the cub.

Tonight had been especially quiet in the garden. With it also being very dark and not that many patrolmen, Jian Chen had been able to sneak around to the center hall like a ghost in his pure black clothing. There was an utmost need for stealth if he wanted to take back the tiger.

Just as Jian Chen drew close to the loft in the hall, a familiar sound could be heard in Jian Chen's ears – it was the growling sound of the tiger cub.

Hearing the cries of the tiger cub, Jian Chen had a slight smile on his face as he immediately began to search for where the sound was coming from. He didn't think that it would be that easy to find the cub!

Suddenly, the entire area became brightly lit as torches appeared everywhere around Jian Chen and dyed the place a bright red.

“Jian Chen, you really did return. I was thinking you were going to try and escape this time.” An elderly voice could be heard all of a sudden before a person walked out among the crowd.

The person who had spoke wore a white robe and had a benevolent smile to his face. It was the third brother of the Shi family, and right behind him were the high ranking members of the Huangpu clan. In the hands of the patriarch was the tiger cub.

“Wuuuuu... wuuuuu...” Upon seeing Jian Chen, the tiger cub in the patriarch’s hands grew excited and began to flail its paws in an attempt to get to him. With a small but urgent growl, the four paws began to stamp onto the patriarch’s chest, as if unwilling to be hugged by the patriarch any longer.

Seeing that he had been discovered, Jian Chen leaped out from the shadows after realizing they were useless.

The patriarch of the Huangpu clan began to measure up Jian Chen. From what he could see, this Jian Chen was well under the age of thirty, a youth in every sense of the word.

“Is this really the person the city lord and these respected men are after?” The Huangpu patriarch thought.

Jian Chen gave a leveled glare at the Huangpu patriarch, “Return the tiger cub to me.”

Ignoring Jian Chen’s request, the patriarch turned to the third brother of the Shi family. Although he was the patriarch of a clan, he knew that it was utterly compulsory that he listened to this elder in front of him.

The third brother stared back at Jian Chen evenly, “Jian Chen, I have put up with you long enough. Return the Ruler Armaments back to us immediately or else do not blame us for our actions. Although you are extremely fast, we know you cannot keep it up for long. You cannot escape from us.”

Jian Chen turned to the third brother with a laughing smile, “I’m afraid that even after I return the Ruler Armaments to you, you will use them in return against me. I am no idiot, if you wish to take back the Ruler Armaments, you will have to come and get them!”

“Go die then!” The third brother’s face grew exceedingly dark as he lost the kindly expression on his face. With a frightening glint, he flew toward Jian Chen with his Saint Weapon ready to pierce Jian Chen’s chest.

Although Jian Chen was extremely fast, he was still an Earth Saint Master in the end. Someone on that caliber of strength was no match for a Heaven Saint Master like the third brother.

But when the third brother had taken action, so did Jian Chen. Initializing both the Illusionary Flash and the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune, his entire figure flickered away from existence before reappearing behind the patriarch. Taking back the cub, his feet smashed against the ground and disappeared from the area once again.

A ripple of energy appeared behind Jian Chen’s back as he retreated. In that instant, the third brother had slammed against Jian Chen’s back with extreme force.

“Pch!” Jian Chen spat out a mouthful of blood before disappearing into the night.

The third brother looked up to the sky before letting out a whistle that sounded almost like a clap of thunder within the dark sky. Then, he flew into the sky and chased after Jian Chen like a speeding arrow.

The moment the other Heaven Saint Masters heard the whistle from their positions, they grew startled. Soaring into the sky, they began to look down as if preparing to ambush Jian Chen at any given moment.

With a plan like this, no matter where Jian Chen went, he would be followed and blocked by any one of the Heaven Saint Masters.

Half a moment later, the sound of the sound barrier breaking could be heard as one of the floating Cai brother's eyes squinted. Staring with an amazing amount of focus, he could see a black figure flying at tremendous speeds toward his direction.

The fourth Cai brother let out another whistle, signalling the others to begin the trap. After taking out his own Saint Weapon in preparations, all of the fire elements in the area around him began to gather. With a wave of his hand, a single twenty meter long agglomeration of Sword Qi could be seen before it was sent flying straight for Jian Chen.

As he was escaping, Jian Chen could suddenly felt a large

concentration of Sword Qi being sent overhead. With a startled look, he immediately leaped from the streets onto the rooftop of a nearby building without losing a fraction of speed in his attempt to dodge.

“Bang!” A large fire red Sword Qi smashed into the ground with an explosive bang, filling the air with an intense heat that blew across the environment. All of the buildings nearby crumbled underneath its might, leveling the street. As for right where the Sword Qi had struck, there was a ten meter wide, twenty meter deep crater.

Jian Chen’s face maintained a grave expression as he looked at the crater. From this, he could tell the strength of this person was far stronger than the patriarch of the Moyun clan.

The surrounding air around the Cai brother began to ripple with heat as if a meteorite was streaking through the sky before another attack of Sword Qi smashed into the ground where Jian Chen was. Seeing that Jian Chen’s speed was far too much for him to keep up with, the elder quickly turned the entire place into an ocean of fire so as to ignite even the air. The heat was so intense that it could melt steel.

A Heaven Saint Master was already capable of manipulating the energy of the world. The fourth brother was capable of manipulating the fire elements in the world to form a five hundred meter wide and a hundred meter tall ocean of fire.

Jian Chen growled slightly under his breath as a ripple of Saint Force came out from within him to protect his entire body from

the ocean of fire. At the same time, he used the Illusionary Flash to blow past the attack with another attempt to escape from the city.

Suddenly, another three streaks of fire came across the sky like shooting stars with a fiery trail. Approaching quickly, the closest Heaven Saint Master had already burst outward with another attack of fire.

By this point, Jian Chen was already surrounded by the ocean of fire. It was a hundred meters tall and covered the sky with its flame. There was nowhere in front that Jian Chen could borrow for shelter, so he could only choose to continue leaping forward.

The temperature within the sea of fire had been so hot that the Saint Force he had around his body instantly shattered and ignited his clothes on fire. It was so hot that even his hair, eyebrows, and eyelashes were on the verge of burning up.

Resisting the magma like heat fire all around him, Jian Chen continued to travel toward the exit of the sea of fire.

“Bang!”

Suddenly, a loud explosion could be heard as the sea of fire exploded. Scattering light everywhere, the darkness of the night was illuminated for a brief moment, and those who were sleeping soundly were quickly awakened.

Within the sea of fire still, Jian Chen had suffered a tremendous



hit. Spitting out a mouthful of blood, he managed to escape the radius of fire toward the city.

The elder floating in the air began to gasp for breath with a pale face as he sighed, “Even after using such an explosive wildfire and using up almost all my energy, you weren’t killed. But even that, you are still heavily damaged, I doubt that even you will get far now.”

At this moment, the other three brothers appeared by his side. One of them hurriedly spoke out, “Brother, where is he?”

“He escaped that way, after him, quick.”

The four brothers immediately gave chase, and not too long after, another azure glow could be seen streaking past the four brothers and toward the direction where Jian Chen had disappeared to.

With his heavy injuries, Jian Chen couldn’t travel along the road fast enough, but it was still at a decent pace. An hour later, Jian Chen arrived at a forest. Back during the ocean of fire, Jian Chen had made sure to protect the tiger cub to the best of his abilities so it had not been injured at all.

With another mouthful of blood, Jian Chen slowly tried to regain his breath. Right about now, he had used up two thirds of his Saint Force, making it impossible for him to escape from the Heaven Saint Masters.

Suddenly, an azure glow could be seen across the sky as the wind attributed Heaven Saint Master chased after Jian Chen.

Sighing to himself inwardly, Jian Chen resigned himself to accepting that calamity will befall him. Petting the tiger wrapped up in his chest, Jian Chen could only feel shame. He had promised Rum Guinness to take care of her child, but now that he was stuck in this situation, he had no more power to do so.

Looking for a tree, Jian Chen used his fists to rip apart a hole in its trunk. Carefully putting down the white tiger in it, he covered the hole back up to prevent anyone from noticing. Then, turning around, he began to leave the area.

He continued to run a little farther, so that they would be far enough away from the tiger cub. Jian Chen stopped to catch his breath and waited for the Heaven Saint Master to come. Right now, he had given up on running away. The Heaven Saint Master was nearly upon him. It was time for him to repay them for the damage he had taken from the sea of fire.

# Chapter 369: A Fusion Of The Azure And Violet Sword Qi

---

Not too long after, an azure streak of light could be seen at the very end of the horizon. Flying toward Jian Chen with a blinding speed, the Heaven Saint Master came to a stop in the air above Jian Chen.

Although it was dark outside, this would not impact a Heaven Saint Master at all.

“Jian Chen, keep on running, why did you stop?” The third elder spoke with a cold sneer fifty meters in the air. He was no longer the amiable person from before. After squandering so much time to catch Jian Chen, the third elder had already lost his kindly temperament.

Sitting down on the ground, Jian Chen was currently using a Class 5 Monster Core to recover his strength. Even if he had decided on not running away, he did not plan on making it easy for the Heaven Saint Masters. At his death, there would be a heavy price to pay.

The third elder floating above Jian Chen calmly without making a single move. The other members from the Jiede clan and Shi family weren't here yet, so he had no plans on making a move toward Jian Chen. He had to make sure the rest of them would come first so as to save face for the other clan and disrupt the relationship they had between them.

An hour later, two of the Heaven Saint Masters from the Jiede clan and the remaining brothers of the Cai family arrived. The eight Heaven Saint Masters then locked Jian Chen within a ring, making escape impossible for him.

“Jian Chen, return the Duanyun Sword and we will leave your body intact.” The Jiede clan elder barked.

“Return the Seal of Treasure Mountain or else we will make sure that you will beg for death!” Roared another of the Cai brothers.

Hearing these two men try to command him, Jian Chen snorted as he leaped up and tossed the still undrained Class 5 Monster Core at the Cai brothers. “If you wish for your Ruler Armament back, then come and take it. For such a mighty bunch of Heaven Saint Masters, you are unable to chase down a single Earth Saint Master. If it were not for my inadequate Saint Force, you would have no chance of catching me. What a useless bunch.”

The eight Heaven Saint Masters grew gray in the face as they heard Jian Chen’s words. They knew all too much already that not being able to catch a single Earth Saint Master was an undeniably shameful thing.

“Disgraceful child, allow me to see just what ability you have!” The fourth elder barked out as he rushed toward Jian Chen with his yellow giant sword billowing outward with Saint Force.

An explosive glare could be seen in Jian Chen’s eyes as he brought his awareness to the highest level possible. Using the

Spirit Sword, the Light Wind Sword instantly became a bright silver light that shot toward the fourth elder's throat with a sonic boom like sound.

It was as if the sword had reached the speed of light. Flying through the air and leaving behind after images of itself, almost no one could see it clearly thanks to its speed and the added bonus of the night.

Caught off guard, the fourth elder had his throat pierced straight through with the sword, leaving behind a large hole. Straight after the sword left from the fourth elder's throat, it flew straight toward the third elder fifty meters above the ground.

The third elder's eye released a refined glint as a large amount of Saint Force flooded out from his body, protecting him completely. The moment the sword made contact, its momentum began to slow down instantaneously before stopping completely.

At the same time, a single machete appeared within the third elder's hand. With an explosive bang, the air around the machete began to distort from the energy being gathered within it. Then, with a grunt, the third elder brought the machete smashing down upon Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword.

“Ding!”

With a crisp metallic sound, the Light Wind Sword dropped down to the ground powerlessly. On the blade, there was a single crack.

“Pft!” Jian Chen sprayed out a mouthful of blood from the damage dealt to him. With his Light Wind Sword connected to him and being damaged while using the Spirit Sword, his senses had been harmonized with the weapon itself. Not only did the third elder’s strike damage his Saint Weapon, but it had dealt a heavy blow to his Spirit as well, causing a headache for Jian Chen.

Even after having a large hole blown through his throat, the fourth elder of the Shi family was like the ancestor of the Moyun clan and did not die. Instead, the fourth elder looked at Jian Chen with a newfound fear. He had only been a few meters away from Jian Chen and didn’t have much time to prepare himself, but that instant had led to him being unable to defend himself against the Light Wind Sword.

If he was an Earth Saint Master, then he would have died instantly.

“Quick, hurry up and refine this!” The third elder took out a pill. Instead of placing it within his mouth for the fourth elder to chew, he tossed it into the hole left behind by Jian Chen.

With difficulty, Jian Chen managed to recall the Light Wind Sword back to his hand. There was some pain in his heart as he gazed at the crack in his sword. The power contained within the machete of the third elder was far too much for his own sword to handle.

Suddenly, a fire red glow appeared above Jian Chen’s head,

illuminating the area completely. Lifting his head up, Jian Chen could only see the eldest Cai brother begin to manipulate the fire elements within the world before shooting it toward him. The amount of pure berserk energy swelling up from the blast scared even Jian Chen.

Throwing away his hesitation, Jian Chen threw himself to the ground and rolled away right as the giant sword of fire slammed into the ground where Jian Chen once stood. The entire ground began to shake before splitting apart to reveal a thirty meter long fissure.

Just as Jian Chen stood back up, a strong gust of wind could be felt coming from behind him. One of the elders from the Jiede clan had suddenly appeared behind Jian Chen to stab him with his water attributed Saint Weapon.

Turning around abruptly, Jian Chen used the Heaven's Stolen Fortune to multiply his strength three times over. The Light Wind Sword in his hand began to glow with an azure and violet light as it struck against the other elder's Saint Weapon.

Following another explosive boom, Jian Chen spat out another mouthful of blood as he was thrown back down to the ground. Each and every Heaven Saint Master here was far stronger than the Moyun clan ancestor, and with Jian Chen's strength nearly running dry, he was in no position to take a single blow from any of them.

"Cough!" Jian Chen continued to spit out blood as his face turned paler and paler. A large amount of blood had already escaped his

body, and with so many severe blows, his fighting strength was all but gone.

“Brat, I’ll make sure that you will beg for death.” A coarse voice could be heard as the fourth elder of the Cai family coughed out the words with difficulty. Landing on the ground, he took out his Saint Weapon and stalked toward Jian Chen.

Biting his lip, Jian Chen struggled to climb back up and clasp onto his weapon. After taking on the blow from the Jiede clan elder, several more cracks appeared on his sword.

“Even if I die, I won’t allow you all to claim my life so easily.” Despite the heavy injuries, Jian Chen still had a resolute glare in his eyes. A faint glow of azure and violet appeared on his sword once more, covering the entirety of his sword. However this time, the two colors began to meld together.

As the fourth elder drew close to Jian Chen, he swung the sword horizontally in an attempt to behead Jian Chen.

A crazed expression overtook Jian Chen’s eyes as he clutched his sword tightly. In that split moment, the combined azure and violet light began to shake for a moment before the lights started to flicker and fully harmonize with each other.

Just as the two Sword Qi fused with each other, an eye piercing light shot forth from the Light Wind Sword. No longer was the light purely azure or violet, it was now the two colors combined. There was azure in the violet, and violet in the azure as if the two



were one the entire time.

Suddenly, an unbelievably strong amount of Sword Qi appeared and filled up the entire area. In a second, the entire world seemed as if it belonged to this realm of the “Sword”. No matter where anyone went to, all they could feel was the overwhelming power of Sword Qi.

This amount of Sword Qi was almost unbelievable to imagine. It allowed anyone to believe that it was strong enough to set the heavens aflame or even destroy the firmament of the heavens. But in the Light Wind Sword, there was still a minute crack to be seen.

This scene had caused all eight of the Heaven Saint Masters to grow aghast at this unexpected change. Their eyes began to widen as they stared at the explosive light pouring out from the Light Wind Sword with a mystified look. When it came to this Sword Qi, all they could feel was dread.

“Jus... just what is this energy?” The eldest Cai brother’s voice began to tremble with fear.

Suddenly, a gentle gust of wind blew across the eight Heaven Saint Masters, reducing parts of their clothes to tiny fragments. Blade marks began to appear all over their bodies and even their hair was reduced to tiny pieces as if grounded into powder. Slowly, blood began to appear from their wounds and dyed their entire body with its redness.

The entire air around the area was no longer the same simple air,

it was now imbued completely with Sword Qi. When the light wind had blown across their bodies, it was the same as being struck with countless blades of Sword Qi. Even if they were to breathe in a breath of air, their inner organs and viscera would be instantly cut apart by the Sword Qi gathered around them.

With the fusion of the azure and violet Sword Qi, the entire area had become a realm ruled by the sword. This was a domain where only the Sword Qi remained supreme.

Each of the eight Heaven Saint Masters were utterly breathless. Shortly afterward, they began to release a large amount of Saint Force within their bodies in an attempt to protect themselves from the Sword Qi that was looming all around them.

“Quick, kill him!” The third elder spoke with unconcealed fear and a trembling voice.

# Chapter 370: Eternal Damnation

---

“Quick, kill him!” The third elder spoke with unconcealed fear and a trembling voice.

The third elder’s words seemed to have a rousing effect on everyone. Instantly snapping out of their stupor, they all began to charge at Jian Chen.

The closest person to Jian Chen was the fourth elder whose eyes radiated with a fierce glow. Just as he stalked toward Jian Chen to swing his sword, a sudden change overcame his face. This was because he had unexpectedly felt his body being squashed with an unknown amount of pressure from the surrounding air. Like an invisible restraint, he was unable to break free from his confines no matter just how much force he put into his movements.

Jian Chen’s eyes began to dilate with a strange craze to them. He would not hesitate at all to pay a heavy price if it meant fighting with all his strength. Waving the Light Wind Sword in his right hand, he stabbed the azure and violet Sword Qi infused Light Wind Sword toward the fourth elder’s Saint Weapon.

“Ding!”

As if his Saint Weapon was tofu, the fourth elder’s Saint Weapon shattered into two pieces. With a muffled cry, a large amount of blood came out of his mouth as his face grew deathly pale.

Even after breaking apart the fourth elder’s Saint Weapon, Jian

Chen didn't have the luxury of being surprised. With a wave of his hand, he brought the Light Wind Sword down and stabbed it straight through the elder's chest.

“Ah!” The fourth elder let out a miserable shriek of pain as the azure and violet Sword Qi stabbed into his body. It was as if an unbelievable amount of power was erupting within him as the fused Sword Qi shot throughout every point in his body. In an instant, his entire body became mutilated and his bones reduced to dust.

By this point, the remaining Heaven Saint Masters had already shot down with their Sword Qi aimed at Jian Chen.

Abruptly turning around, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword tore apart the skies with Sword Qi as it defended itself against the other attacks. Wherever the sword moved, a black fissure followed.

When the seven Heaven Saint Master's Sword Qi struck against the fused Sword Qi of Jian Chen, not a single of them could predict that their attacks would dissipate into the void.

“Fourth elder!” Upon seeing the mutilated body of the fourth elder, the third elder's teeth nearly fractured under the intense grinding. Fury overtook his face as he roared out in anguish.

Even now, Jian Chen continued to spit out blood – even his pores had started to leak with it. Not only was the Light Wind Sword in his hand fractured, but several cracks in Jian Chen's skin could be seen, slowly oozing blood onto the outside surface.

The amalgamation of the azure and violet Sword Qi amazed everyone with its power. However with Jian Chen's current strength, he was unable to control this powerful source of energy. Since Jian Chen wasn't able to control it, he suffered from the repercussions. If this went on for any longer, even if he didn't die from the Heaven Saint Masters, then he would perish by the repercussions.

"Ah!" The longer Jian Chen wielded the fused azure and violet Sword Qi, the stronger the repercussions would be. The torment on both his mind and body had caused Jian Chen to howl out almost animalistically. Leaping into the air with reckless abandon, he charged toward the closest Heaven Saint Master and scattered the light from his sword onto him. The moment the Heaven Saint Master had the sword pointed at him, he suddenly froze in place.

Feeling the attack of Jian Chen, the eldest Cai brother blanched as he tried to retreat back only to feel terrified when he realized that he was stuck in place. Even the space around him seemed to have frozen in place as he stood firmly in place without being able to budge.

Overwhelmed with shock and terror, the eldest brother immediately tried to use his inner Saint Force in order to break free of his constraints. In the end, it was futile, he made no advancements anywhere.

Right in front of the terrified eyes of the eldest brother, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword speared straight through his chest before the fused Sword Qi exploded within his body. In an instant,

his entire body exploded into small pieces of flesh and bone before the eldest brother could even scream. And thus, the eldest Cai brother had his life extinguished.

“Pch!”

After killing the eldest brother, Jian Chen let out yet another mouthful of blood. The repercussions were already reaching the limits of what Jian Chen could handle. Blood was starting to drip from all seven openings on his heads, and combined with his extremely pale face, this visage made him seem like a horrifying ghost.

“Eldest brother...”

“Eldest brother...”

“El... eldest brother...”

As soon as their eldest brother died, the other three brother's eyes grew bloodshot with anger and disbelief.

“Blast it all, just what energy is this?! How could it be this strong? We must kill him quickly, or else we are all in danger!” An elder from the Jiede clan cried out.

“We cannot delay any longer, unleash your battle skills!” The third elder spoke in a serious tone. Two Heaven Saint Masters had already died by Jian Chen's hand. This was a result that he had not

expected – he had never heard of an Earth Saint Master that could kill a Heaven Saint Master.

With a mutual look at each other, the two elders from the Jiede clan immediately began to utilize their Heaven Tier Battle Skills while the third elder began to make his move as well.

“Jian Chen, you shall pay for the death of our eldest brother with your life!” The third brother roared out loud in righteous fury as he began to use an Advanced Earth Tier Battle Skill along with his other two brothers.

With the Heaven Saint Masters all using their battle skills, the combined power was far greater than the Heaven Tier Battle Skill Ming Dong had used. With just the three Earth Tier Battle Skills, an oppressive amount of power forced itself onto Jian Chen’s body, causing him to gasp as his bones began to crack under the pressure.

In the form of a large long ranged attack, the three brothers of the Cai family released a flame that seared across the skies and shot toward Jian Chen.

“Ah!” Jian Chen let out a howl to the heavens as he focused all of his strength into his right arm and brought his Light Wind Sword smashing down onto the attack aimed at him.

The fused Sword Qi had devoured the attack from the three brothers and instantly shattered their Saint Weapons at the same time. At the very moment their weapons broke, the three brother’s

blood instantly filled the sky.

The glow on Jian Chen's sword began to dissipate now that Jian Chen had reached his limit and could no longer handle either the fused Sword Qi or the repercussions that came along with it.

Suddenly, the weather began to grow unstable as a single layer of black clouds began to descend down from the skies. Several flashes of lightning could be seen crackling within the clouds as well. The atmosphere began to grow tense as the entire area was slowly consumed by this new source of power, .

Following soon after, an unbelievably strong amount of pressure descended upon Jian Chen, forcing his bones to crack and shatter.

Facing the sky with an even paler face, Jian Chen could only see the two elders from the Jiede clan and the third elder from the Shi family protect themselves with a layer of Saint Force. Floating high in the sky, the three Heaven Saint Masters were using their Heaven Tier Battle Skills at the same time with a power so large that they had influenced the weather itself.

A sharp stinging pain could be felt all over Jian Chen's body as he struggled to keep himself standing upright with a victorious smile. He had already pulled two Heaven Saint Masters to their deaths and shattered the Saint Weapons of the three remaining Cai brothers. If he could take their battle skills, then even death would be worth it!

In a flash, the preparation time for the three Heaven Saint



Masters came to an end. In the next moment, three rays of dazzling light could be seen jetting toward Jian Chen with a speed that shook the air around them. The three Heaven Saint Masters were all extremely cautious and did not want to use their Saint Weapons to clash with Jian Chen.

Unconsciously, Jian Chen had readied his already fractured Light Wind Sword up in a guard stance. Following a loud bang, the three Heaven Saint Master's battle skills struck Jian Chen's weapon and body.

Without any sort of resistance, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword shattered. Filling the air with the pieces of the sword, it began to transform back into the energy of the world and return to the void.

Like a kite without an anchor, Jian Chen's body was blown back fifty meters and fell to the floor ruthlessly. It had taken him another twenty meters before his body had come to a rest after tumbling like a ball in motion.

There was already a large hole in the cavity of his chest, leaving behind just plain air where his inner organs should be. From head to toe, Jian Chen's body was covered with blood and not a single part of his body was left untouched by blood.

An azure streak of light could be seen as the third elder flew to Jian Chen's side. He had no plans on going easy on Jian Chen and immediately stabbed into his heart with his machete, running through his chest completely.

The light in Jian Chen's eyes began to grow dimmer. He couldn't help but struggle to keep his eyes open before ultimately closing them for good.

In the next moment, Jian Chen's consciousness returned to a formless state. His own spirit had already begun to depart from the world and his senses grew dull to the outside world. At the final moments before his spirit would disappear for good, Jian Chen couldn't help but think back to memories of his mother Bi Yuntian, his father Changyang Ba, his eldest brother Changyang Hu, his eldest sister Changyang Mingyue, his fellow student Tie Ta from Kargath Academy, and the close friends he had made, Qin Xiao and Ming Dong.

“This... is this the feeling of death?”

“Mother... I'm sorry. Your child was not able to pay respect to you in the end...”

“Eldest brother, second sister, thank you for taking care of me in the past. In the next life, I, Jian Chen, will definitely repay you...”

“Captain Kendall, forgive me... I couldn't fulfill your final wishes...”

“Ming Dong, Qin Xiao, my brothers. This is goodbye... I won't be seeing you again...”

Jian Chen's mind continued to flash with memory after memory

as his state of mind grew even more chaotic. He could tell that his time was growing to an end.

# Chapter 371: Escape From Calamity

---

The two Jiede clan elders and the third elder from the Shi family all gathered by Jian Chen's body. Although they had managed to kill Jian Chen, their faces did not seem very healthy.

That was because they were still frightened out of their minds from the battle. The frightful amount of energy that Jian Chen managed to release, and used to kill the fourth elder and the eldest brother of the Cai family was quick and simple. In the end, even the three Cai brothers had their Saint Weapons destroyed. This was a show of power that was far beyond what a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master could accomplish. This left the three remaining survivors terrified since Jian Chen was only an Earth Saint Master.

“Jian Chen's final burst of energy came from nowhere, just how strong was that blast?” One of the Jiede clan members gravely asked.

Silently, the third elder began to ponder for a moment, “Jian Chen is quite the strange individual. He must have cultivated some sort of secret technique that is unknown to us.”

“It would appear Jian Chen is no ordinary figure. Let us hope that no strong clan supports him.” The other Jiede clan member worriedly spoke.

“That is unlikely. If Jian Chen truly did have a strong clan

secretly supporting him, someone would've come to his rescue when we were chasing him ages ago. It is my guess that Jian Chen was fortunate enough to come across moments where he had gained unbelievable power boosts." The third elder spoke.

"That's true. We've killed him already, so there is no need to talk about this. Let's take back our Ruler Armaments then. Most likely, Jian Chen's Space Ring will hold items of value. If we come across some sort of extraordinary battle skill or miraculous cultivation method, I propose that both of our clans share it in order to avoid a monopoly." The elder from the Jiede clan spoke.

Without any hesitation, the third elder replied, "Of course. For now, let us take Jian Chen's Space Ring and take back what is ours." The third elder didn't wish to take Jian Chen's Space Ring without the consent of the other two factions since his Space Ring would also contain the property of the Jiede clan.

After the two elders from the Jiede clan nodded their heads, the third elder took Jian Chen's Space Ring. Silently he put up his guard against the other two elders, he carefully began to inspect Jian Chen's Space Ring.

After a while, the third elder's face blanched as he cried out in shock, "This is terrible, the Ruler Armaments aren't inside!"

"What!" The two elders cried out in shock as well.

"Let me see!" One of the elders took the Space Ring from the third elder's hand and began to rifle through it impatiently before

his expression became extremely ugly.

“That scoundrel!” The elder cried as he flung the Space Ring to the ground with a displeased look.

The third elder looked at Jian Chen’s body with a furious look, “What a rogue Jian Chen is. With the Ruler Armaments hidden, they will be difficult for us to find them.”

“This is troublesome, where could the Ruler Armaments be? If they are within a Space Ring, it has to be within ten meters for our secret method to sense it. Is it possible that we’ll be forced to plead the ancestor to use his energy to search for the missing Ruler Armaments?” The second elder from the Jiede clan spoke as he glared daggers at Jian Chen.

The third elder let out a sigh as he slowly tried to calm himself. “Back in Mercenary City, I could still detect that the Seal of Treasure Mountain was located on Jian Chen. It would appear that after leaving Mercenary City, he was able to hide them somewhere. Finding a ring that doesn’t emit any energy fluctuations within such a large area would be as hard as scaling the heavens.”

“It appears that we can only report this matter back to the clan. Let them hire a few people to trace Jian Chen’s steps to look for it. If they really cannot find it, then the ancestor will have to squander some of his strength to recall his Ruler Armament.” The Jiede clan elder said.

“That’s the only thing we can do.”

After the three men had discussed what to do, the two elders from the Jiede clan quickly left the area. They had to make sure this information would get back to the clan quickly. After they left, the third elder took the three crippled brothers and the two corpses before leaving as well.

Jian Chen's body gradually began to lose heat as his life continued to fade away. Right now, even his powerful soul was already close to disappearing due to all of the serious wounds he had sustained. The third elder had even stabbed through his head with his machete. If this had been anyone else, they would have died long ago.

The world began to grow dark, and the surroundings grew quiet. Only a mess remained where Jian Chen had fought, like evidence of how bitter the great fight had been.

Suddenly, an azure and violet glow began to drift up from Jian Chen's body. These were the two Sword Spirits that had resided within Jian Chen's dantian. They were trying to escape from Jian Chen's body and to the outside world, and within the two glows was a single stone that continued to shine a bright, multicolored spectrum that was dazzling to the eye.

It was the Multicolored Stone that Jian Chen had bought back in Walaurent City. The volume of the stone has already shrunk down to the size of a finger.

The azure and violet Sword Spirits and the Multicolored Stone

began to float toward Jian Chen's eyebrows. Slowly descending downward, the Multicolored Stone began to fuse into the space between Jian Chen's eyebrows before disappearing from view.

The moment the Sword Spirits entered Jian Chen's head, an indescribable amount of attraction could be felt, pulling Jian Chen's drifting soul back into his head.

Thanks to the Sword Spirits, Jian Chen's incessantly dissipating soul temporarily stabilized. Afterward, the three began to combine together in Jian Chen's conscious, fusing with Jian Chen's soul...

An hour later, a figure could be seen flying through the air. When he passed this area, he suddenly stopped in midair, then quickly descended to where Jian Chen's body lay. Giving the body a quick look, the figure couldn't help sharply inhale as he muttered, "What a tenacious life force. With even his head stabbed, his soul has yet to fade away. Bah, since you're not dead with such serious injuries, I'll take you home." With that, the man waved his hand and enveloped Jian Chen with a gentle Saint Force, bringing him along through the air.



## Chapter 372: A Tragic Sight

---

On the second day after Jian Chen's defeat, a tree trunk concealed by several branches in the forest began to shake for a moment before a white-maned winged tiger came crawling out of the tree. Both of its shiny eyes looked around its surroundings before letting out a growl.

After looking in every direction and mewling for half the day, the white tiger cub began to sniff the area before heading in the direction of Jian Chen.

The tiger cub was extremely young and its paws couldn't support its own weight for an extended period of time. So it could only run for a short amount of time before resting and continuing the pattern.

.....

After an unknown amount of time, Jian Chen's muddled head began to clear up as he tried to open his eyes with difficulty. The very first thing he noticed was a wooden roof. Although it was a bit worn down, it was still quite clean.

Suddenly, a wave of pain attacked Jian Chen's head, causing him to cry out in pain. Because of the inexplicable pain in his head, Jian Chen's face grew deathly pale without a hint of blood to be seen. The muscles on his face couldn't help but quiver as he felt the room begin to shake before Jian Chen's head fell to the side and he lost consciousness.

Not too long after Jian Chen had fainted, a creaking sound could be heard as the wooden door to the room creaked open and a fat male around the age of twenty years old appeared. The male walked over to Jian Chen's bed, but the moment he saw Jian Chen's sleeping posture, his hand reached to scratch his own head, "Strange, I could have sworn I heard a sound. How has he not awoken yet, it's been three days already." With that, the fatty left the room.

.....

For three days straight, the white tiger cub continued to stumble and crawl on the road. Climbing across steep mountains and even falling down from them, the white tiger cub didn't even get a scratch on its tender skin. The only change was that its fur was gray in color with the dust.

After three days of dangerous traveling, the white tiger cub had finally arrived at the battleground where Jian Chen and the Heaven Saint Master had fought.

Sniffing the area, the tiger cub began to growl out loud with an urgent tone as if it was crying with grief. Running with all of its might toward a large patch of dried blood, the ground even had bits and pieces of Jian Chen's body.

Letting out another roar in sadness, the tiger cub looked around the area once more before sniffing the bloody patch of ground. Then, with a small nudge of its nose, the tiger cub took a piece of

Jian Chen's inner organs and put it into its mouth.

Although the tiny part of the inner organ had already withered up, there was still a large concentration of energy within it. After eating the body piece, the white tiger cub began to feel a large amount of energy within its four limbs. It was as if it had enough energy to support its entire body. There was enough to the point where the tiger cub could feel several sharp fangs starting to grow within its mouth.

As the tiger cub continued to eat the remaining parts left behind by Jian Chen, it continued to howl in sadness. Not too long afterward, the entire area had been cleaned up by the tiger cub.

By this point, while there was no significant change in the tiger cub's body, its ability to move around had grown significantly. All four of its limbs were sturdy and strong and it no longer had the same difficulty moving anymore nor were its movements awkward.

Opening its mouth, the cub took one bite of the nearby dirt before spitting it back out. The originally bloody dirt had returned to its original state as if there had been no blood in the first place.

After ten hours, the white tiger cub had fully cleaned up the area so that not a single speck of Jian Chen's blood remained. Not only Jian Chen's blood had been taken, but even the opposing Heaven Saint Masters had been absorbed. For the tiger cub, the amount of energy remaining in their blood was like a tonic for it.

After absorbing all of the energy, the white tiger cub had grown even stronger. Even the sharp fangs in its mouth had grown bigger and sharper.

Once all of the blood was absorbed, the white tiger cub continued to circle around the area with its nose constantly sniffing. Finally, it broke out into a run that made it look like it was flying as the wings on its back unfolded almost like it was preparing to fly.

.....

A series of pictures began to flow through the chaotic space in Jian Chen's unconscious mind, one after the other in the form of a grotesque gas. Sometimes, he would see a white haired elder; sometimes he would see a red cloud that tore through the air itself with its lightning. Sometimes, it was the two azure and violet Sword Spirits appearing as if they were lovers as they flew through the sky and danced with the metallic song of swords. Occasionally, the figure of a single crane-haired elder could be seen wielding the two azure and violet Deity Swords as he flew through the air and decimated magical beast after magical beast. At times, the two Deity Swords fused into one and created chaos throughout the world, destroying both enemies and the world itself.

Then, Jian Chen saw the azure and violet Deity Swords shatter apart into the world and slowly disappear into a mountain range....

After an unknown amount of time, Jian Chen opened his eyes once more as he woke up. Immediately, a dizzying sensation began to occur in his head once more, but it wasn't as severe as the first wave. Therefore, this time Jian Chen did not fall unconscious.

Staring blankly all around him, Jian Chen could see that he was currently resting upon a bed in a wooden house. His back was up against a wooden bed and footprints could still be seen on the floor. The room itself wasn't all that big and was roughly eight meters wide with very little furniture.

“Where is this place?” Jian Chen began to look around himself with confusion. But when he tried to climb out of the bed, more pain struck and snaked up his body, wracking his nerves.

The sudden intense pain caused Jian Chen to cry out once more and break out into a cold sweat. His originally healthy red face once again turned pale.

Gritting his teeth, Jian Chen lifted his head with difficulty to observe his surroundings. This time, he immediately froze in place as he saw a thirty centimeter hole in his chest, nearly separating his entire body into two in a grotesque shape. There was dried blood everywhere around the wound. This wound would horrify any person.

Seeing the situation he was in, a tidal wave of memories began to charge forth into his mind from when he was battling the eight Heaven Saint Masters.

“Did I not die?” Jian Chen's expression was rather dazed, but he soon regained himself as a joyous look overcame him.

“I didn't die, I really didn't die!” Jian Chen couldn't hold in the

emotions within himself. As soon as his body began to tremble, the wound in his chest began to act up, causing Jian Chen to grit his teeth together.

After a moment, the pain abated, leaving Jian Chen to collapse back onto the bed weakly gasping for breath. Laying there quietly without any energy, he began to think about his condition.

A clear image of his current state could be seen within his mind. His perspective was a lot stronger than what it was before, but he couldn't feel happy about that just yet, and neither could he feel anything in his current state. Right now, the situation that had happened to him had left him in shock.

His current situation was extremely grave – it was practically a total mess. All of his organs were on the verge of failing and even his heart was shattered, but even after such a serious blow, he had not died.

But that had not been the most serious thing. The true extent of the damage that Jian Chen suffered was from the Light Wind Sword which broke after years of bitter cultivation. Although his dantian had not yet disappeared, there were no signs of the Sword Spirits.

Even his Saint Weapon had been broken without a trace. The dantian had lost all source of his energy, meaning all of his cultivation had been lost irrevocably.

Jian Chen had been utterly dumbfounded. After losing his Saint

Weapon, he had gone from a talented genius of renown to becoming a cripple. This was an incredibly serious blow to him.

“Could it be? Am I now a cripple?” Jian Chen continued to stare at the ceiling with a dazed look. His eyes were filled with an unwillingness. This was because he had far too many things to accomplish still, and in order to accomplish them, he would need a tremendous amount of power.

“Creak!”

At that moment, the door suddenly creaked open as a middle-aged man walked through the doors. He was around forty years old with a steady face and wore clothes that were patched all over. Despite the poor clothing, they did nothing to hide his unordinary air.

“You’re awake.” The man stared at Jian Chen.

Regaining his senses, Jian Chen looked at the middle-aged man listlessly, “I thank you for rescuing me.”

The man walked toward Jian Chen and stopped at his bedside with a smile, “You are truly tenacious in order to take such a fatal blow without dying. If this were anyone else, even a Heaven Saint Master would have died.”

The man suddenly stopped talking for a moment, “The wounds you suffered were horrifying, to say the least. Even your inner

organs were crushed. Aside from a high leveled Heaven Saint Master healing you, it will be incredibly difficult to heal your wounds.”

Jian Chen was silent as he took in the information. With his Saint Weapon destroyed, he had lost all of his martial abilities.

Seeing the look of daze in Jian Chen’s eyes, the middle-aged man sighed, “Kid, think for a moment. Even if you were crippled, you can still live an ordinary life. Although it will be difficult to do anything marvelous, you’ll learn to deal with it. I’ll go ask my father later for a Radiant Saint Pill so that you can heal faster.”



# Chapter 373: Soul Aberration

---

Once the middle-aged man left, the room descended into a quiet calm. The only thing that could be heard was the faint breathing of Jian Chen as he looked up at the ceiling. His Saint Weapon had been broken. Years of bitter cultivation and hard work, it had all been lost in the most dire situation of his life. This was a blow that was unbearable for him.

He wanted to go home. He wanted to enact his revenge upon the Hua Yun Sect. There was just too many things he wanted to do. But to do all of them, strength would be needed. Yet now he had degenerated to a cripple. Legends had it that even if a cripple were to reincarnate, it would still take a tremendous amount of time and effort to become an Earth Saint Master. The Gesun Kingdom was at its moment of peril as well, meaning that there was an unknown amount of time before even the Changyang clan would no longer be able to hold on. He couldn't try risking the chances of being reincarnated again.

At that moment, the doors to the room opened up as a simple looking fat man around twenty years old came walking in with simple clothing.

The fat man walked to Jian Chen's side and looked at the open eyes of Jian Chen with a pleasant smile. "Ah, you're finally awake. You've been asleep for several days already."

The depressed Jian Chen looked as if he hadn't heard a single word from the fatty and continued to look up toward the ceiling in a daze.

Seeing the listless expression on Jian Chen's face, the fatty had a suspicious look on his face. Looking up toward the ceiling, he then waved a hand over Jian Chen's eyes. "Hey, are you alright? Why are you looking up there, is there anything good to look at up there?"

Jian Chen didn't reply and his pupils hadn't registered any movements either.

Scratching at his head, the fatty's eyebrows creased together as he muttered, "I heard from father that you were on the verge of death, but your spirit had yet to disappear. Did your soul take some sort of damage and turn you into a vegetable?"

The fatty extended an arm out to rouse Jian Chen from his stupor, but the moment he saw the frightful wound on Jian Chen's chest, his hand froze in midair. "With such a wound like this, shaking your body would definitely hurt. No no, I can't do that... Hey, are you okay or not? Can you even hear the words coming out of my mouth?" Both of the fatty's eyes stared at Jian Chen's face with an expectant look.

Then, Jian Chen's eyes registered something as they swiveled toward the fatty before speaking softly, "Who are you?"

"Haha, so you finally speak, and you're not a vegetable after all. I was wondering if you had any questions." The fatty beamed before introducing himself, "Hello, I am Xiu Tianyu, but everyone in the village calls me Little Fatty, so feel free to call me either name. Do

you still remember your name?”

“I am Jian Chen.” Jian Chen spoke with some difficulty before turning back to look at the ceiling once more.

“Woah, so you even know your name still. That’s good, you haven’t suffered any retardation.” The fatty spoke with a pleasant smile as if Jian Chen not becoming a “Retard” was a good thing.

The fatty stilled as he looked at the wound on Jian Chen’s chest with curiosity. “Jian Chen, just what type of magical beast did you fight in order to gain those wounds? Do you want me to have my dad to bring it back? You don’t need to worry, my father is extremely powerful. He’d definitely bring it back and you can have your revenge.”

“Hey, why are you quiet again, do you not like talking or what?”

“Hey hey, just what’s so good looking on the ceiling that makes you stare at it so much? I built this room two years ago, is it not up to your standards or something?”

“Hey, Jian Chen, say something. Do you not like hearing me talk?”

But Jian Chen didn’t say another word and continued to stare at the ceiling in a stupor while the fatty continued to speak into his ear.

“Tianyu!” A voice rang out as the previous middle-aged man from before entered the room.

“Dad, you’re back! Why is he looking at the ceiling so much, he doesn’t look like he has become an idiot.” The fatty began to plead to his father for an answer.

With a light voice, the man replied, “Tianyu, this man has suffered wounds that he has not healed from, let him rest for now.”

“Oh, I get it. Then Dad, I’ll be leaving now.” The fatty said before leaving the room.

The middle-aged man walked toward Jian Chen’s bed and handed him a round looking pill. “I know you’ve suffered an unbearable amount of damage, but don’t think about it too much for now. Just focus on your recuperation, living is the most important thing.” He spoke before inserting the white colored pill into Jian Chen’s mouth.

“This is a Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill, although it cannot heal your wounds completely, it’ll at the very least patch up the hole in your chest.” With that, he left the room once more.

Jian Chen’s entire body was then enveloped by a milky white glow as the Radiant Saint Force within the pill began to leak out. The amount of Radiant Saint Force in the pill was so strong that even Jian Chen at his peak would still barely be able to match up to even a single percent.

This was the difference in “Quality”!

With Jian Chen’s entire body enveloped in Radiant Saint Force, his wounds began to heal at tremendous speeds, forcing even the hole in his chest to regenerate with new skin. Not too long after, the hole had been covered over by new skin.

At the same time, the internal wounds that Jian Chen had taken were starting to heal. Even the withered skin began to fall off as new tender looking skin replaced it, revealing a white and sleek shine almost. Not a single scar could be seen on his body.

In a little bit, Jian Chen’s body looked as if it was entirely new. Not a single wound could be seen on his body, making him seem almost perfect. Slowly, the Radiant Saint Force began to dissipate from his body.

While it looked like Jian Chen was fully healed on the surface, his internal wounds were still quite severe. The Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill was extremely potent in nature, but there just wasn’t enough “quantity”. Thus, it was not able to fully heal Jian Chen.

Despite this, Jian Chen had been moved. His previously listless eyes began to recover with emotions as he felt the changes happen within his body. With a hoarse voice, he muttered, “How would I regain my strength. I need to recover all of it, but how?”

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s mind felt a jolt. It was at this moment that he realized that his own mind obtained a few more things and that

his own soul had grown stronger.

Sensing the changes within his body, Jian Chen was startled. Quickly calming himself down, he closed his eyes and began to envision himself inside his mind.

The mindscape of his mind was chaotic in nature. Nothing could be seen clearly, but in the center, the azure and violet lights could be seen floating around with the multicolored stone slowly revolving around them.

“These... these are the Sword Spirits, how did they get here? What even is this place?” Jian Chen’s eyes widened in surprise as he looked at the Sword Spirits.

Suddenly, the Sword Spirits shook as a stream of consciousness flowed from them. All of their knowledge, thoughts, and ideas began to be transmitted into Jian Chen without a single sound by a mysterious manner as if it wanted to be comprehended by Jian Chen.

“This is my consciousness?” Jian Chen realized what the two Sword Spirits were relaying to him.

Soon after, the two Sword Spirits continued to relay information to Jian Chen via the same mysterious manner.

After a while, Jian Chen understood what the circumstances were for him.

“So I died, but because of the Sword Spirits, my soul was rescued by them...”

“And now my soul is fused with the two Sword Spirits...”

Finally understanding the entire picture, he didn't know if he was happy or worried about what had occurred. After conversing with the Sword Spirits, he knew that they had fused with his soul to form a special existence.

But he didn't know whether or not it was still his soul or if it was now the Sword Spirits'.

After pondering it for a while, Jian Chen calmed down. While this result was extremely shocking and hard to believe, his soul had truly merged with the Sword Spirits while they retained all of their wisdom. While the two had fused, both sides were capable of independent thinking – this was truly a mysterious existence.

“Just what's going on here, how did I transform into such an odd state.” Jian Chen began to mutter to himself. To him, this situation was far too incredible.

Another stream of thought came out from the Sword Spirits once more.

“I am me, and the Sword Spirits are the Sword Spirits. They had only used such a strange method to save and preserve my life.”

Jian Chen understood the meaning behind the stream of thought.

.....

It felt as if no time had passed within his conscious. It was as if the entire area had gone still, but instead of remaining in this area, Jian Chen began to retreat from his mind after he had received the answers to his questions.

The moment Jian Chen had opened his eyes, he took in the sight around him. It was only then that Jian Chen had truly taken notice that his soul had grown inexplicably stronger. He could easily sense anything within a kilometer from his position. It was only because he was depressed at first that he felt as if there was no such change from his soul.



## Chapter 374: A New Power

---

“So my soul has grown even stronger now.” Jian Chen thought with surprise. However, he wasn’t completely happy. Even after his soul had grown stronger, the only thing that had changed was his ability to perceive things, nothing else.

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s entire body trembled slightly as he closed his eyes and began to meditate. All sorts of energy from his surroundings was felt through Jian Chen’s perception; at this moment, Jian Chen’s world had exploded with beautiful colors from every spectrum.

He could see just about any color imaginable to the human eye. There was the faint glow of white, the dark color of black, the dull shine of red, the heavy shade of yellow, the rich blue and the lively green.

Seeing such a rich world of color, Jian Chen was stunned. These colors were the six elements of the world that he was never able to perceive before. In the past, aside from the Radiant Saint Force or the world energy, he couldn’t detect any other element.

But now, he could sense the other five elements along with the Radiant Saint Force. With such a sight like this, Jian Chen couldn’t help but think that he was dreaming.

“Could this be what happened when the Sword Spirits fused with my soul?” Jian Chen thought to himself as a way to try and explain just what could cause such a phenomenon like this.

Slowly opening his eyes, Jian Chen began to move his right hand. Opening and closing his fingers, Jian Chen suddenly realized that the room was rather hot in temperature before a flash of red light began to gather around his hands. In a moment, a faint sea of fire could be seen on it.

In disbelief, Jian Chen looked at the miniature sea of flames in his hands with a thunderstruck expression as if he couldn't believe what had just happened.

Despite the flames being so close to Jian Chen's hands to the point of contact, he felt no heat at all. It was almost as if the flames were an illusion and not real.

"Fire! There's a fire, fireeee!" Suddenly, a frantic shout could be heard from outside the room. Jolting him out of his inner thoughts, Jian Chen suddenly realized the room had suddenly burst into flames.

In his moment of stupor, the flames gathered in his hand had disappeared. When he was in such a state, he had nearly forgotten just how flammable this room was.

"Bang!" The door to the room was abruptly kicked apart as the simple clothed wearing fatty charged straight into the room with a frantic cry, "No no no, there's a fire! Come on, Jian Chen, we have to get out!" As if he was flying, the fatty flew toward Jian Chen's bed and carried him out of the room.

In a moment, the flames from the room began to soar high into the sky as if devouring the heavens.

“Put out the fire! Hurry, someone get some water!” Several shouts rang through the air as a dozen simple clothed villagers came running forth with buckets of water.

“Tianyu, what happened? Just how in the world did a fire start?” Suddenly, the father of the fatty appeared out of nowhere as he addressed the flames eating away at the house.

Wailing, the fatty looked toward his father with a wretched but innocent face, “Dad, I don’t know either. Everything was perfect! Just how could the house catch on fire, there wasn’t even any light sources anywhere!”

Hearing that, the father’s eyes turned toward Jian Chen with a leveled stare, but he said nothing.

The fatty’s eyes swiveled toward Jian Chen as if he had come to a conclusion as well. With a gasp, he cried, “Dear gods, Jian Chen, don’t tell me you’re suicidal!”

Jian Chen stood up by himself with some difficulty. Although his wounds looked like they were healed on the surface, anyone that looked at him would know that any small movement caused Jian Chen a tremendous amount of pain.

“I am terribly sorry, this was not intentional.” Jian Chen let out a

small smile on his face, indicating that his mood had improved a bit from earlier.

“Oh my my, Jian Chen. I beg you a thousand times over, don’t be depressed! You’re so young, you can’t go kill yourself! You absolutely must continue to live!” The fatty fretted as he looked at Jian Chen, thinking that he had done something foolish in his moment of depression.

At the sight of the fatty fretting over him, Jian Chen couldn’t help but let out a small smile, “Don’t worry, I won’t kill myself.”

After making sure that Jian Chen was not pretending, the father laughed, “It seems you’ve already gotten over it.”

“Quick, put out the fire!”

“Faster with the water, everyone move faster!”

At this moment, the villagers were still bringing bucket after bucket toward the fire in an effort to combat it.

Walking forward to stop the villagers, the middle-aged man spoke, “There is no need to be so panicked. Please rest for now. Whether it burns or not, we will have to rebuild it anyways.”

“If you say so uncle Xiu Mi, then we’ll take our time.” The villagers immediately stopped their frantic movements and addressed the man with a respectful greeting.

“Ai, my poor house. It seems that I have to rebuild it once more.”  
The fatty wailed.

At this, Jian Chen felt extremely embarrassed. In such a careless moment, he had accidentally set the house he was in on fire. This made him feel apologetic.

“I am truly sorry. When I recover, please allow me to help you rebuild.” Jian Chen spoke apologetically.

The fatty’s eyes sparkled on his face as he replied, “Okay then. Don’t you forget it then; when you get better, the two of us will build a house even bigger than the last one.” As soon as he finished speaking, the fatty suddenly looked behind him in surprise, “Grandfather! Jian Chen, look! My grandfather is back!”

Turning around slowly, Jian Chen could only see a hoe wielding elder walking from some distance away. He looked rather ordinary like anyone else around his age. A single piece of straw held his hair together and even his clothes were of ordinary make. Both of his legs and the clothes around them were covered with dirt as if he had spent the entire day working the fields and had just returned home like a farmer would.

“Grandfather, the person father rescued has finally woken up. Let me introduce you, his name is Jian Chen!” The fatty cried out in a hurry to greet his grandfather.

The elder looked at Jian Chen for a moment before turning back

to the fatty with a kindly smile, “Little Fatty, why is your house on fire?”

The fatty looked at Jian Chen as well, “Jian Chen had wanted to kill himself in his depression, but everything’s okay now. He has accepted life!”

After hearing such a statement, Jian Chen had nearly fell to the ground in shock. This fatty’s words held nothing back and were based off of his own judgment. It was as if he was still a child, something that was odd compared to his current age.

After he heard the fatty’s words, the elder began to laugh as he walked up to Jian Chen. With a kindly smile, he spoke, “Youngster, those who do not die are bound to come across fortune. Take this Spirit Pill and eat it. It should heal your inner organs to some degree at the very least.” Out of nowhere, the elder took out a pill and gave it to Jian Chen.

Seeing the elder take out another pill, the fatty’s father had a shocked look on his face, “Haha, Jian Chen, this is a Class 8 Spirit Pill – an especially rare treasure. It seems that my father has seen fit to give you two.”

“I thank the elder, but this item is far too precious for me to accept.” Jian Chen spoke respectfully. He knew just how rare and precious Radiant Spirit Pills were since they were made by Radiant Saint Masters by using their own Saint Force. A single pill like this was far more than what Jian Chen could accomplish.

The elder laughed, “This item has little use for me here. It is coincidental that you were in need of it, so take it and recover as soon as you can.”

After some hesitation, Jian Chen submitted and took the pill from the elder. Carefully putting it away safely, he knew that this pill was far too expensive for him to lose.

“Little fatty, go and find a room for Jian Chen to rest in.” After that, the elder threw down his hoe and headed to another house not too far away.

Looking at the retreating back of the elder with a complicated look, Jian Chen didn’t know what to think.

“Jian Chen, let’s go and find you a new room.” The fatty spoke as he walked away.

Soon enough, Jian Chen found himself in another bed. He needed to rest as little fatty had said, so he sat down on the bed and began to sleep.

After a while, Jian Chen managed to calm himself down and tried to control the Radiant Saint Force around him to heal. The Class 8 Spirit Pill was far too precious for him to eat just yet.

Just as Jian Chen began to think, a milky white ball of light began to form around him. Feeling the speed of the Radiant Saint Force gathering, Jian Chen couldn’t help but smile faintly. Perhaps

it was because of the mutation to his soul, but he felt that his control over the Radiant Saint Force had grown stronger and stronger. Even after controlling it to such an extent, he didn't feel strained at all.



# Chapter 375: Recovery Of Jian Chen

---

Afterward, Jian Chen began to heal himself using his stronger control over the Radiant Saint Force. Because his internal wounds were even more severe than his external ones, it took Jian Chen an entire day of stubbornly healing himself before he had completely recovered.

The following day, Jian Chen walked out of the room to take in the morning air.

The little fatty had stayed in the next house over as Jian Chen's neighbor. At this moment, he had just walked out of his room as well only to see Jian Chen right next to him. With a smile, he cried out, "Hey, Jian Chen, are you fully healed now?"

"I thank your grandfather for giving me the pill. I've fully recovered from my wounds now." Jian Chen smiled.

"Haha, that's great! You've finally gained some free time. Let's go, I'll take you on a tour of the village and introduce you to everyone." As he spoke, the fatty led Jian Chen by the arm toward the village without a break in his stride. Not too far away, Jian Chen could see the grandfather of the fatty walking away with a hoe over his shoulder.

"Grandfather, are you going to the fields again?" Little fatty called out to his grandfather with an enthusiastic greeting.

The grandfather laughed as he spoke, "That's right, there's still

some plants that haven't been planted yet, so I have to hurry."

"Grandfather, I'm going to take Jian Chen around the village, I'll be back later to help you!"

"Haha, go on then, take Jian Chen around for a stroll and get to know everyone. This village hasn't seen many outsiders, so you should be able to make a good impression." The grandfather laughed merrily with a kind expression.

Jian Chen looked at the grandfather for a moment before silently following the fatty away.

The grandfather smiled as he watched Jian Chen walk away, "This youngster is quite the strange one."

Right by his side, the father of the fatty appeared with a hoe in hand as he spoke, "Father, could it be that even you cannot see what this Jian Chen is like?"

"This child is no ordinary one, he is no small frog within the pond!" The grandfather let out a sigh before leaving with the hoe still on his shoulder.

After listening to his father's evaluation of Jian Chen, the middle-aged man had a thunderstruck expression. Looking at Jian Chen's back, he said nothing and instead followed his father toward the fields.

On the road, the fatty continued to give Jian Chen some information about the village; like saying that it was within the Valley of Longevity. There were mountains everywhere with precipitous peaks that were hard to climb. The only way into this valley was a single road that twisted about more than a snake.

This village had over a hundred families living within it, totaling up to six hundred people in all. Since they were cut off from the outside world, they could only rely on themselves to support their families. The entire village relied on fatty's father to go out and bring them essentials from the world every so often, so they themselves never left.

That was also due to the fact that the valley was exceptionally deep and connected to the biggest mountain range in the continent – the Cross Mountains. The valley was also home to thousands of strong magical beasts. The distance from this place to the outside world was well over a thousand kilometers and was fraught with danger. Even if one had nine lives, if one wanted to leave, it would be highly unlikely that they would be able to.

“Little fatty, if your father is able to reach the outside world, then your father must be a truly amazing person.” Jian Chen commented.

“Of course, my father is super amazing! Not only does he teach the entire village how to cultivate, but he'll occasionally bring back a super strong magical beast for the village. Because of this, the entire village worships my father.” The fatty said proudly.

“Since your father is so amazing, then your grandfather must be

as well, correct?” Jian Chen asked.

“That, I don’t know, but I don’t think my grandfather is all that strong. If he doesn’t go fishing, then he’s working the fields. I’ve never see him bring home any magical beast, but he is the village elder where even my father listens to him.”

“Have you ever seen the outside world?”

“Nope!” The fatty shook his head, “I’ve lived my entire life in this village without ever going outside, but I’ve heard from my dad that the outside world is extremely large and wonderful. One time my father had planned on taking me outside, but my grandfather had stopped him and gave him a scolding. He said that I wasn’t suited for the outside world, and so after that, my father never once let me out of the village.” Suddenly, the fatty’s eyes began to shine as he stared at Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, aren’t you from the outside world? How is it, are the people as big and great as my dad says? Come on, tell me! Is the outside world as my dad says?”

Jian Chen nodded his head, “Correct, the outside world is extremely vast – far bigger than you could possibly imagine. However, it is especially cruel out there. One must be strong in order to survive. Little fatty, do you wish to see the outside world?”

“Of course! I spend every day hoping that I can see the outside world just once to see what it’s like.” Suddenly, the fatty looked at Jian Chen with a serious expression, “Jian Chen, you can’t tell my grandfather or he’ll grow extremely angry!”

Jian Chen returned the look, “Little fatty, if you truly wish to see the outside world, you’ll first have to convince your grandfather.”

“No no, I can’t! My grandfather’s anger is something you definitely don’t want to see. Although my grandfather is usually kind, when he gets angry, even my father becomes afraid.” The fatty instantly turned nervous as he thought about his grandfather.

“Fine then, I promise I won’t say a word.” Seeing how nervous the fatty became, Jian Chen couldn’t help but worry for him.

The fatty let out a sigh in relief, “Jian Chen, you’re a nice guy. If you were my grandfather, that’d be great. That way, I’d be able to see what it’s like outside.”

At this, Jian Chen had nearly stumbled to the ground.

Afterward, the fatty brought Jian Chen around the entire village and introduced him to many different people. Among the villagers, there were plenty of pretty little women that were still quite plain compared the ones Jian Chen had seen in the outside world. But when they saw Jian Chen’s handsome and determined face, many of the women instantly grew as still as a deer as their faces began to turn red.

Jian Chen’s face was a natural weapon to any women under the heavens. This held especially true for all of the valley women.

After walking around the entire village, Jian Chen finally found an excuse to detach from the fatty and headed for the outskirts of the village by himself.

In a short moment, Jian Chen had passed by several roads and arrived at a mountain range. Right now, he had to make sure that he fully understood the situation his body was in. He had a feeling that even with his Saint Weapon broken, it was not the end of the world just yet.

Arriving at a small hill, Jian Chen sat down with a tranquil look as he began to meditate. Suddenly, a picture of the surrounding kilometer began to appear within his mind, where not even the impossible spots in one's vision were overlooked. By this point, there was nothing that was a secret to Jian Chen, even the insects crawling on the ground a hundred meters away could be "seen" by Jian Chen.

The Azulet Sword Laws began to form within Jian Chen's mind as he figured that this was the work of being "Omnipresence".

Jian Chen continued to work at this omnipresence, increasing his range from a kilometer to two kilometers...

Three kilometers...

Four kilometers...

Five kilometers...

Eight kilometers...

.....

Ten kilometers...

Jian Chen's omnipresence had somehow managed to reach ten kilometers, but this was the farthest he could go. By this point, Jian Chen could see anything within that range without anything escaping his senses. Not even a single blade of grass was left uncomprehended by him.

Suddenly, Jian Chen lifted up both arms, causing the earth elements in the world to gather near him. Afterward, a large earthen wall began to form by Jian Chen's side and encased him inside. Then, the dirt began to compress so much that by the end, it had somehow managed to turn into solid stone.

Then, the entire area began to soar in temperature as a sea of fire appeared as well. Scoring the entire sky, the plants beneath Jian Chen's feet began to wither as several trees began to burn.

The wind began to pick up in speed and blew sand everywhere, forming a dust storm. Countless of plants were uprooted, and combined with the burning trees, the fire grew extremely large in scale.

Right after, the energy within the world began to ripple as a blue colored light blanketed the entire forest before finally forming a large pool of water above. With a torrential downpour, the fire within the forest had been extinguished.

Following the downpour, the sunlight began to grow darker as the previously daytime light turned to night. No matter where one went within a kilometer, there was only a blanket of shadows that made it hard to see even one's hand in front of their faces.

But even then, the shadows began to grow smaller in scale from a kilometer to five hundred meters. Shrinking once more to twenty meters before finally transforming into a single black colored sword that floated right in front of Jian Chen.

With a point of his finger, the sword moved straight through the air and pierced through hundreds of trees before disappearing into the world. And as soon as the black colored sword shot through a tree, the tree would instantly begin to wither away.

The energy of darkness had a strong rotting nature.

Slowly sitting back down, Jian Chen's entire heart was in turmoil. After his soul had fused with the Sword Spirits, he had managed to gain a whole new set of abilities. Now, he was fully capable of controlling any of the six elements within the world and could bend them to his will.

Then, Jian Chen's hand began to rise up as a faint glow of azure and violet Sword Qi extended from his fingertips.



# Chapter 376: Control Over All Living Things

---

Looking at the Sword Qi extending from his fingers emotionally, Jian Chen couldn't hide his joy at all. The Sword Qi was extremely strong thanks to the Sword Spirits and was his strongest attack. Although he had lost his Light Wind Sword and years and years of bitter cultivation, he still had plenty of fighting strength left. He was not a cripple that could not fight.

The faint glows of Sword Qi continued to shine with both colors standing side by side as if it were a natural scene. This type of manner was as if the two were mingling with each other peacefully.

In a daze, Jian Chen stared at the azure and violet Sword Qi. He couldn't help but think back to when he was fighting the eight Heaven Saint Masters. Back when he was at the final part of the road, the Sword Qi had fused in the same manner.

With that memory fresh in mind, Jian Chen's heart trembled with some lingering fear. The fusion of the two Sword Qi had been extremely powerful, causing even Jian Chen to be afraid. It was strong enough to shatter the Saint Weapons of the Heaven Saint Masters as if they were made of bean curd. This was something that was impossible to imagine for him, but when he thought about the two Sword Spirits making a full recovery, he couldn't even possibly begin to visualize just what terrifying level they would reach in power.

When Jian Chen began to think back to just how powerful the repercussions had been when he used the fused Sword Qi, Jian

Chen could only shake his head with a bitter laugh. After the Sword Qi had fused together, they had formed a formidable power with devastating aftereffects. If it were not for the fact that he had been trapped by the other Heaven Saint Masters, Jian Chen would not have dared to try and test it out.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat as he opened his palm, causing a mysterious type of energy to fill the air around him. The leaves on the ground began to lift up as if being attracted by some type of force and slowly revolved around Jian Chen.

Closing his eyes, Jian Chen began to harmonize with the world to become one. It was with a sudden realization that he felt his spirit connect with every single living thing around him. This feeling was similar to when he used the Spirit Sword, allowing him to control every living thing.

Suddenly, the countless leaves slowly flowing about Jian Chen's body began to shine brightly with an azure and violet glow. With an ear splitting sound, they all suddenly shot toward a nearby tree with a blinding speed.

Without a sound, the tree was instantly pierced straight through as the leaves continued on without faltering for even a moment. As they traveled farther and farther away, they continued to cut a path through any of plants in their way. It was only after ten kilometers that the leaves finally began to slow down, and in the end, disintegrated in midair without the azure and violet Sword Qi.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!....

Suddenly, wave after wave of sounds could be heard as all of the leaves still floating around Jian Chen transformed into a blinding rays of light and shot outward. Spearing through anything in their path, the Sword Qi infused in the leaves had only disappeared after ten kilometers, causing the leaves to fall apart into dust.

Jian Chen opened his eyes slowly and looked around himself with a stunned look. With a sudden thought, one of the trees near him flew out of the ground and floated ten meters in midair.

Extending his hand, Jian Chen then clenched his fist tightly. Straight away, the entire tree exploded into wood shavings and fell to the ground.

In the next moment, the azure and violet glows of light could be seen once more flying from the wood shavings. Flying upward, the wood shavings began to form a fifty meter long sword that floated in midair before flying forward.

As the sword flew forward, no matter if it was a tree that was tall enough to scratch the heavens or just a blade of grass, the sword cleaved it in two and left behind a smooth surface.

In a moment, the previously peaceful forest changed dramatically as dozens of large trees toppled down to the ground.

Jian Chen's eyes glinted with a bright light as he watched this event. His left eye began to emit a violet glow and his right eye an azure glow. This was a sight that would terrify anyone.

With both of Jian Chen's eyes burning brightly with the two different colors, his hands both raised into the air. Suddenly, a strange sort of energy began to distort the air like the space itself was being frozen in time. To anyone looking, this would have been an extremely bizarre sight.

“Crack crack crack....”

Several of the trees floating in midair began to break apart into fist sized pieces before starting to shine with azure and violet glows.

The lights in Jian Chen's eyes began to recede as he looked at the sight dumbfounded. Both of his eyes had a look of disbelief to them as he slowly dropped his hands.

As soon as his hands fell, the trees that were floating in the air began to lose the same color lights. Then, the tree pieces disintegrated away into ashes and scattered.

Jian Chen stood still without any extra movements. This newfound change in his body was something that he simply couldn't believe. Right now, he was fully capable of controlling any living thing with the use of his azure and violet Sword Qi. Right now, the Sword Qi could be bent to his will and was practically an ability for him to use at any given moment.

In the past, even when Jian Chen used the Sword Qi, it was when he used the Spirit Sword to fight from long range. The azure and

violet Sword Qi wasn't limited to the Light Wind Sword anymore. He no longer had any restriction other than the distance away from his body, but other than that, he could use any living thing and infuse it with Sword Qi.

“This type of power, did the Sword Spirits bestow it upon me?” Jian Chen couldn't help but wonder. Ever since the fusion, he could only see the huge changes to his soul and life. Not only was it extremely beneficial, but the power was far beyond anything that he could imagine; especially since he could control living beings themselves.

Jian Chen continued to walk farther and farther away from the valley. Right now, he solely desired to pit himself against a magical beast in order to gauge his strength.

Longevity Valley was immensely deep, and while there were very few magical beasts to be found in this part, each one of them were at the very least a Class 5 Magical Beast.

After walking for twenty kilometers, he had finally come across a decently strong magical beast. This one looked like a beetle type magical beast – the Iron Beetle.

The moment when the Iron Beetle saw Jian Chen, it immediately let out a roar before charging straight at him.

With a sweep of his hand, a single half meter long blade of grass flew toward the Iron Beetle's head with the azure and violet Sword Qi infused in it.

“Pch!”

With a single crack, the blade of grass penetrated straight through the Iron Beetle’s head before flying out of it and disappearing into the forest.

Without even a cry, the Iron Beetle fell to the floor with a thundering crash as its gigantic body slammed down to the ground.

Just like that, a powerful Class 5 Magical Beast had been killed so easily.

Jian Chen let out a breath as he tried to calm himself down so that the pleased look in his eyes wouldn’t get too far out of hand.

Waving his right hand, several blades of grass turned bright with color as they flew toward the Iron Beetle’s body and dug holes straight into its body. Extending his hand, he suddenly clenched tightly, causing a bloody Class 5 Monster Core to suddenly fly out from the magical beast’s body and land in his hand.

Continuing forward, it wasn’t for another ten kilometers when four crimson streaks of light came flying at Jian Chen from all directions. These four crimson wolves were all Class 5 Magical Beasts as well; each one of them was filled with more wisdom and knowledge than usual.

Right afterward, several more blurs could be seen as more wolves surrounded Jian Chen. They were smaller in size compared to the first four wolves, signifying that they were Class 4 Magical Beasts.

Jian Chen looked at the wolves around him calmly. Slowly bringing up his right hand, he stared at a nearby tree. In the next moment, the tree suddenly burst into several splinters with Sword Qi infused in them. They shot toward the wolves like shooting stars.

Without any resistance, all of the Class 4 Magical Beasts were instantly riddled with holes from the Sword Qi infused wood splinters. Even the Class 5 Magical Beasts had only been able to put up a slight struggle before sharing the same fate as the other magical beasts, finally crying out with loud whimpers.

Within a single moment, a dozen and four Class 4 and 5 Magical Beasts had all been annihilated by Jian Chen. This type of glorious battle prowess was something that Jian Chen would have never been able to accomplish in the past.

Jian Chen took another deep breath. He finally had a general idea of what his current strength was at. Although he had lost his Light Wind Sword and his Saint Force, he had gained a new ability. Not only could he sense the six elements in the world, he could even freely use the violet and azure Sword Qi whenever he wanted. Aside from these things, he also had an even more terrifying ability – the ability to mind control any living thing in this world as long as he was within the range of his spirit. Even some non-living things would be unable to escape Jian Chen's mind control.

From a certain standpoint, Jian Chen's strength hadn't decreased at all. On the contrary, it had actually increased. At the very least, his newfound control ability was able to make quick work of a group of Class 5 Magical Beasts.

There could be no construction without destruction, and it was only after destruction that construction could take place. After experiencing such a calamitous event, Jian Chen had been transformed. From this moment on, he would walk another along another path of cultivation. His strength would break away from the ranking of the Tian Yuan Continent since he no longer had any Saint Force to measure!



# Chapter 377: Executing A Class 6 Magical Beast

---

After testing it out, Jian Chen had a better understanding of his own strength now. With a wave of his hand, a few hundred blades of grass flew up and stabbed into the bellies of the wolves. With a strong thought, he managed to pull out all of their monster cores. After taking off a portion of his clothes, he began to wrap up the cores and store them behind him.

After collecting the monster cores, Jian Chen decided to leave the forest. Turning around to face the way back to Longevity Valley, he knew he needed to calm down for a bit and digest the changes to his body. These bizarre changes were far too sudden for him, and the new power he had received made him feel like he was stuck in a dream. He needed to rest so he could adapt to his situation.

“Aoo!” Suddenly, the howl of a wolf could be heard, shaking the entire forest with its cry.

Jian Chen’s body suddenly stopped as a look of concentration overtook his face. Slowly turning around, he spread out his senses for a kilometer, only to “see” a ten meter long, three meter tall blood red wolf flying in his direction at breakneck speeds.

Jian Chen didn’t run, nor did he have any plans on running away. Although he was still as strong as ever, in the end he still didn’t have any Saint Force anymore. His speed would only be a little faster than a normal person. He couldn’t even use the Illusionary Flash or the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune since both battle skills required the use of Saint Force.

The blood red wolf quickly came to a stop in front of Jian Chen's position fifty meters away. With eyes that were bigger than the fist of an adult human, they glared at Jian Chen menacingly.

Concentrating, Jian Chen immediately began to gather all of the earth elements in the world around him to form a five meter tall dirt wall. Continuing to gather, the dirt wall began to compress before finally forming a wall of hard rock. At the same time, Jian Chen held up a finger, causing a single tree nearby to burst out of the ground and float beside Jian Chen while twinkling with the azure and violet Sword Qi.

With Jian Chen's body hidden behind the stone wall, the wolf was unable to see what Jian Chen was doing. However, Jian Chen could fight against the wolf with his omnipresence like ability.

From its gathered knowledge and wisdom the wolf had already guessed that Jian Chen was not going to be an easy opponent to fight due to his actions. With a snarl, a large amount of energy began to gather in the wolf's mouth. Then, with a puffing motion, the ball of energy flew toward the wall with a whistling sound.

At the same time, Jian Chen had already already fashioned the tree to become a long spear that flew forward to stab into the ball of energy from the wolf.

Following a large bang, the ball of energy suddenly exploded, causing the energy to wash over the area. The wooden weapons that Jian Chen was using were unable to withstand the energy and

disintegrated into ashes.

The man and beast had only been testing each other at that moment, but the destructive aftermath had completely reshaped the landscape around them.

Both of Jian Chen's eyes shined bright with an azure and violet glow. The left eye flashed with violet and the right azure. Suddenly, countless blades of grass flew up around the wolf and instantly transformed into sharp sword like shapes before flying into the wolf's body.

Caught off guard, the blood red wolf's body was suddenly riddled with holes, but it did nothing to hinder its strength or speed as expected from a Class 6 Magical Beast. The azure and violet Sword Qi was unable to pierce through the entire body as it had with the Iron Beetle. This time, it was only able to penetrate three inches in before stopping.

Despite this, it was still a decent amount of damage inflicted. The pain it felt all over its body caused the wolf to howl in pain before energy began to leak out from its body, forcing all of the embedded blades of grass away from its wounds.

"Ao!" Even after all of the damage, the wolf had no intentions on retreating. On the contrary, it had instead grown even more berserk and transformed into a bloody red streak of light as it charged toward Jian Chen.

Even more blades of grass flew up from the ground and took on

the shape of a sword. With the azure and violet Sword Qi infused, they flew out to stop the blood wolf once more.

But because of the large amount of energy rippling out from the blood red wolf's body, all of the blades of grass began to slow down as they approached. Even the Sword Qi in the grass began to weaken as well. Thanks to the shroud of energy protecting the wolf's body, the Sword Qi grew dimmer and dimmer.

At the same time, the azure and violet glow in Jian Chen's eyes began to grow stronger and stronger in intensity. All of the trees surrounding him exploded and caused countless of splinters to fly up into the air, protecting his entire body. With a single thought, Jian Chen instantly transformed the wood splinters to form a draconic shape before flying to hit the wolf.

The very moment when the Sword Qi infused wooden dragon struck against the wolf's shroud of energy, the wolf's forward momentum began to slow down noticeably. The energy protecting its body was pushed farther and farther back before the wooden dragon was finally able to strike its head, dealing a tremendous blow instantly.

"Aooo!" The wolf let out another howl in pain as a large ball of energy shot out from his mouth. At the same time, the wooden dragon that had slammed into the wolf was scattered by the ball and the pieces dispersed into the air.

Jian Chen let out a sneer as he muttered, "You are truly strong, let's see if you can handle my strongest attack then." Jian Chen's finger formed a sword, allowing the special energy from the Sword

Spirits to extend out a meter from his fingertips. This was a blade made of pure Origin energy from the Sword Spirits – something stronger than the wooden dragon from before in terms of Sword Qi.

In that moment, the Origin energy extended out to fly at the wolf. Knowing just how strong the azure and violet Sword Qi was, the wolf instantly lashed out with his claws to bat away the Origin energy from the Sword Spirits. But the very moment the two made contact, its claws were split in two.

In that instant, the wolf's eyes revealed a panicked air. Unfortunately, the Origin energy was already far too close to the wolf so that it wouldn't be able to dodge. In the end, the attack stabbed into the wolf's head.

A heaven shaking howl could be heard as even its soul had been annihilated by the Sword Spirits. With a bang, the wolf's carcass fell to the ground.

Seeing the dead wolf on the ground, Jian Chen let out a sigh in relief. This one battle had made him realize just how far his strength had improved. With his ability to use his mind to control every living thing with his Sword Qi, he was able to easily kill a Class 5 Magical Beast, but a Class 6 Magical Beast was a little harder to kill. If he wanted to kill one, he had to use the Origin energy of the Sword Spirits. In the end, it could be said that Jian Chen had already reached the level of a Heaven Saint Master in terms of battle strength!

Collecting the Class 6 Monster Core from within the wolf's body,

Jian Chen immediately began to drag the body back toward Longevity Valley. The body of a Class 6 Magical Beast was far too precious to waste here. If he could present it to the village in the valley to dine on such a high class meat, then it would prove very beneficial for everyone.

Suddenly, Jian Chen felt something in the air. Looking up into the sky, he could only see a muddy middle-aged man flyover before landing next to Jian Chen.

This person was the father of fatty and was also the very same person who had rescued Jian Chen.

With a stunned look, the middle-aged man looked at the carcass of the blood wolf behind Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, did you kill this Bloodwolf King?”

Revealing a small smile, Jian Chen felt a sense of satisfaction from this achievement. “Yes, I killed it.”

The father clapped his hands in applause, “Not bad, not bad at all. The Bloodwolf King is a Class 6 Magical Beast of the Third Cycle. I didn’t think that you would be able to kill one. Just what method did you use to kill it? Now that you’ve lost your Saint Weapon, you shouldn’t have any energy left in your body.” There was a good deal of confusion on the man’s face.

“I used the power of my mind!” Jian Chen didn’t bother to hide the truth at all since it wasn’t necessary. Using his right hand to cut the air slightly, a handful of grass suddenly jumped upward

before forming a sharp sword. With the azure and violet Sword Qi infused in it, they shot toward the body of the Bloodwolf King. Despite it being dead, its body was once more riddled with holes.

The fatty's dad could only stare in utter shock before speaking absentmindedly, "What a mysterious power. This power is your mind? Unfathomable! Just utterly unfathomable!"

Jian Chen smiled but decided to not dwell on the subject anymore. "Uncle, are you heading out to the outside world?"

He shook his head, "My father told me to come here – he was afraid that you would be in danger and told me to look around. However, it seems that my father's worries were unfounded. Despite the loss of your Saint Weapon, you didn't lose your strength."

"Let's go back, Jian Chen. It's almost time for the noon meal." With that, the man flew into the air before quickly disappearing from sight.

Seeing the man disappear, Jian Chen showed an envious expression. The ability to fly through the sky had always been one of his goals.

Suddenly, the fatty's father came back. Seeing how Jian Chen was still on the ground, he asked with concern, "Jian Chen, are you not able to fly?"

Shaking his head, Jian Chen replied, "I haven't yet grasped the way to do so. Flying is a difficult challenge for me. It should be no

problem for me to look into it when we return to the village however at this moment.”

“Ah, is that so? Then allow me to take you back. The noon meal shouldn’t take too long to finish, so by the time we return, it should almost be ready.” With that, the man waved his hand, enveloping Jian Chen within his energy before bringing both him and the carcass of the Bloodwolf King up into the air and through the valley.



## Chapter 378: Celestial Decay

---

Seeing how they were flying through the air, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel excited. The power of flight was something he would soon be able to achieve. Since he was able to control the elements in the world with his mind, flying would not be a problem for him. He just hadn't discovered the trick yet. Given some time and experimentation, then he would be able to attain flight just like the Heaven Saint Masters.

Slowly closing his eyes, Jian Chen began to feel for the wind elements surrounding him and began to figure out the trick to flying and to increase the speed.

Flying seemed simple, but there were many significant details to be learned first. It required constant practice in order to excel at it. Otherwise, if a beginner student were to try to fly a hundred meters in the air and was hit by a sudden gust of wind, he would be unable to control his flight.

The speed they were flying at was extremely fast. It didn't take long for Jian Chen and the man to return to the valley. It was noon by now and smoke could be seen spiralling up from the village. At least five men could be seen scurrying around the village in preparation.

The middle-aged man didn't bother to hide their entrance and pulled both Jian Chen and the carcass of the Bloodwolf King to the center of the village before slowing down.

“Hey, Xiu Mi has returned...”

“Xiu Mi has brought back another large magical beast....”

“Haha, it seems that the village won’t be able to finish this much meat. With such a large wolf, who knows just how long it’ll take...”

“Ai, Xiu Mi always brings back such a fearsome beast for the village. He has always done the greatest contributions for the sake of our village...”

As everyone began to show up, they all looked toward fatty’s father with looks of undisguised worship and admiration. There was no shock at all from seeing the two fly back, it was almost as if it was a regular sight.

The father let out a laughing smile before replying back to everyone enthusiastically. There was no hint of arrogance normally seen in a Heaven Saint Master and just kindness instead.

“Xiu Mi, you are too amazing. It doesn’t take much thought to know that this wolf was extremely strong, but you killed it easily.” One of the men laughed.

The man shook his head, “Everyone misunderstands... this magical beast wasn’t-”

As the middle-aged man spoke, Jian Chen cut in abruptly,

“Uncle, let’s hurry up and divide up the Bloodwolf King. The fresher it is, the better it will taste.”

Fatty’s father laughed, “Fine fine, Da Zhuang, go and find some of the more able bodied men to skin the carcass and divide up the meat.”

“You got it!” The man responded enthusiastically before gathering up the men.

“Woah, dad, you brought back another big magical beast!” A cordial voice could be heard from behind as a muddy fatty could be seen walking with a hoe in hand. He must have returned from tilling the fields with his grandfather.

Without any further explanation, the father took Jian Chen back to eat a meal after greeting everyone.

The meal had been cooked by fatty’s mother. She looked no older than thirty years old and was spectacular in appearance. There was the grand air of a noble about her, and despite the common clothing she was wearing, it did nothing to hide her mannerisms. It didn’t take more than a single look to figure out that she wasn’t raised from the village.

Sitting at the table with the family of four, Jian Chen began to eat. The meal was rather simple and consisted of vegetables they grew themselves.

The grandfather of fatty gave a deep look to Jian Chen before smiling, “Youngster, come to the cornfields with me for a while later. There’s a plot of land that requires cultivating.”

“Grandfather, Jian Chen only just healed. Why would you make him do manual labor? Wait for dad and I to finish planting the cabbages, we’ll help you then.” There was a complaint to be heard from fatty, showing that he was clearly dissatisfied from his grandfather asking Jian Chen to do some farming.

Upon hearing the grandfather’s request for him to help till the fields, Jian Chen was stunned for a moment. Then a relieved look took over his face, “Fine. But I’ve never farmed before, so if there is anything I don’t understand, I hope that senior will give me pointers.” Jian Chen knew that the grandfather was a hidden expert that was living in seclusion for some unknown reason. Jian Chen wouldn’t squander a chance to talk to the grandfather for any reason.

“No need to call me senior, my family name is Xiu. As the village elder, you may call me elder Xiu or uncle Xiu.” The grandfather spoke with a kind voice.

After the meal, Jian Chen followed elder Xiu out toward the cornfields with a hoe on the top of his shoulder.

When Jian Chen looked at the hoe on his shoulder, he couldn’t help but force out a smile.

“Could it be that with your noble status, you feel that this hoe is

degrading your status?" The grandfather's face had already lost the kindly expression he had back in the village. Right now, he was expressionless; it would appear that the kindly expression would only appear within the village.

"Elder Xiu, you misunderstand. That was not my thought at all. This is my very first time farming with a hoe before, so it is a new sensation." Jian Chen tried to explain.

"En, then that's fine. No matter how strong you are or how high your status is, you must never throw away your conscious. A man's conscious is extremely important. One must be kind and benevolent in order to attain the highest level of mastery. Take heed to this! Even if you are a genius without equal and have only success after success, in the end, your achievements will amount to nothing." The elder spoke.

"This junior will remember these words!" Jian Chen spoke modestly.

Elder Xiu continued to walk toward the field with the hoe in hand. "I know that your heart doesn't truly understand the meaning of my words. But you must know, all those within the continent who have reached the Saint Ruler realm have always decided to shun the world. It is very rare that they roam the outside world."

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes as he thought about the words. "This junior has always thought that those who have reached such a level have practically detached themselves from the secular world and all of the worldly enticements. That is why they do not

appear in the outside world often, but hearing elder Xiu's words, is that the true reason?"

"Correct, the situation isn't as you thought. For all those who have reached the Saint Ruler realm, they have already comprehended the existence of the profound mysteries of the world. At the same time of gaining such a strength, they also feel the restrictions of the world."

"The restrictions of the world?" Jian Chen was extremely curious now. This was the very first time he had heard of such a matter relating to a Saint Ruler.

"Correct, the restrictions of the world. After reaching the realm of the Saint Ruler, they will receive the punishment of the Celestial Decay. The Celestial Decay is a terrifying matter that has never been broken free from. It's a rule that is specifically directed toward those Saint Rulers who have violated any of the laws." Elder Xiu's face grew somber as he talked, an indicator of just how terrifying the Celestial Decay was.

"Elder Xiu, just what is this Celestial Decay? Is it truly that terrifying?" Jian Chen was curious. He had never heard of such a thing before, so it was hard to not be curious.

"The Celestial Decay is a law of the world that transcends time itself. It is able to eliminate or discipline those at the Saint Ruler level or higher. There are five different stages to the Celestial Decay. The hair becomes as dry as hay, the body withers away, the blood within the body evaporates, the inner organs begin to burn, and finally the soul itself dies out. By this point, the body and soul

are truly extinguished. Within the Tian Yuan Continent, no matter how strong of an ability one has, if they commit a great sin, they will not be able to escape the punishment of the Celestial Decay. Thus, the Celestial Decay is a rule that regulates even Saint Rulers to prevent them from committing any sins.”

“Then what is considered to be committing a great sin?” Jian Chen asked.

At that moment, the two men had reached the fields. Swinging his hoe down to till the earth, elder Xiu began to speak, “The exact details are unknown, but after many years, those who have violated the rules of the world spoke of their experiences. From this, we gathered that a Saint Ruler who slaughters countless innocents or one who commits an act of injuring the Heavens will undoubtedly receive the punishment of the Celestial Decay. Other than that, we are still not sure what else violates the rules.”

“The Celestial Decay is a law of the world that regulates Saint Rulers and higher from committing any sins. But it has never appeared within a Saint Ruler that has secluded himself from the world. The reason why is because of one thing, conscience!”

“Conscience?” Jian Chen asked.

“Correct, it is conscience. The world of mortals is a large vat. If one is pure and honest, then they will dye the human world with color. To lose your conscience is to be weak willed and give in to the temptations of money and power. If a Saint Ruler wishes to progress in improvement, they must continue to try and comprehend the profound mysteries of the world. One’s attitude

toward the profound mysteries of the world must be calm and be able to withstand any of the worldly temptations. Once the soul is as close to the world as possible, that is when the comprehension of the profound mysteries of the world come even faster. If one is swayed by the worldly temptations, then they would be stuck in a game like Go. No matter where you go and no matter how much you try to harmonize with the world, it will be impossible to comprehend the profound mysteries of the world. If one cannot regain their conscience, then there can be no progress.” Elder Xiu dug his hoe into the ground again and again as he spoke to Jian Chen.

Hearing this, Jian Chen had no words to say. He continued to think about the words elder Xiu had said. His words had brought about a great revelation for Jian Chen. Truly, listening to the words of a wise man was superior than to studying books for ten years.

A Saint Ruler’s way of cultivation was not like the regular way of cultivating Saint Force to improve themselves. They walked a different path by trying to comprehend the profound mysteries of the world.

“Youngster, I can tell that you are not a fish meant for the pond; you will have a grand future. Despite the loss of your Saint Weapon, it has done nothing to impact your future growth. I only wish for you to grab hold of your conscience and to not be lost in the mortal world. Break away from the world and cultivate to the very peak.” Elder Xiu stared at Jian Chen with a heavy gaze.



# Chapter 379: Flying Through The Air

---

“Elder Xiu, thank you for your guidance, this junior will definitely remember these words.” Jian Chen spoke with an apprehensive feeling in his heart. Separating from the mortal world was easier said than done, he was barely twenty years old with many things left to do such as revenge. He had not yet felt enough of the warmth from life with his family, so there was no way for him to break away from the mortal world just yet, unlike the elders who had already done so.

To a twenty year old youth like Jian Chen, breaking away from the mortal world was impossible.

“En, as long as you remember my words. I know you cannot hope to achieve such a step right now, but you must take heed to never lose your conscience. Do not be deceived by hatred, greed, or power.” Elder Xiu continued to speak while brandishing the hoe at the ground.

“This junior understands!” Jian Chen was like a modest student who was listening intently to his teacher.

As the elder tilled the ground, he suddenly stopped to turn back to Jian Chen, “Youngster, would it be possible for you to show me your current strength to satisfy my curiosity? I already know of your battle with the Bloodwolf King, but your ability is something that I have never seen before in my entire life.”

Jian Chen couldn't help but feel shocked, he hadn't thought that

his every single move and action had been monitored by elder Xiu. But then, thinking back to just how strong elder Xiu was, Jian Chen felt relieved.

“This junior has only just received this power, so I do not fully understand it just yet. If elder Xiu has any pointers to give, then please.” With that, Jian Chen’s eyes began to flash brightly. With a single thought, the ground beneath them began to float up into the air from the power of some mysterious force. Then, an azure and violet glow began to appear before flying straight toward elder Xiu without any hesitation.

But then, before the clods of mud could even get within a meter of elder Xiu, they suddenly stopped midair.

Elder Xiu’s eyes contained surprise as he muttered, “This is truly a queer ability. I can only sense an azure and purple ray of light with a strong amount of power within the mud. This power is something I’ve never seen or heard before. Just what is this?” The elder hadn’t made a single move, but he had somehow managed to bring the floating dirt back down to the ground without any of the azure or violet light left in it.

Jian Chen was overwhelmed with shock. Elder Xiu’s strength had been at such a level that Jian Chen couldn’t even begin to comprehend it. With a single action, Jian Chen had been left dumbstruck.

Jian Chen’s eyes began to flash with a bizarre azure color in one eye, and a bizarre violet color in the other. Some of the weeds and dirt on the ground began to rise up once more and transform into a

single streak that wrapped around the elder with the two glows.

The elder smiled faintly, “Youngster, this ability of yours is quite extraordinary. Although the Saint Rulers who were able to comprehend the profound mysteries of the world can control items with their thoughts, they did not have this azure and violet color to it. This azure and violet glow however, can constitute as a powerful threat to only Heaven Saint Masters. If you tried it against someone like me, then it would not be enough.” Elder Xiu spoke as the attack around him disappeared and dirt fell back to the ground.

Jian Chen was stunned, but he wasn’t giving up just yet. With a flash of azure and violet in his eyes, Sword Qi began to gather in his right hand before forming a meter long sword. This was the Origin energy of the Sword Spirits.

With a flash of violet, Jian Chen’s Sword Qi struck out at elder Xiu.

Elder Xiu seemed to have stopped right in front of the attack. Looking at the Origin energy radiating from the Sword Qi, he began to mutter, “What a strong amount of sword intent, this... this aura... it seems like...” In the next moment, the elder became engrossed in his own thoughts.

Just as the Origin energy coming from Jian Chen’s Sword Qi got within a meter of elder Xiu, an unknown energy suddenly prevented it from moving forward. This energy was so strong, even the Origin energy of the Sword Qi had no chance.

Losing color in his face, Jian Chen hadn't thought that the elder's strength would be that strong. Even with the Origin energy, he had still been unable to get close to the elder. It was like he was an infant compared to elder Xiu. Even as he stood there, Jian Chen was unable to do a single iota of damage.

When Jian Chen had used his mind to feel around the elder's body, he immediately sensed that the elder was like a piece of the world itself. The Origin energy of the Sword Spirits had been blocked by this worldly energy. Against such a boundless source of energy, Jian Chen felt like a tiny boat in a giant ocean.

With a deep breath, he began to absorb the Origin energy from the Sword Spirits back into his body. What surprised Jian Chen the most was that elder Xiu's strength had already reached a level he could only dream to reach.

Elder Xiu stared at Jian Chen's right hand with an unnaturally serious expression before asking, "Youngster, would you be able to tell me. What was that energy in your hand, where did it come from?"

"I call it the azure and violet Sword Qi, a type of Origin energy." Jian Chen spoke without revealing much.

"Azure and violet Sword Qi, Origin energy... so that person was you after all." Elder Xiu muttered to himself.

"What was that, elder Xiu?" Jian Chen asked in confusion.

“It’s nothing. Youngster, are you able to use that energy at will?” Elder Xiu stared at Jian Chen with rapt attention.

Jian Chen nodded his head, “As of right now, I can use it freely. Elder Xiu, is something wrong?”

“It’s nothing, I only feel that this energy is not at its peak state yet.” The elder replied.

“The Origin energy is very weak, so it hasn’t reached an optimal state yet.” Jian Chen replied with a half truth.

“So that’s it!” The elder suddenly came to a realization. “Youngster, right now you are primarily focused on using your thoughts to attack. In regards to your cultivation path, you will have to continuously practice with your mind. Right now you can easily control tiny objects without a problem, but if you wish to push a giant mountain with just your mind alone, this will not be an accomplishable task.”

“Aside from strengthening your thoughts, you must also comprehend the profound mysteries of the world. Although your strange Origin energy is extremely strong, it is still an energy of the world. The profound mysteries of the world are the way of the king since they are capable of allowing you to control the energy of the world.”

“I thank elder Xiu for his guidance, this junior will do as senior says.”

For the rest of the afternoon, Jian Chen and the elder both continued to till the cornfields. After learning many things in regards to the profound mysteries of the world from elder Xiu, Jian Chen had begun to ask even more questions. Elder Xiu did his best to answer any questions he had, allowing Jian Chen to benefit greatly from his insight and added to his current understanding.

On the second day, elder Xiu didn't call Jian Chen to the fields. Jian Chen still had his own things he needed to do, so he took the initiative to tell fatty that he would be heading out by himself.

Looking at a patch of grass, Jian Chen started to feel for the world energy. As the energy began to fly around his body, Jian Chen felt a slight breeze.

Jian Chen hadn't made any movements and stood as still as a statue. The fierce wind began to pick up and his clothes began to flap from the gusts of wind.

Two hours later, the winds around Jian Chen's body had grown even stronger. Finally, his entire body began to slowly lift into the air by increments of three inches without stopping.

Like earlier, Jian Chen kept his eyes shut as he continued to feel for the wind element around his entire body. His spirit was completely immersed in the thought of making him fly. To be able to fly through the air was an ability that Jian Chen had coveted. And today was the day he would finally grab hold of it. His heart was already incapable of describing the joy he was feeling at this

current moment.

“Bang!” Suddenly, Jian Chen’s head struck against the tree in front of him. Straight away, his entire body lost balance and began to fall from the air.

Opening his eyes after the ordeal, he climbed up from the ground. It was a good thing his body was different than a regular person’s body, otherwise, he would have broken several bones without the usage of Saint Force to protect his body.

“Ai, it seems that the power of flight isn’t something to play around with. I must cultivate even more.” Jian Chen sighed.

Afterward, Jian Chen relentlessly practiced the power of flight. He continued to float ten meters above the ground for six hours before he finally managed to piece together his experiences and go for an even higher height. Flying straight up for another hundred meters without stopping, he could only see wisps of cyan light flow around him; this was the wind element.

At this moment, a villager suddenly spotted Jian Chen floating a hundred meters up in the air. With his mouth dropped wide open, he began to point at Jian Chen with a quivering lip, “H-he... he’s...” But he was completely unable to finish his sentence in his shock.

“Elder Wang, what are you stammering around for? Did you forget how to talk?” The villager to his side laughed at him before looking in the direction the villager was pointing. Straight away,

he too gasped in shock as he cried, “Good Gods, isn’t that the youth Xiu Mi brought back? How... how is he able to fly like Xiu Mi? Could he be a Heaven Saint Master as well?”

The sight of Jian Chen a hundred meters up into the air was an extremely eye-catching sight. Such an event didn’t take long for everyone to witness. Each villager could only look on in utter disbelief.

“Oh my god, Jian Chen could fly? Is he a Heaven Saint Master? God, god, this is unbelievable!” Even the little fatty who was working the fields had noticed Jian Chen and instantly cried out in shock.

All of a sudden, a strong gust of wind blew across the concentrating figure of Jian Chen, forcing his body to shake back and forth. Unable to keep control, Jian Chen began to plummet down to the ground.

With a change in expression, Jian Chen began to collect his thoughts once more before drawing the wind elements close to him. At the same time, a cyan colored figure could be seen flying straight for Jian Chen a good distance away. It was little fatty’s father, Xiu Mi, who had seen the predicament Jian Chen was in and came by quickly to help.



# Chapter 380: Leaving Longevity Valley

---

Jian Chen's figure continued to free fall down toward the ground. Now that he had lost his Saint Force, a fall a hundred meters up in the air would inflict fatal wounds if it didn't kill him outright.

Unafraid of the threat of death, Jian Chen began to use his mind to control the wind elements in the world once more. In an experiment to regain control, he was finally able to break his fall just as he reached fifty meters above ground and thus avoiding danger.

Letting out a deep breath as he shook off any lingering fear, he began to think. The power of flight seemed almost infinite, but it was not something to be played around with. If one's control wasn't flawless, then they would be risking their life.

Xiu Mi flew toward Jian Chen before smiling at him, "Youngster, are you fine?"

"Yes, I'm fine!" Jian Chen spoke with a slight amount of panic still in his heart.

Xiu Mi began to laugh, "Youngster, if you're not that proficient with the ability to fly, then it would be best to not fly so high. In the case that you begin to fall from a hundred meters, or even a thousand meters, even a Heaven Saint Master would not be able to escape with light injuries."

Xiu Mi began to impart his experiences with Jian Chen before explaining several tricks to Jian Chen. Then, he left to go back to the fields. After experiencing such an event, Jian Chen didn't dare fly too high and instead remained only ten meters above the ground.

For the next three days, Jian Chen spent the majority of his time practicing his ability to fly. It was fortunate that his ability to perceive was strong; it would normally take a person a month or two to be able to grasp the concept of being able to fly. In just a measly three days, he completely understood how to fly.

Right now, Jian Chen's ability to fly was as strong as his ability to walk on solid ground. He had absolutely no difficulties at all, and if he were to be blown by a fierce gale a thousand meters up in the air, he would feel nothing. He was as steady as a house without an iota of balance lost to the wind or even a risk of him plummeting to the ground.

Even Xiu Mi could only exclaim in astonishment at the sight of Jian Chen mastering the ability to fly in three days. Applauding, he remarked that when he became a Heaven Saint Master, he had squandered two months on learning to fly.

Today, Jian Chen was eating a meal with the rest of the family. Although Xiu Mi and elder Xiu no longer needed to eat, they had become used eating three meals a day and continued to live like regular people.

At the table, Jian Chen looked at the family and spoke, "Little Fatty, Aunt Xiu, Uncle Xiu Mi, Elder Xiu, I plan to leave Longevity

Valley for a few days and bring back several of my things.”

Upon hearing that Jian Chen was planning to head out to the outside world, an indescribable sheen could be seen in fatty’s eyes. After looking at his grandfather, the sheen disappeared. With an envious look, he spoke, “Jian Chen, come back soon. You promised to help me build a new house, don’t forget!”

Laughing, Jian Chen said, “Don’t worry, Little Fatty. I’ve already promised you that I will. Wait for me to bring back my things. I’ll definitely help you build a new house.”

“Jian Chen, Longevity Valley has at least a thousand kilometers to travel to get to the outside world. Furthermore, the road is filled with dangerous magical beasts, you’d best be careful.” The father, Xiu Mi, said with concern.

Taking a bite out of the steamed bun in his hands, he spoke with a slightly muffled voice, “Don’t worry, uncle Xiu Mi. I’ll definitely be careful.”

The grandfather hadn’t spoken a word and continued to eat his morning meal in silence.

After the meal and a goodbye, Jian Chen flew into the air and took off in the direction indicated by Xiu Mi. It was the way to leave the valley.

Jian Chen was flying five hundred meters above the ground, only

to feel the wind blow past his ears and under his legs. Right now, he was feeling a feeling he had never felt before, but he knew it made him happy. Flying through the air and running on the ground were two separate matters. Although he wasn't as fast as when he used the Heaven's Stolen Fortune and Illusionary Flash, he still traveled at a decent pace. His speed with the wind elements aiding him was slower than the third elder of the Shi family, but he was barely expending any effort to move. With his strong mind, he could control a small amount of the wind to help him fly through the air without consuming much energy.

This was the very first time that Jian Chen was flying through the air with his own power, so there was a feeling of fresh wonder. On the way, he continued to look all around him while appreciating the view.

At that moment, a black cloud suddenly flew toward Jian Chen a small distance away.

When Jian Chen saw the black cloud headed toward him, his eyes took on a sharp glare as he tried to see just what was coming at him. As it turns out, the black cloud was actually several hundred flying magical beasts.

“So I came across a flock of Blackwing Birds!” Jian Chen had read about the Blackwing Birds within the library at Kargath Academy. These birds lived together in the mountains and had large bodies. A mature Blackwing Bird was the size of an adult human at the very least with a wingspan of ten meters.

These Blackwing Birds weren't Class 5 Magical Beasts, they were

generally Class 3 or Class 4 at the most.

Without decreasing his speed, Jian Chen flew toward the flock of Blackwing Birds. Just as he got within ten kilometers, several trees from under the flock suddenly burst upward. In an explosion of splinters, the trees flew toward the flock like azure and violet shooting stars.

Caught off guard, the Blackwing Birds were struck through their bodies by the trees and began to fall to the ground.

In a span of a few moments, the hundreds of birds were all unable to resist with multiple wounds over their bodies, rendering them incapable of flight.

Now that Jian Chen's strength was equivalent to that of a Heaven Saint Master, a Class 4 Magical Beast like the Blackwing Birds were no match. With Jian Chen's ability to control any living thing with just his mind, he could fight against his enemy using the tactics of the majority against the minority.

On the way, Jian Chen had come across three other disturbances with magical beasts. However, these magical beasts weren't Class 4, and were Class 5 Magical Beasts. They all had an innate wisdom and instinct that warned them to not attack any person that could fly.

Four hours later, Jian Chen had traveled two thousand kilometers before arriving at a mountain range. Then, after another hundred kilometers, he finally arrived at the battleground

where he fought the eight Heaven Saint Masters. Without any further hesitation, he quickly flew forward another hundred kilometers to the place where he had hidden the white tiger cub.

It didn't take long for Jian Chen to arrive there. Slowly descending to the ground, he came to the tree where he had hidden the tiger cub. The moment he saw that the cover was gone and the tree barren, he realized the tiger cub was nowhere to be seen.

This was not a surprise for Jian Chen, he had spotted the traces earlier and tried to track where the tiger cub had gone. After some time, he wasn't able to find anything.

Jian Chen began to grow solemn by this point, but he was not frantic just yet. Although the tiger cub was lost, he still had a method of finding the tiger cub.

Immediately rising up from the ground, he flew toward Mingyang City. An hour later, he arrived in the skies above and without any form of concealment, flew into the city in front of everyone's eyes.

By now, Mingyang City had already returned to its normal state. The frenzied mood they had been in while looking for the tiger cub had long since past and even the portraits of Jian Chen's face had been taken down. After the second day of Jian Chen's departure, all news relating to the event had disappeared.

But when Jian Chen flew into the sky, he was instantly spotted by the people down below. Each one raised their heads to the sky

and dropped their mouths in shock. Quickly, news began to circulate around the city and thus everyone became aware that a Heaven Saint Master had arrived in their city.

The city lord's mansion was the very first to grab hold of this information and immediately dispatched some soldiers to greet him. In this era where Saint Rulers secluded themselves from the world, Heaven Saint Masters were widely regarded as the top of the pyramid on the continent. For a Heaven Saint Master to come to Mingyang City, that was no small event.

Within the Huangpu clan, the affair that had happened sometime ago had no major impact on their clan. The entire compound was calm once more and several troops patrolled around the compound as a way to guarantee their safety.

Just as a squadron was walking past an abandoned house, someone suddenly cried out, "Captain, look up at the skies!"

At that, the soldiers lifted their heads to the sky one by one, and when they looked, they were instantly stunned and their eyes grew as wide as dinner plates.

A simple clothed person was slowly descending from the sky just three meters away from the squadron.

"Heav... Heaven... Heaven Saint Master!" The captain had a look of utter shock as he stared at the young face of Jian Chen, unable to believe his eyes.

For a youth this young to reach the realm of a Heaven Saint Master, it was almost completely unheard of.

“Re... respectful sir, I am the captain of unit three of the Huangpu clan, how may I serve you?” The captain tried to quash the surprise in his voice, but had stuttered as he spoke to him.

Jian Chen cast a glance at the guard briefly before waving his hand, “This place doesn’t concern you, go do whatever you were doing.” With that tone, it was almost as if Jian Chen was the master of the Huangpu clan.

The captain didn’t make any objections and only respectfully saluted him in response before bringing his guards away from the area.



# Chapter 381: The Disappearance Of The Little White Tiger

---

After the guards left, Jian Chen had a faint smile on his face. Bringing up his right hand for a moment, a Space Ring suddenly flew out the window before landing on his hand.

This Space Ring was the ring that was holding both the Seal of Treasure Mountain and the Duanyun Sword.

With the ring in his hand, Jian Chen looked into the Space Ring only to find both the Seal of Treasure Mountain and the Duanyun Sword still stored inside. They had not been taken just yet.

Jian Chen could barely hide his joy at this. He knew that the third elder of the Shi family had a method of finding their clans Ruler Armament, but the Space Ring had managed to avoid detection within the Huangpu clan for days. Something like this was a joyous occasion to celebrate.

On the way here, Jian Chen was worried that the hidden Space Ring would have been discovered, but now that he was here, those worries were completely superfluous.

Letting out a sigh in relief, a happy smile appeared on Jian Chen's face. He slowly closed his eyes, and in two breaths time, the well within the Huangpu clan compound exploded as a purple and gold box flew through the air. Then, as if attracted by a mysterious power, it flew straight to Jian Chen's hand.

Opening up the box, Jian Chen could see the silver Space Ring tucked away inside. With the other Space Ring still in his hand, he took that other Space Ring and threw it into the second one along with the box and left.

Not too long after Jian Chen left, a group of nervous people quickly scrambled over to where Jian Chen was. Among the crowd was the master of the Huangpu clan.

But Jian Chen had already left the area. Even after searching for a moment, the master of the clan could do nothing else but give up.

Flying through the air, Jian Chen quickly made his way out of Mingyang City. On the way, countless people looked up at the sky with expressions of amazement and wonder, but Jian Chen didn't stay around long enough to see. His first priority was to find the whereabouts of the white tiger and to ensure that it wasn't in any danger.

In midair, Jian Chen took out the white patches of fur given to him by Rum Guinness. This patch of fur had a special way of finding where Rum Guinness was as well as where the white tiger was.

After following the directions Rum Guinness had told him with the white tiger cub's fur, it began to straighten up before curving at the edges as if pointing Jian Chen in a specific direction like a compass.

Jian Chen looked in the direction where the fur was pointing only to discover it was where he had just come from.

“Did the white tiger cub run off to the mountain range?” Jian Chen thought. The mountain range in question was connected to Cross Mountains and contained one of the kings which was the white tiger cub’s enemy. If the white tiger cub were to fall into the king’s paws, then it would be over for the cub.

“Crap, I hope the cub hasn’t been discovered by the king of Cross Mountains.” With a serious expression and no hesitation at all, he flew off in the direction the fur pointed.

Four hours later, Jian Chen had deviated from the path back to Longevity Valley and was instead headed toward Cross Mountains a good distance away.

As he flew closer and closer to Cross Mountains, Jian Chen’s face began to grow more and more unsightly. He could practically confirm that the white tiger cub was most likely in Cross Mountains.

Slowing down, Jian Chen floated in midair as he started to think. If the white tiger cub was found by the king of Cross Mountains, he was doing nothing but charging toward his death.

Suddenly, elder Xiu’s image appeared in Jian Chen’s mind, almost as if he was giving Jian Chen a rope to save his life.

“Could elder Xiu be of help here?” Jian Chen thought as he began to calculate things. Elder Xiu’s cultivation was immeasurably deep, he could possibly be the only one that could withstand the might of the Gilligan clan. But then again, elder Xiu had grown weary of mortal conflicts and preferred to keep to his isolated days. Jian Chen didn’t wish to bring elder Xiu into his affairs for his own personal interests as well. After all, the Gilligan clan of Cross Mountains was a huge power. He didn’t wish to add to elder Xiu’s troubles by having him help accomplish an unknown task.

After floating in the air with some doubt, Jian Chen bit his lip and flew in the direction of the white tiger cub. At this moment he wasn’t able to tell if the tiger cub was captured or not. If the tiger cub had been taken by a weaker magical beast, there was still a chance.

Like a compass, the white tiger fur led Jian Chen in the same direction for two hours. Finally, Jian Chen arrived at one of the mountain peaks and began to look down at the scenery.

By now, Jian Chen was nearing the border to Cross Mountains. Underneath him, a group of Spirit Apes were gathered nearby. Standing on top of the tall trees, they gnashed their teeth as they howled at the floating Jian Chen.

Jian Chen looked at the fur in his hand. From this, he could tell that the white tiger was somewhere nearby. After putting the fur away, he began to scour the ground below. He confirmed that he was already deeply entrenched within a nest of Spirit Apes with an innumerable amount of them standing nearby with even more rushing to the area. Even more so, there was also the scent of

several other Class 5 Magical beasts. If he wasn't flying, then he would have been surrounded by the apes a long time ago.

Suddenly, several golden figures could be seen flying through the air. There were five, three meter tall golden Spirit Apes that were surrounding Jian Chen. Each one of them had a ferocious glare that boded nothing well for Jian Chen.

Jian Chen began to grow serious now. He had been underestimating the Spirit Apes before, but he hadn't thought that there would be a Class 6 Spirit Ape, let alone five of them.

Now that there were five Class 6 Spirit Apes, Jian Chen didn't dare be careless anymore. With his mind, countless of tree leaves began to launch into the sky from the forest below. Then, with an azure and violet glow, they flew around Jian Chen's side as a sort of protective layering.

This strange display of magic stunned the five Class 6 Spirit Apes, but one of the Spirit Apes narrowed his eyes and roared. Then, he began to charge at Jian Chen with his fists raised high in the air.

Immediately, the tree leaves that were flying around Jian Chen transformed to become two swords that were used to slash at the Spirit Ape.

“Bang!”

As the two sides struck each other, a loud bang could be heard.

The swords made from tree leaves were blown apart by the Spirit Apes fist, but the fist had two conspicuous looking wounds. Even blood could be seen flowing down from it.

Seeing how the hand of the Spirit Ape was bleeding, the other Spirit Apes were stunned. Each one looked at the human with astonished eyes as if trying to understand how the inexplicably weak tree leaves had managed to become so sharp.

“Zhizhi!” One of the Spirit Apes let out an indistinguishable sound, but it was apparently an order as the other four Spirit Apes brandished their fists and flew in to attack him.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed with the two colors as he began to control the leaves flying around him. In an instant, they formed into ten swords and shot toward the five Spirit Apes.

Another explosive bang rang through the air as the Spirit Apes attacked the swords. Like before, their fists gained new deep scars.

But instead of stopping to wonder, the Class 6 Spirit Apes continued to fly at Jian Chen and tried to attack him with a rippling amount of energy. Hurtling their fists through the air, they tried to block any of Jian Chen’s escape paths.

Both of Jian Chen’s hands were empty now. As he floated in midair, the tree leaves began to glow brightly with the azure and violet Sword Qi before flying toward the five Spirit Apes like a moth to a flame.

Knowing just how strong this Sword Qi was now, the fists of the Spirit Apes began to ripple with even more power before at last, there was a golden glow to their fists that made them invulnerable. Then, with those fists, they struck out at the tree leaves.

But because of the sheer amount of tree leaves that covered the sky, almost every inch, the five Spirit Apes weren't able to diffuse them all. Many of the tree leaves began to shoot into their skin, breaking through their rather strong fur. Jutting into their bodies, they left scar after scar, dying their entire body red with blood. In a flash, their golden skin was more crimson than gold.

“Zhizhizhizhi!” The five Spirit Apes began to howl in panic and pain before they utilized the earth attributed energy they had to form outside of their bodies as a secondary form of earthen armor.

The usage of the earth attributed energy would form an incredibly strong defensive armor. Even when the azure and violet Sword Qi infused leaves shot into it, all they did was leave a scar behind; they were not able to break through the armor.

Taking an opportunity to retreat, he flew away from the enclosure the Spirit Apes had trapped him in. Then, pushing his empty hands, a dozen of the trees below exploded into wooden shrapnel. Transforming into a flood of wood, they flew into the air and in an instant, they flew toward the Spirit Apes relentlessly.

But with the armor, the Spirit Apes didn't even bother to take notice of the wood flood. Brandishing their fists, they chased Jian Chen with a reluctance to give up.

Continuing to fly backward, Jian Chen watched as the wood flood he had created surrounded the apes. Covering the entire sky for them, the shrapnel began to shoot straight into the Spirit Apes mercilessly.

Suffering from such an intensive attack, the armors of the Spirit Apes were riddled with holes and were smashed apart an instant later. Another surge of energy rippled from their body, but it was quickly battered down by Jian Chen's attack: forced to break apart once again. But disregarding this, the Spirit Apes continued to chase down Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed brightly with color as he lifted his right hand up. A single blade of pure Sword Qi began to form as Jian Chen began to use the Origin energy for the Sword Spirits.

While his normal attacks were able to injure the Class 6 Magical Beasts, they were unable to land a killing blow. If he wanted to heavily injure the Class 6 Magical Beasts, he would need to use the Sword Spirits.



# Chapter 382: Summoning Of The Ape King

---

Wielding the Origin energy of the azure and violet Sword Spirits, even the Class 6 Spirit Apes were able to feel Jian Chen's might. Instead of running away, they continued to inch closer toward him with equally serious expressions. With their fists flying through the air, the space around them began to distort from the energy.

By now, both of Jian Chen's eyes were completely lit with two different colors. The left eye was violet and the other azure; a sight like this was especially frightening and made him seem like a demon in disguise. The Origin energy was like a beam of light in Jian Chen's hand that continued to expel a sharp amount of Sword Qi into the sky around it. In moments, it was almost as if the entire area was fully consumed by it.

Following an azure and violet swish of light, the Origin energy from the Sword Spirits painted the entire area a splendid light as it stabbed at the Spirit Apes.

“Kacha!”

Five separate cracks could be heard as the energy surrounding the five Spirit Apes' fists all shattered. Following a cleaving light from the Sword Spirits, a wound could be seen on each of the fists. The cut was so severe that it went straight past the bone and felt as if it had nearly cut their hand in two.

“Zhizhi!” The intense pain caused each of the apes to shriek before gnashing their teeth together as they looked at their nearly

bisected hands. Instead of being afraid however, their innate berserk nature began to swell out of them, causing the fierce glint in their eyes to multiply as they glared dangerously at Jian Chen.

“Zhizhizhizhi!” One of the Spirit Apes began to cry out loud in the language known only to Spirit Apes as a way to communicate. After hearing the first Spirit Ape, the other four apes looked as if they were hesitating. However, they gnawed at their teeth and surrounded the first ape. With their swaying bodies, energy began to pour out before shooting straight to the first ape.

Jian Chen continued to watch this strange sight with a confused look. The five Spirit Apes had some sort of strange technique where four Spirit Apes could convene their energy to the one in the middle! If this went on, then the Spirit Ape standing in the middle would have the strength of five Class 6 Spirit Apes. With such a strong concentration of power like that, just how strong would the middle one become?

A flash of murderous intent could be seen in Jian Chen’s mind. There was no way he could allow for the Spirit Apes to continue with this activity. In the case that whatever they were doing was finished, he would be up against an extremely terrifying opponent that would definitely prove troublesome.

Just as Jian Chen was about to attack the Spirit Apes to prevent anything from happening, an elderly voice suddenly called out from nowhere.

“Halt, just what sort of reception is this to a guest? Wise Spirit, Abundant Spirit, Golden Spirit, Kind Spirit, Clean Spirit, hurry up

and receive the guest properly, do not idle about!” This elderly voice contained awe-inspiring power in his voice. At the same time, it was impossible for Jian Chen to pinpoint where this voice was coming from.

Although the sudden voice had thrown off Jian Chen’s plan to attack the Spirit Apes, Jian Chen was still looking around him seriously. It was finally after seeing nothing unusual that he began to use his omnipresence to look around the area.

But when Jian Chen’s omnipresence reached one of the mountain peaks, a transparent barrier blocked its path, rendering him unable to sense what was past it.

Jian Chen blanched as the thought of retreating came into his mind. In order to be able to put up a barrier like this, one would need to be able to comprehend the profound mysteries of the world, meaning a Saint Ruler or higher. For this unknown entity to be able to put up a barrier and make his voice unable to be pinpointed, this entity would most likely have to be no weaker than a Saint Ruler.

Although the Origin energy from the Sword Spirits was strong enough to deal with Class 6 Magical Beasts or Heaven Saint Masters, it was completely useless against a Saint Ruler.

When the elderly voice had rang out, the five Spirit Apes had stopped their movements. However, they continued to glare at Jian Chen angrily as if he was their most hated enemy.

There was a conflicted look on Jian Chen's face. He didn't know whether or not he should stay or run, but if a Saint Ruler had really wanted to be his opponent, running would be useless. The only comforting thought was that there was no hostility in the elder's voice, so Jian Chen could let out a sigh of relief.

"Wise Spirit, Abundant Spirit, Golden Spirit, Kind Spirit, Clean Spirit, hurry up and receive the guest, do not idle about." The elderly voice could be heard once more without any more hints on where it was coming from.

"Zhizhi!" The five Spirit Apes responded to the call with a respectful bow toward one of the mountain peaks. Then, with a mutual glance to each other, they beckoned Jian Chen unwillingly.

Jian Chen didn't say a word and instead gave a small smile before flying toward the highest mountain peak with the bloody Spirit Apes following from behind. Each were still biting their teeth as if they hadn't forgotten about their animosity with Jian Chen.

Not too long later, Jian Chen arrived at the tallest mountain peak. On this peak, there was a single barrier that seemed to cover the entire mountain peak.

Suddenly, a small crack appeared within the barrier without a sound. It continued to expand before finally growing to a size large enough for a human to enter.

"Human, enter. I wish to speak to you!" The voice spoke once more. But this time, Jian Chen could hear it coming from the

mountain peak.

Jian Chen hesitated for a moment, but he continued to fly inside. The Spirit Apes followed close behind and continued to bow toward the mountain peak respectfully.

Quickly spotting a gigantic cave in the mountain peak, Jian Chen could see several words written in human language over the cave, “Cave of the Ape King”.

Along with the Spirit Apes, Jian Chen entered the cave. The cave of the Ape King was well lit so not a single area of the cave was left untouched.

The passageway through the cave was so extensive that Jian Chen had walked for a hundred meters through the wide areas before finally coming to the belly of the mountain. There were plenty of curious plants that had sweet fragrances. These fragrances had a miraculous effect that made anyone feel happy as well as removing any feelings of anger.

Aside from the strange plants in the cave, there was a simple arrangement of furniture. Only a jade table and bed could be seen. From the luster of both, it wasn't hard to see that both items were very expensive.

On the jade bed, a grizzly haired elderly man sat cross-legged with plenty of wrinkles on his face so that it was hard to distinguish his facial characteristics. By his side, there was a single white, winged tiger cub sleeping peacefully. Compared to the

white tiger days ago, the white tiger cub was much larger than before and now measured nearly a meter long.

Upon seeing the white tiger cub, Jian Chen had a look of utter surprise on his face. When he realized just what place he was in, a feeling of pressure could be felt once more.

The five Spirit Apes quickly came to the elderly man's side and knelt down respectfully before speaking in gibberish that Jian Chen assumed to be monkey speak.

The cross-legged elder looked at the five Spirit Apes with a calm eye, "You were all too unruly. The human in front of us is a guest, just how could you receive him in such a way? Hurry up and apologize."

"Zhizhizhizhi!" The Spirit Apes immediately cried out in dissatisfaction as if trying to justify themselves.

"Not all humans are our enemies. This one in front of us is a guest of the Spirit Apes. Hurry up and apologize." The elder stressed with a tone of finality.

The five Spirit Apes hung their heads in dejected defeat before crying out to Jian Chen unwillingly. At the same time, they bowed their bodies as form of apology to him.

Right now, Jian Chen could only tell that the man had no hostility aimed toward himself. With a smile, he cupped his hands

together, “This was a misunderstanding from my own carelessness. If it were not for my recklessness, this would not have happened, allow me to apologize as well.”

“You five may go.” The elder spoke to the Spirit Apes.

The five Spirit Apes bowed toward the elder once more before shooting a quick indignant glares at Jian Chen as they left the cave.

As soon as the Spirit Apes left, the elder stood up from the bed and sat down at the table side instead, “Human, come sit!”

“I give my thanks, Ape King!” Jian Chen cupped his hands before sitting opposite of him.

With a deep look, the elder began to size up Jian Chen for a moment before sighing in admiration, “It is no wonder Rum Guinness holds you in high praise. You stand out from the rest, even with your blood stained hands, you hold a righteous spirit. For Rum Guinness to entrust her child to you, that is a sensible choice.”

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat, “Senior, do you know Rum Guinness?”

The elder smiled, “You may call me Ape King. The appellations you humans use is something I am not accustomed to.” The elder grew grieved after that however. With a long sigh, he spoke, “Rum Guinness, her husband, and I were all elders of the Gilligan clan for

over a thousand years. We grew as close as family, and when they came across trouble, I knew it was in regards to their child.”

---



## Chapter 383: Hundred Grass Wine

---

After hearing what the Ape King said, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel shocked. He hadn't thought that the Ape King would have been an elder for the Gilligan clan. But after hearing that he and Rum Guinness were good friends, he felt at ease with himself. At the very least, he knew that the Ape King wouldn't report the white tiger cub's whereabouts to the king of the Gilligan clan. For the currently pitiful white tiger cub, this was a good sign.

The Ape King continued to speak, "Since Rum Guinness entrusted her child to you, I can presume that she has told you about the child being a Heavenly Tiger God as well as the associated dangers with it."

Jian Chen nodded his head without speaking a word.

"Human, for you to come into Cross Mountains despite the dangers, I can admire your valor. Rum Guinness did not find the wrong person to trust." The Ape King spoke with appreciation.

"Senior Ape King flatters this one too much. This one was luckily prepared for this situation, that's all." Jian Chen tried to sound as modest as possible.

The Ape King knew that Jian Chen was trying to sound polite, and so he smiled, "Human, you are a strong one with a strange power. I have never seen another human like you. Rum Guinness' child will not befall any danger by traveling with you. You must bear in mind to never divulge the fact that the child is a Heavenly

Tiger God, otherwise, it will be very problematic for you. You needn't worry about the child's wings, there are many magical beasts under the heavens, many of them have wings. Aside from Class 7 Magical Beasts, other beasts will not know that this child has the special blood of a Heavenly Tiger God running through its veins. So hiding this fact from the human world would also be a wise choice to make. Most importantly, you must never allow a Class 7 Magical Beast to know about it."

"Senior Ape King, could the tiger cub not stay with you? With how vast the Cross Mountains are, the king of the Gilligan clan would surely not be able to find the cub here. With your strength, this would be no major task?" Jian Chen asked. Right now he was still in danger from the Shi and Jiede clan. Both families held a great deal of strength and could be considered one of the top families on the continent. The tiger cub would not be safe at his side, and Jian Chen only wished for the tiger cub to grow up strong without any sufferings. It had suffered enough already.

The Ape King shook his head instantly before speaking with a decisive tone, "Definitely not. You do not understand the situation Cross Mountains are in with the Gilligan clan. Although the territory of the Spirit Apes is at the border of Cross Mountains which is some distance away from the Gilligan clan, it isn't safe for the Heavenly Tiger God to stay within this place for too long. Even our Spirit Apes clan would be burnt to the ground if news were to spread."

Jian Chen grew deathly serious as he began to think, "Is that right. Then the only option is for me to take the tiger cub away."

“The child would be safest traveling the human world by your side. While the Gilligan clan is admittedly strong, even the elders would not dare step into the human territory without permission. Letting the Heavenly Tiger God stay in the human world would at the very least avoid persecution from the Gilligan clan.”

“A Class 7 Magical Beast can transform into a human form. If the king of the Gilligan clan were to transform into a human and infiltrate our world, then wouldn’t he be undetectable?” Jian Chen asked with worry.

The Ape King laughed and replied, “You needn’t worry. We have an agreement with the strong ones of the human world. Unless there is approval from both sides, neither Saint Ruler can enter the other side or they risk being punished by two separate punishments!”

“Ah, so there was something like that? I am relieved.” Jian Chen’s brows furrowed, this was an interesting piece of information.

The Ape King continued to smile brightly, “Human, you have not told me your name yet.”

“Senior Ape King, I am called Jian Chen!” Jian Chen cupped his hands together respectfully.

“Jian Chen!” The Ape King tested the name out as if he was trying to commit the name to memory before slowly extending his right hand. From a Space Ring, he took out two jade bottles and a

carefully engraved wine bottle.

“Jian Chen, this is the specialty of us Spirit Apes, the Hundred Grass Wine. Using the treasures in the Cross Mountains, I was able to ferment it for over a thousand years and I am loathe to drink even a single sip. Since you are Rum Guinness’ friend and not an outsider, I’ll permit you to sample the wine created by us Spirit Apes.” With that, the Ape King twisted the lid off and poured out a green liquid from within. Immediately, a sweet smelling fragrance permeated the entire cave so that both Jian Chen and the Ape King could smell it.

The Ape King extended a cup of the Hundred Grass Wine toward Jian Chen, “This is a priceless treasure that cannot be bought anywhere and contains a majestic amount of Qi. It isn’t some minor drink with minor effects, its best use is for helping a person think concisely.”

“Help think concisely!” Jian Chen immediately grew happy. To be able to have such an effect like this was something he desperately wanted to help impact his strength for the better.

The Ape King was seemingly pleased with Jian Chen’s thunderstruck expression. “Is it not shocking? Haha, the most common Hundred Grass Wine would usually only be able to help a person increase their Saint Force, meaning anyone under the Heaven Saint Master realm for you humans would be able to use it. But the Hundred Grass Wine in my possession is a once in a thousand year item. It is far different than what a normal Hundred Grass Wine is like. Even if a Saint Ruler from the human world were to take a sip, they would feel the benefits straight away.”

Without hesitation, Jian Chen gave a hasty thanks before hurriedly drinking down the wine.

Jian Chen could only feel a rising sensation make its way through his body. The very instant the wine reached his stomach, it transformed into vital energy. However, because his Saint Weapon had been destroyed, the vital energy was unable to be absorbed and slowly began to disappear. At the same time, an azure glow of light began to rise from Jian Chen's dantian before entering his forehead and then ultimately blending with Jian Chen's thoughts.

A beautiful sensation occurred in Jian Chen's mind as he felt his spirit become unbelievably comfortable. There was a pleasure that could be felt almost as if he had transcended on becoming an Immortal, causing him to cry out in joy.

Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes and allowed his spirit to enjoy the pleasantness. While he was comfortable, his thoughts had begun to condense in a way that even the Sword Spirits were benefiting from, as shown from the lively thoughts being transmitted.

After a while, the joyous feeling finally began to recede, causing Jian Chen to open his eyes. At this moment, he could sense that in such a short amount of time, his thoughts had already soared to an unprecedented degree. This caused Jian Chen to nearly jump with joy. The Hundred Grass Wine within the possession of the Ape King was truly too amazing.

Afterward, Jian Chen's eyes began to glow with a fiery expression. The Hundred Grass Wine had given him an excellent boost in strength, if only he could have another cup...

Momentarily, Jian Chen's look toward the Ape King had changed.

Seeing the glint in Jian Chen's eyes, the Ape King's eye twitched before collecting the Hundred Grass Wine back into the bottle with a displeased look. "Do not even think about my Hundred grass Wine. I've aged this wine for over a thousand years in order for it to have such an effect. However much you get is however much you drink. I myself only have so much. If this was some ordinary wine, then I would gladly give you more."

Upon hearing the Ape King's words, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel embarrassed, "That is... Senior Ape King, this Hundred Grass Wine has given me a tremendous boost, see...."

"Out of the question!" The Ape King waved his hand with no hesitation. "It was only for the face of Rum Guinness that I served you a cup. How could you not know contentment?" The Ape King treated the Hundred Grass Wine like treasure, so there was no way he would give Jian Chen any more.

Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before taking out a fist sized seal from within his Space Ring. "Senior Ape King, why don't I make an offer for your Hundred Grass Wine?" Jian Chen was nearly drooling at the mouth for the wine since it was a great boon to him. For the sake of his strength, he desperately wanted the item.

“Definitely not, no trade!” The Ape King replied without delay. But when he suddenly cast an eye over the item on the table, he immediately let out a stunned look, “This is....”

“Senior Ape King, I presume you recognize what this is and know of its worth. If I were to give you this for a bottle of Hundred Grass Wine, would you be willing?” Jian Chen let out a confident smile, the item he had pulled out just now was the Ruler Armament Seal of Treasure Mountain.

Ruler Armaments were extremely precious, but they were of no use to Jian Chen. Furthermore, the Seal of Treasure Mountain required the use of the blood of the Shi family in order to be used. In his hands, it was useless and could be tracked down by the Shi family. An item like this was a time bomb to Jian Chen and could reveal Jian Chen’s position at any given time. If he were to throw it away, it would be a pity, so rather than that, he might as well trade it away for an item that would serve a better use for him.

“This is a Ruler Armament, where did you come across such an item?” The Ape King spoke with a serious look.

“I took it!” Jian Chen spoke honestly.

The Ape King’s eyes blinked twice as he looked at Jian Chen in utter disbelief. Then, with a deep breath, he spoke gravely, “Families who are in possession of Ruler Armaments are not easy to deal with. Jian Chen, you may have invited trouble upon your head.”





# Chapter 384: Leaving The Cave Of The Ape King

---

Jian Chen declined to respond to the Ape King's warning and instead replied with a smile, "I know!"

The Ape King stared deeply at Jian Chen with a serious gaze before saying, "Any family with a Ruler Armament is a family with power. A person traveling alone with the Heavenly Tiger God will surely come across many unforeseen events!"

"Senior Ape King, there is a reason why we have the expression, 'counter soldiers with arms, and water with an earth weir'. The situation has already come, but there is no use mentioning that now. Although the family in question is very strong the Tian Yuan Continent is massive, so they will not be able to find me easily." Jian Chen spoke without fear.

"I indeed hope that way. I only wish for the child of Rum Guinness to stay safe from any wrongful harm." The Ape King sighed before taking out a bottle. With a pained face, he gave it to Jian Chen, "For the child of Rum Guinness, I will part myself from one of my treasures. This bottle of Hundred Grass Wine is for you. I hope that you will be able to improve yourself, this way, you will be able to properly protect the Heavenly Tiger God."

"Many thanks, senior Ape King!" Jian Chen cried out in joy before quickly putting the bottle into his Space Ring as if afraid that the Ape King would change his mind.

“Senior Ape King, then this Ruler Armament will be given to you in exchange for the Hundred Grass Wine.” Taking the bottle, Jian Chen pushed the Seal of Treasure Mountain toward the Ape King.

The Ape King cast an eye at the item for a moment before speaking, “The Ruler Armaments of you humans serve no use for me. Take it with you. If you come across a method to use it, then the Ruler Armament will be of use to you.”

Hearing that, Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before taking the Seal of Treasure Mountain back.

“The growth of a Heavenly Tiger God is excruciatingly slow; they must consume a large amount of heavenly resources in order to grow. Since I have spent many years collecting every type of said resource and Rum Guinness is my dear friend, I shall bequeath them to her child for the sake of growing faster.” Waving his hand, several heavenly resources began to fill the table.

Thousand year Ginseng, Spirit Mushrooms, Knotweed, Dragon’s Tongue Grass, Core Plant, Hundred year old Spirit Root and so on. All sorts of ingredients that Jian Chen had never seen before appeared on the table.

These items were all being given to the tiger cub, so Jian Chen did not decline any of them. With a word of thanks, Jian Chen began to collect the heavenly resources.

The Ape King spoke once more, “Stay for a while. I will be feeding the resources to the Heavenly Tiger God in the meantime.

The child is in a sleep to digest them right now. We shall see if there are any changes later. When the child wakes, you may take him and leave.”

After that, the Ape King ignored Jian Chen and sat back on his bed. Closing his eyes, he descended into a calm meditative sleep.

The belly of the cave had become deathly quiet. In his boredom, Jian Chen walked around the cave observing the strange plants being cultivated.

After waiting for six hours, the tiger cub finally awoke. Both of its bright eyes began to flicker open and immediately took notice of Jian Chen who was standing not too far away.

Upon seeing Jian Chen, the white tiger cub was stunned. Afterward, it began to cry out happily before leaping from the bed toward Jian Chen.

Hearing the tiger cub's cry, Jian Chen's face lit up in happiness before turning around just in time to see a white streak of light shooting toward his chest. Catching the cub in both hands, the tiger cub knocked against Jian Chen's torso with enough force that Jian Chen had to take several steps back.

“Mrrr...” The white tiger cub was exceedingly happy and continued to purr into Jian Chen's chest as it rubbed its head against Jian Chen's chin. Its tongue licked at Jian Chen without stop in a clear indication of its joy.

After the events of the past few days, the white tiger had begun to dote upon Jian Chen a lot more.

Jian Chen smiled as he looked at the tiger cub. He could clearly tell that the tiger cub had grown heavier and even bigger since the last time he saw it. All four of the paws of the cub had already grown to be incredibly sharp, and even its fangs were terrifying to look at.

“Jian Chen, take the Heavenly Tiger God and leave this place. The child cannot stay here for too long.” The Ape King’s voice could be heard. Opening his eyes, he smiled in the direction of the white tiger with an affectionate expression.

“Yes, senior Ape King, this one will be leaving then, farewell!” Jian Chen spoke to the Ape King before leading the tiger cub away.

“Mrrr...” The white tiger cub seemed to have realized that they were leaving and swung both of its reluctant eyes toward the Ape King before waving a paw at him in farewell.

Leaving the cave, the outside world was already quite dark with the bright moon shining down on the ground below.

The night was extraordinarily beautiful with moonlight shining everywhere. Even an unruly child would be stunned by the beauty and would be fascinated by the shine.

The Ape King had given no farewell. Jian Chen carried the tiger

cub on his chest and began to fly into the sky. Leaving the mountain peak, he came across the barrier and slipped past it without a sound.

After leaving the barrier, Jian Chen refused to stick around any longer and flew toward Longevity Valley.

The tiger cub was extremely curious on how they were flying and clutched at Jian Chen's arms tightly. Its eyes shined brightly with pure curiosity as it twisted and turned its head around. Staying snugly within Jian Chen's arms, it continued to enjoy the view with an adorable expression on its face.

By the time Jian Chen returned to Longevity Valley, it was already nearly daytime. By then, the village was already bustling about.

Jian Chen didn't return to the village just yet and instead descended within the valley and walked the rest of the way with the tiger cub by his side.

"Hey, Jian Chen, you're finally back! Did you bring me anything good to eat?" Little Fatty walked to meet him from some distance away. The moment he saw the tiger by Jian Chen's side, he cried out with an astonished look, "Jian Chen, where did you find this magical beast? It has wings, so does that mean it'll be able to fly when it grows up?"

Jian Chen nodded his head, "This magical beast was found by me in the forest, what do you think; is it cute?" Jian Chen

remembered the Ape King's words and said nothing to divulge the tiger cub's identity.

Jian Chen and Little Fatty continued to laugh and banter with each other as they returned to the village. On the way, several villagers called out to Jian Chen in greeting. Jian Chen's ability to fly was already known by everyone. He was able to become a Heaven Saint Master at such a young age and thus had earned the respect of the entire village.

When Jian Chen returned to the house, elder Xiu and Xiu Mi both came in with their hoes perched on their shoulders at the same time.

"Ah, Jian Chen, what's that you brought with you?" Xiu Mi glanced at the white tiger cub with a strange look.

Laughing, Jian Chen spoke, "Uncle Xiu Mi, this is a magical beast I found while I was outside the valley."

"Little beast? What little beast? This place has a hierarchy of grade; is this a low leveled magical beast?" Xiu Mi spoke with curiosity.

Upon hearing low level magical beast, the tiger cub seemed as if it was displeased. Holding its head up high from Jian Chen's embrace, the tiger cub revealed the sharp fangs it had as it gave off a king like aura toward Xiu Mi.

The reaction of the tiger cub caused Xiu Mi to look surprised. Sizing up the cub, he looked at the wings on its back with a startled look before turning back to his father, “Father, you are the knowledgeable one here, have you ever seen such a magical beast? This one doesn’t seem to be a low level beast.”

Elder Xiu remained silent as he stared deeply at the tiger cub. In the end, when he looked at the wings on the tigers back, his eyebrows furrowed together as he revealed a ponderous expression.

Jian Chen had a faint smile on his face as he looked at elder Xiu. He wasn’t worried if the identity of the tiger cub was known to elder Xiu since only a Class 7 Magical Beast would know of the true identity that ran through the cub’s veins. No humans would know of the true identity since a Heavenly Tiger God was not seen since the ancient past. Even if Jian Chen mentioned its name, very few people would know about it. That was because it had been far too long—the last time it had been seen was during the time of Mo Tianyun.

Seeing how elder Xiu had been silent for a long time, Xiu Mi asked once more with shock, “Father, could it be that even you don’t know the tiger’s history?”

Ignoring Xiu Mi, the elder continued to look at the tiger’s wings with narrowed eyes. In that moment, his body began to shake as if he had suddenly thought about something unbelievable and was overwhelmed with shock because of it.

Seeing the elder’s reaction, Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat,

“Don’t tell me he figured it out.”





## Chapter 385: Pressure

---

Elder Xiu had a shocked expression as his eyes stared at the tiger in Jian Chen's hands. A look of utter disbelief could be seen.

"Father, what's wrong?" Xiu Mi was speechless at the sudden change in the elder's expression. This was the very first time he had ever seen his father in such a state.

Elder Xiu continued to ignore Xiu Mi as his eyes became more and more frosty. Carefully analyzing the tiger cub in Jian Chen's hands even more, his eyes seemed as if they could clearly see every single detail on the tiger.

"Mrr..." With the elder's stare being a tad bit frightening and the cub still quite young, it had begun to feel intimidated by the elder. The cub's petite body tried to burrow deeper into Jian Chen's arms as if trying to hide from the elder like it was scared.

"Elder Xiu, what are you doing?" Jian Chen was beginning to grow nervous. He didn't know just what to think from the elder's actions. Had he really seen through the tiger's identity? The Ape King had told him before that a human shouldn't know of the true identity of a Heavenly Tiger God.

Elder Xiu let out a long breath of air as the cold glint in his eyes began to recede. In a flash he had reverted back to his original expression with just a small complicated look as he turned to Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, talk to me honestly. This magical beast you found, was it really found in the forest?"

“Elder Xiu, could it be you know of this tiger’s background?” Jian Chen stared at the elder with an astonished look.

The elder sighed once more before looking to Little Fatty, “Little Fatty, go and plow the fields.”

“Yes, grandfather!” Fatty replied before giving both Jian Chen and the white tiger a curious look. But in the end, he went out to the fields to do as his grandfather asked.

After Little Fatty had left, elder Xiu looked at Jian Chen and Xiu Mi, “You two follow me!” Turning about, the elder walked into one of the rooms of the house.

Xiu Mi could feel that the situation had grown serious and cast a deep glance toward the tiger cub before following his father into one of the rooms nervously.

Jian Chen stroked the head of the cub gently before following after the elder.

This was the personal room of elder Xiu. It was only ten square meters, and the furniture was arranged in a simplistic manner. There was only a bed and wardrobe in the room and a small pile of objects in a corner. Aside from this, there was nothing else.

The moment Jian Chen entered the room, a faint but transparent barrier enshrouded the entire room.

Upon seeing the sudden activation of the barrier, Xiu Mi had a startled look. “Father, what is the meaning of this? What has made you so cautious to create a barrier?”

Jian Chen’s face grew deathly serious as well as he stepped forward. No matter if he could believe it or not, one thing was certain—elder Xiu had definitely figured out the matter behind the Heavenly Tiger God.

Elder Xiu ignored Xiu Mi once more and stared deeply at Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, speak the truth. Where did you come across this cub?”

“Elder Xiu, do you know of the tiger cub’s identity?” Jian Chen listened carefully for confirmation.

Elder Xiu’s eyes latched onto the tiger cub and spoke, “If my guess is not wrong, then this cub is the Heavenly Tiger God that has appeared several times in the ancient past.”

Jian Chen was startled at the elder’s confirmation. Although he had guessed that the elder knew, hearing the elder personally confirm it still caused his heart to start beating irregularly.

“Jian Chen, it seems that you are aware of what a Heavenly Tiger God is.” The elder looked at Jian Chen with a solemn gaze.

“That is correct, I know of the Heavenly Tiger God.” It was only

now that Jian Chen decided not to hide it. He then, began to regale his tale of Rum Guinness and what he was entrusted with.

After listening to Jian Chen's story, the elder had descended into a quiet calm that was filled with thought.

Jian Chen didn't make a sound in fear of breaking the elder's train of thought. Xiu Mi continued to stand some distance away in complete shock at Jian Chen and the tiger cub he was carrying. He couldn't believe that the cub would unexpectedly have a mysterious background that was far beyond what he could even imagine.

After a while, the elder finally sighed, "The appearance of a Heavenly Tiger God is something that should come as a blessing to the magical beast clans. If they are able to exploit this blessing, then they would be able to lay claim to a Heavenly Tiger God of the past. In that case, the magical beast clans would have a monstrous amount of power against the human world. Jian Chen, this Heavenly Tiger God you have may very well bring catastrophe to our human world."

Hearing this, Jian Chen turned pale with fright from what the elder said, could he possibly want to eliminate the tiger cub here and now in order to avoid any future trouble?

"That should be unlikely, elder Xiu. This tiger cub is very obedient. And with the current circumstances, I'm afraid that it'll remain within the human world for now. With time the cub will become partial to the human world and wouldn't be used against us. Furthermore, the cub's father was killed by the king of the

Gilligan clan while the mother was seriously injured. When the cub matures, it will want to take revenge on the clan and not against humans.” Jian Chen tried to explain in a hurry. If the elder wanted to kill the cub, then Jian Chen would have no chance of protecting it.

The elder nodded his head with a thoughtful look, “En, your words have merit to them. Even if the Heavenly Tiger God will not prove to be a danger to humanity, it would still be a disaster if it were to travel by your side.”

Elder Xiu didn’t let Jian Chen speak another word and continued to speak, “This situation isn’t as simple as you may think. The king of the Gilligan clan wouldn’t try to kill the Heavenly Tiger God for no reason. That is because a Heavenly Tiger God is no small amount of power, with one, their fighting strength would soar to an unbelievable degree.”

Elder Xiu’s words left Jian Chen at a loss on what to do.

Sighing, the elder spoke, “Jian Chen, the Heavenly Tiger God’s life could be in danger at any moment. You must rear it as quickly as possible; it is only when its strength reaches a sufficient degree that danger might be mitigated.”

“Elder Xiu, could there be some other secret in this matter?” Jian Chen asked.

The elder didn’t respond to Jian Chen’s question and merely replied, “Jian Chen, you should go. Remember, raise the Heavenly

Tiger God as soon as possible.” Finally, there was a single crack in the normally impassive tone.

Jian Chen looked at the elder with a curious eye for some time. Finally sighing, Jian Chen took the cub and left the room with doubt still in his eyes.

“For elder Xiu to want me to raise the tiger cub as fast as possible, it seems that there is still something I don’t know. Did Rum Guinness not tell me, or is this something even she doesn’t know about?”

After Jian Chen left, elder Xiu took out a blood red token and handed it to Xiu Mi, “Xiu Mi, take this Spirit token and go straight to the Bloodsword Sect. Tell the entire intelligence organization to mobilize everyone. Watch closely for anything that happens, and if there is any extremely strong experts that appear within the Tian Yuan Continent, report to me straight away.”

“Father, didn’t you say that you would never use the Bloodsword Sect? Why are you...” Xiu Mi asked with a startled look.

“The situation has become far too grave. Don’t ask any questions and take my token to the Bloodsword Sect straight away.” Elder Xiu interjected solemnly. His expression was dark and no longer looked like a simple farmer. Right now, he looked more like the valiant hero giving command to his entire army.

“Yes, your child will go now.” Xiu Mi didn’t speak anymore and flew away with the token.

After Xiu Mi had left, the elder sighed before walking to his bed. “They are growing far too bold if they would dare to kill even a Heavenly Tiger God. When the time comes and the Heavenly Tiger Cub fully matures, their judgement will come. But they will try and infiltrate the human world in order to assassinate it soon enough. Forget it, it has nothing to do with me, if they truly come, then some other family will come to protect it.”

.....

After leaving the elder’s room, Jian Chen took the cub to his own room to rest. Then placing the cub on his bed, he began to caress the cub’s ears and head.

“Mr...rrrr....” Closing its eyes in comfortable bliss, the tiger cub was fully content with being treated to Jian Chen’s care. Right now in its heart, it was very partial to Jian Chen.

Looking at the obedient tiger cub, Jian Chen took out several of the thousand year Ginseng from within his Space Ring. “Little white tiger, take this and eat it, this way, you’ll grow up faster.”

The little tiger sniffed at the item offered to him curiously. Upon sniffing the sweet fragrance, its eyes widened before purring happily and taking the items into its mouth, relishing the meal.

After eating several stalks of the thousand year Ginseng, the tiger cub had finally finished eating. Closing its eyes once more, it began to sleep on top of the bed.

Jian Chen knew that the cub was currently in the process of absorbing the spiritual Qi in from its meal. Not wanting to bother the tiger, Jian Chen climbed onto the bed himself and began to drink the Hundred Grass Wine given to him by the Ape King.

The thousand year old Hundred Grass Wine had a great effect in helping a person's mind. After Jian Chen had finished off some of it, he closed his eyes in pure bliss as his soul enjoyed the pleasurable feeling.

Feeling an azure light soar up from his dantian into his mind, Jian Chen felt his mind suddenly explode with excitement. Even the Sword Spirits were feeling the benefits.

With Jian Chen's mind soaring in strength, his omnipresence ability was also increasing by leaps and bounds. Right now with his soul undergoing improvement, Jian Chen felt as if he was being baptized and transcending to becoming an Immortal.



# Chapter 386: Recovery Of The Sword Spirits

---

A moment later, Jian Chen awoke from the comfortable state he was in only to feel himself many times stronger than before. Without delay, Jian Chen grabbed the bottle and began to chug it.

This time, Jian Chen swallowed a large amount of the wine, finishing off a good amount of it quickly. Soon after the last drop had been swallowed, he began to relish in the comfortable feeling once more.

Two hours later, Jian Chen had finally absorbed the rest of the wine. At this moment, Jian Chen's ability with his thoughts had increased by another third. His omnipresence now allowed him to spread his senses to at least thirteen kilometers.

Jian Chen was incomparably happy. Jian Chen would have never believed that such a feat could be accomplished in such a short amount of time with his strength boosted and even his body had been affected.

"This Hundred Grass Wine is truly a blessed item!" Jian Chen sighed in admiration before drinking even more of the bottle.

In a flash, the wine bottle given to him by the Ape King only had a small portion left. Carefully sampling it, Jian Chen closed his eyes and began to allow his mind to strengthen.

The vital energy within the Hundred Grass Wine continued to swirl around Jian Chen's dantian before quickly dissipating. The

azure Qi from the wine quickly soared up into Jian Chen's head before entering Jian Chen's consciousness.

Within his consciousness, the Sword Spirits that were revolving around the Multicolored Stone pulsed with happiness as the light coming from them began to flicker. When the azure Qi ascended into Jian Chen's consciousness, the spirit that Jian Chen shared with the Sword Spirits benefited greatly. The weakened soul of the Sword Spirits began to grow stronger with the light around them growing richer in concentration.

After an unknown amount of time, the Hundred Grass Wine had been completely absorbed by Jian Chen and his spirit felt complete bliss radiating through it. Suddenly, Jian Chen felt a tremendous change that he had never felt before. Without even spreading his presence, he was able to detect the wind blowing on the grass a hundred meters away.

At this moment, Jian Chen realized that his spirit had harmonized with the world. Without even needing to plan carefully, he had already entered a state of harmony with the world. He was able to clearly sense everything within a hundred meters almost like he could control everything. It was as if this area was his domain.

Spreading out his omnipresence, Jian Chen's senses had instantly covered the valley. All of the villagers currently working out in the fields could be seen like a painting within Jian Chen's mind. Despite the actual distance between them, Jian Chen could "see" their every movements down to the finest detail.

All of the villagers had been taught how to cultivate by Xiu Mi, so they had all been able to cultivate to a certain degree. Although the strongest ones weren't even a Great Saint Master, the good majority of them were Saints or just Great Saints. Some didn't care at all about cultivating and thus hadn't even condensed their Saint Force to form a Saint Weapon yet.

Following that, Jian Chen spread his presence out to the farming elder Xiu. Immediately, he could feel that elder Xiu was not a person, but rather the entire world fused into a person. Even as he brandished the hoe over and over again, all he could sense in elder Xiu was the immeasurable amount of profound mysteries of the world.

Jian Chen's omnipresence continued to spread until it reached fifteen kilometers before he had finally hit his limit. After drinking the Hundred Grass Wine, Jian Chen's mind had improved by leaps and bounds. To him, this was certainly something to celebrate over.

"Master... master..." Suddenly deep within Jian Chen's mind, he could hear a faint voice. Soon after, he felt just where the voice was coming from and was instantly shocked.

"Master, I can finally communicate with you." It was just then that Jian Chen could heard the inexplicable joy in the voice.

"You... you're the azure and violet Sword Spirits?" Jian Chen spoke with a bit of a stammer.

“Master, I am Ziyang, you may call me Xiao Zi.” Spoke the Ziyang Sword Spirit. Its voice sounded rather masculine and youthful.

“Master, I am Qingsuo, you may call me Xiao Qing!” Suddenly, another soft voice could be heard, this one was as pleasant sounding as a skylark.

Jian Chen couldn't help but submerge himself into his consciousness. At that moment within the chaotic space of his mind, the Multicolored Stone could no longer be seen floating around. In its place were two strange people: both were around the age of two while one was a handsome male, the other was a beautiful female that complimented the male perfectly.

The male had violet hair that seemed to droop all the way down to his chest. He wore a classic violet changpao and had eyes that glowed with a curious violet shade.

The female wore an azure cheongsam that suited her long azure hair quite nicely. Her appearance was unrivaled and her azure eyes would cause any male to choke up.

Jian Chen's chest began to heave and his tongue started to stop working as he looked at the golden couple. It was finally with a stammer that he spoke, “You... you two... are you two the Sword Spirits?”

“Yes, master. I am Ziyang, she is Qingsuo!” The violet robed man spoke with a smile.

“This...” Jian Chen was speechless. He knew about the situation regarding the Sword Spirits, but he still found it hard to believe that the Sword Spirits would unexpectedly gain a human form within his consciousness.

After a moment, Jian Chen sucked in his breath and attempted to calm himself once more. Staring at the Sword Spirits, he spoke, “I didn’t think that we would meet in such a manner. Has your energy been fully recovered?”

Ziying went silent for a moment before shaking his head, “Master, we are still very weak; it is only because of the Hundred Grass Wine that we were able to recover enough strength to take on physical forms and talk.”

“Call me Jian Chen, not master. I am no master to you, we can just be fellow friends.” Jian Chen grimaced at the word ‘master’.

“Master, when we entered your body, we submitted to you. You are the master of Ziying and Qingsuo.” Qingsuo spoke with a pleasant sound.

Qingsuo’s words had caused Jian Chen to think back to when he had originally died. It was after that moment that he was born in such an unfamiliar world, “That’s right, I can still remember when I died. Was it because of you two that I was reincarnated into this world?”

Hearing this, Qingsuo and Ziying both looked at each other in silence before Ziying opened his mouth, “Master, at that time it

was indeed Qingsuo and I that brought you to this planet. In the previous planet, you had suffered a tremendous wound and the Qi of the world began to escape your body. If that continued then you wouldn't have been able to make any improvements, at the very most, you would never reach the strength of a Heaven Saint Master of this world. Because of that, Qingsuo and I took you from that planet, but when we entered the crack in space, the both of us suffered tremendous damages. With not much strength remaining, we were unable to deliver you to where we intended and thus we were only able to relocate you to a planet that was just stronger than your original world."

"So it really was because of you two!" Jian Chen muttered. In truth, when he found out about the existence of the two Sword Spirits, he had already come to such a conclusion as a guess.

"Master, are you going to blame Ziying and Qingsuo?" Qingsuo spoke with a timid voice.

With a cordial smile, Jian Chen replied, "If it weren't for you two, then I wouldn't have been able to experience such a magical world or come across such a large amount of strength. You've allowed me to grow strong and expand my world. I don't even have enough time to say all of my thanks, so what reason would I have to blame you two?"

After his reply, Qingsuo immediately sighed in relief.

Continuing to speak, Jian Chen said, "Ah, what should we do so that you can recover as soon as you can?"

“Master, we cannot recover to our full strength in this world. The Qi of this world is far too weak; at the very best, we would be able to recover a small amount of it.” Ziyang said.

Although he had heard what Ziyang had said, Jian Chen still didn’t quite understand. Since he was prioritizing the recovery of the Sword Spirits, he didn’t pay any more attention to what he said. “Then what could we do to recover your health for now?”

Ziyang pointed at the Multicolored Stone floating some distance away, “Master, this Multicolored Immortal Crystal is the only thing that can help us for now. For the past few days, Qingsuo and I have been absorbing the Immortal Crystal’s Spirit Qi.

“Multicolored Immortal Crystal? What is that item?” Jian Chen asked.

“Master, the Multicolored Immortal Crystal is a crystal formed from the condensation of an Immortal’s Qi after millions of years. It is not an item of this world, so the fact that we were able to come across it is an inconceivable matter.”

“Millions of years...” Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath of shock.

“Master, if only we were able to find more heavenly resources like the Hundred Grass Wine. Otherwise, we will only be able to use the Multicolored Immortal Crystal in order to heal. Seeing how weak the Qi of this world is, it serves no use to us.”

## Chapter 387: Chaotic Force

---

Now that the azure and violet Sword Spirits had taken on human form and were capable of speech, Jian Chen could communicate with them with ease. It was no longer as difficult as before where they needed to use telepathy. Jian Chen asked many questions that he hadn't understood and began to clear up the problems he had. At the very least, the most important thing he learned was that the Sword Spirits had been responsible for bringing him to this world.

“Ah, Qingsuo, Ziying, is there any chance of me being able to cultivate with Saint Force anymore?” Jian Chen asked quickly. Losing his Saint Force had left him unable to use his Illusionary Flash or the unbelievably fast sword skills that he was renowned for, so this caused him no small amount of unwillingness.

The two Sword Spirits gave each other a look before looking at Jian Chen hesitantly. For a quick moment of silence, Ziying finally said, “Master, using a special method, you would be able to continue cultivating with Saint Force, however, the Saint Force of this world is far too weak.”

“Too weak?” Jian Chen asked in disbelief.

Ziying nodded his head, “Yes, master. This world's Saint Force is far too weak, so I recommend that you do not restart your cultivation.” He stopped talking for a moment before continuing to speak before Jian Chen could, “Master, with Qingsuo and I combined together, we could help you cultivate the Chaotic Force.”



“Cultivate Chaotic Force? Is this Chaotic Force even stronger?” Jian Chen asked with doubt.

Ziying nodded his head, “Yes, master. Chaotic Force is the strongest of energy.”

“Then how do I cultivate Chaotic Force?” Jian Chen asked with some eagerness. He couldn’t allow for such a strong opportunity to run by him.

“Master, Qingsuo and I were born from Chaos itself. Our Yin and Yang bodies were evolved from the Chaotic Force, and as long as Qingsuo and I are combined, then we can extract Chaotic Force from any energy in the world.” Ziying spoke with some satisfaction as if being able to cultivate Chaotic Force was an extremely terrific ability.

The azure robed Qingsuo opened up her mouth to speak, “Master, refining Chaotic Force requires a tremendous amount of world Qi. It would take ten years to refine even the smallest amount of Chaotic Force from the small amount of world Qi here. Master, the Ruler Armaments in your hands contain a massive amount of energy, Ziying and Qingsuo can use that energy to refine into Chaotic Force.

Upon hearing this, Jian Chen was beyond please. The Ruler Armaments were next to useless for him since he couldn’t use their power, making them two pieces of garbage. With the Seal of Treasure Mountain on his body, he also had to worry about the Shi family using their special method to find him, which was a shame since Jian Chen had no idea how to deal with that. Right now, the

violet and azure Sword Spirits could relieve him of a major headache by refining the energy within the weapons into Chaotic Force. This would then improve his strength, which was something he definitely agreed with.

“No problem, the Duanyun Sword and the Seal of Treasure Mountain I hand over to you then. When will you be able to refine them into Chaotic Force?” Jian Chen asked a little impatiently.

Seeing the impatient look on Jian Chen’s face, Ziying and Qingsuo began to smile. “Master, we can refine the Chaotic Force whenever you wish. However, because the world Qi in this world is quite weak, refining the Chaotic Force will use up a huge volume of Qi. This will make master’s future cultivation even harder.”

“No worries, if worst comes to worst, I’ll find even more Ruler Armaments to take.” Jian Chen waved his hands without concern.

“If you wish, then master, if you could please hand over the Ruler Armaments. Ziying and Qingsuo will refine the Chaotic Force for you.” Qingsuo spoke.

Retreating from his mindspace, Jian Chen grabbed both the Duanyun Sword and the Seal of Treasure Mountain before thinking to himself, “Ziying, Qingsuo, what is the next step?”

As soon as he thought of the words, Jian Chen felt his mind tremble for a moment before Ziying and Qingsuo disappeared from his mind. In the next moment, they had left his mind space and appeared above his head. Right now the two looked like two weak

glows of light and mist in human form, but their facial features could not be seen.

Lifting his hand, a wave of mysterious energy began to raise out from the Seal of Treasure Mountain, floating toward Ziying. It flew up from Jian Chen's hand to levitate over his head to where Ziying and Qinguo were floating.

Ziying and Qingsuo both closed their eyes and lifted out their arms. A faint glow of azure and violet could be seen from their hands before enveloping the Seal of Treasure Mountain, spinning it in the same shape of the Ying Yang symbol.

Two hours later, the Seal of Treasure Mountain had been completely refined and transformed into an extremely pure, but powerful essence that rippled within the hands of Ziying and Qingsuo.

However, Ziying didn't stop the process there and began to use his Origin energy to hammer it. This went on for another hour, causing the energy to turn gray in color like a ball of smoke. Not only was it faint in color, there was an indescribable air to it.

Ziying and Qingsuo both raised their hands, causing the gray gas to enter Jian Chen's body before resting within his dantian.

"Master, quick. Use the Azulet Sword Law and transform this Chaotic Force into your own power." Ziying and Qingsuo both spoke in synchronism.

Without delay, Jian Chen began to do as told.

This process only took up four hours of Jian Chen's time. After those four hours, Jian Chen had successfully transformed the Chaotic Force into his own energy.

When he looked at the wisp like energy within his dantian, he couldn't help but ask, "Ziying, Qingsuo, is this really Chaotic Force?"

"Yes, master. This is Chaotic Force in its initial stage." Ziying spoke.

Hearing this, Jian Chen was confused, "The initial stage of Chaotic Force? What does that mean?"

Ziying looked a little embarrassed, but he didn't say anything else.

Qingsuo began to smile as if trying to apologize for him, "Master, this is the weakest amount of Chaotic Force. The true power found within Chaotic Force cannot be recreated just yet because the amount of energy in these Ruler Armaments is still far too weak so the true Chaotic Force cannot be attained."

"Ah, I understand now." Jian Chen spoke with clarity. However, he still only knew some basics regarding the Chaotic Force. A Ruler Armament was created after the energy from a Ninth Layer Heaven Saint Master crystallized, but he didn't think that the

overwhelming power from such an item would result in such a tiny amount of Chaotic Force. From this, Jian Chen couldn't even possibly imagine just how strong the Chaotic Force would be.

“Master, the cultivation methods of this continent do not suit the cultivation methods of the Chaotic Force. In the future, you will only be able to cultivate using the Azulet Sword Law. The Azulet Sword Law were actually a high leveled cultivation method written by a deity. Written inside are ways to cultivate using the world Qi of any world and convert it into Chaotic Force!” Ziying spoke.

Cultivation methods were special methods on absorbing and refining energy to become one's own strength. The Azulet Sword Law was truly an extremely mysterious cultivation method that worked in any situation to transform any energy into Chaotic Force.

Nodding his head, Jian Chen felt his heart sigh in admiration. He didn't think that the Azulet Sword Law would have such a purpose.

“Master, but...” Ziying opened his mouth once more before hesitation overcame him as if he didn't know whether or not he should tell him.

“But what?”

Qingsuo blinked rapidly for a moment as she hesitated before speaking with her light voice, “Master, the Azulet Sword Law has

three volumes. You have the first volume, but not the other two.”

“What!” Jian Chen cried out, unable to contain his shock, “What could we do about the other two volumes then?”

Ziying and Qingsuo both looked at each other briefly, as if hesitating, before Qingsuo spoke, “Master, in truth, the first volume is only enough for you to cultivate Chaotic Force. The other two volumes are still a long ways away from you.”

Ziying piped up next, “Yes, master, there is no need for you to look for the other two volumes at the moment. One is enough for now. Wait until you have more strength, then the other two volumes will be attainable. Furthermore, Chaotic Force is far too tyrannic; master, if you wish to cultivate Chaotic Force in the future, then you must have a Chaotic Body refined as well. Only a Chaotic Body will be able to withstand the Chaotic Force. Otherwise, if master were to try and use the Chaotic Force, it would cause a tremendous amount of damage.”

“What! Cultivating Chaotic Force requires a Chaotic Body? How does one cultivate that?” Jian Chen asked the two, he hadn’t thought that it would be so complicated.

“Master, refining the Chaotic Body is explained within the Azulet Sword Laws!” Ziying replied.

With that, Jian Chen asked a single question in surprise, “So it does not require a large amount of Chaotic Force?”

“It does require a large amount of Chaotic Force, but master doesn’t need to worry about that now!” Ziying spoke carefully. He didn’t know just how Jian Chen would react to this.

Jian Chen almost felt dizzy from this conversation, but he wasn’t very disappointed. Taking in a long deep breath, he began to mutter, “I just knew there wasn’t such a thing as a free meal in this world. I didn’t think that the Chaotic Force would be this troublesome. A Ruler Armament had only a sliver of Chaotic Force, and a large amount of Chaotic Force is required to refine the Chaotic Body. Good heavens, where would I go to find such a large concentration of this energy?” Jian Chen didn’t quite know if he was happy or sad about this entire situation. Although he had come across a great change within his body, his path would be a long and narrow one for now.

Seeing Jian Chen’s emotions, Qingsuo couldn’t hold back her silence and began to console him, “Master, do not be so discouraged. There is plenty of time in the future, and although the path set out for you is long and hard, you will one day have both the Chaotic Body and Chaotic Force.”

Jian Chen quickly calmed down after she spoke. He knew all too well that having a great benefit would require a great price. There was no such thing as a free meal, and there was no such thing as a prize without a price. If one wanted a large amount of power, they had to be ready to pay a large price for it.

“Forget it, a step is still a step. Ziying, Qingsuo, let’s continue with the Duanyun Sword. This item has no use to me and puts me in harm’s way. There’s no way to tell whether or not the Jiede clan

or Shi family will try to track us, so there is no benefit in their prolonged existence.”



## Chapter 388: A Strong Body

---

After four hours, Ziyang and Qingsuo had refined the energy from the Duanyun Sword and transformed it into Chaotic Force which made its way into Jian Chen's dantian.

The two wisps of smoke, the Chaotic Force, weaved around Jian Chen's dantian. Although it was there, he couldn't feel tremendous power from the Chaotic Force. Not even a single speck could be felt, giving him the impression that this gas was almost useless.

Despite all of this, Jian Chen didn't dare underestimate its power. He could understand perfectly well that these two strands of Chaotic Force were formed from the energy of Ruler Armaments. Perhaps, the power of the Chaotic Force was so far outside Jian Chen's depth of perception that he couldn't possibly understand the abilities of it.

After Ziyang and Qingsuo had refined the energy from the Ruler Armaments into Chaotic Force they went back into Jian Chen's mind to rest. This left only Jian Chen sitting on his bed to study the Chaotic Force within his body.

"The Chaotic Force is so strong that if one wishes to cultivate with it, one will need the Chaotic Body first. Without a strong enough body, a regular body will not be able to handle the Chaotic Force circulating from within. This means that the Chaotic Force is completely useless for me to use right now." Jian Chen thought with furrowed eyebrows.

“Since this is the case, I will use some of the Chaotic Force to refine my body and grow stronger. Although the Chaotic Force is not enough for me to create a Chaotic Body, it will at the very least allow me to make my current body stronger.” Jian Chen thought to himself before quickly coming to a conclusion.

After this conclusion, Jian Chen immediately began to use some of the Chaotic Force to refine his body. Fortunately he had cultivated with the Azulet Sword Laws for some time, so he had a large amount of experience cultivating with it. Although there was a sparse amount of the Chaotic Force, it was still strong enough for him.

Willing a single strand of Chaotic Force to leave his dantian, Jian Chen finally began to feel the intensity of it as it began to travel throughout. As soon as it started to spread, he began to feel weak as if his entire body was made from tofu. Wherever the Chaotic Force traveled, Jian Chen’s body wracked with unbearable pain. His meridians threatened to break, and his inner organs began to fail, even his blood vessels were starting to tear.

Despite it not being a large concentration of Chaotic Force, it was still a foreign type of energy that Jian Chen’s body couldn’t handle. Jian Chen had used the Azulet Sword Laws to cultivate his body, but it was the very first time he had encountered such a pain from doing so.

On the bed, Jian Chen’s body constantly trembled as his face grew as pale as paper. Beads of sweat continued to drip down his face in large concentration, and his normally handsome face had twisted up from all of the pain with the occasional muscle spasms.

Finally, a muffled sound of pain escaped from Jian Chen's throat. He could no longer hold back the intensity of the pain as it had already far surpassed his pain tolerance a thousand times over. The intense feeling of pain tormented his nerves and mind; even he could not withstand it and finally fainted from the pain.

"Ah, master, just why would you use the Chaotic Force to temper your body now? Your body as it is is not yet adequate, this... this would only serve to make you suffer. Master, you must endure this!" Suddenly, Qingsuo's voice suddenly called out in a hurried manner.

"Master, you must stay determined! Although the Chaotic Force is destroying your body, it is also recreating it! After this one time, the next few times will be easier to manage." Ziying's voice could be heard as well.

Gritting his teeth in pain, Jian Chen couldn't even say a word in response because of the pain. Not even a single syllable could be uttered coherently.

As the tiny wisp of Chaotic Force continued to travel through his body, Jian Chen felt as if miniature explosions were happening all throughout his entire body. The pain caused his muscles to break and blood to come out of his pores, dying his entire body red.

In a flash, the Chaotic Force had spread throughout every part of his body, and he had already lost a third of his energy.

Sighing, Jian Chen prepared to use the Radiant Saint Force to heal his body when Ziying's voice popped up in his mind, "Master, don't stop yet."

Clenching his teeth, he gave up the idea of resting and continued to try and withstand the circulation of the Chaotic Force through his body.

After a while, the pain in Jian Chen's body began to alleviate as the Chaotic Force made its third circulation around his body before disappearing.

Seemingly as if he had lost all his energy, Jian Chen fell down to the bed below as if he was a pile of mud.

"Master, you've managed to take the first step. After experiencing pain for the first time, you will have an easier time cultivating the Chaotic Force in the future. Naturally, the time the Chaotic Force was in your body will not be as intense as before." Ziying and Qingsuo's voice both spoke with some joy.

But Jian Chen was powerless to respond. Laying back on the bed, he thought about the pain he had just experienced with some terror. This pain was something that he couldn't possibly endure again.

After resting for a moment to regain some energy, he began to use the Radiant Saint Force within the world to treat his wounds.

By now Jian Chen's mind ability was extraordinarily strong. His ability to control the Radiant Saint Force was far better than before, so the entire room basked in the milky white glow. However, since it was daytime, the light wasn't all too obvious and would escape any regular person's notice.

This time, Jian Chen had only spent two hours before his body was fully recovered since the healing effect was far stronger than before.

Jian Chen stood up from his bed and inspected his body. This time, he could feel that his body was definitely stronger than before, but however much stronger he was now, he didn't know.

Noticing that his body and clothes were drenched in blood, Jian Chen took out a towel and wiped himself clean before putting on a new pair of white robes and leaving the room.

Right now it was already noon. Spreading out his senses, Jian Chen quickly found out where Little Fatty was and soared over to him.

Because Jian Chen was flying toward Little Fatty in the direction he was facing, the fatty quickly noticed Jian Chen. Stopping what he was doing, Little Fatty looked at Jian Chen respectfully, "Jian Chen, flying in the air must be great, huh."

Smiling, Jian Chen replied, "Little Fatty, you have an amazing father and grandfather. I believe that you will be able to reach the Heaven Saint Master realm soon enough."

“It’s far too early to see. I heard my father say that he was 56 years old when he became a Heaven Saint Master. I’m only 21 years old, that means I’ve still 30 years to go.” Little Fatty spoke somewhat subdued. He was still only a Primary Great Saint Master that had only made the breakthrough a month ago. However, being a Great Saint Master at the age of 21 was the sign of a genius within the Tian Yuan Continent; furthermore, he had done so by painstakingly cultivating by himself without any other resources.

Slapping Little Fatty’s shoulder, he consoled him, “Little Fatty, don’t be discouraged. Your current prowess is already great, in the outside world, the amount of people that reached the Great Saint Master realm at your age can be counted on your fingers.”

At the very mention of the outside world, Little Fatty’s eyes lit up straight away. His eyes stared into Jian Chen as he asked, “Really? Jian Chen, then I would be considered amazing in the outside world?”

“Eh... that’s... Little Fatty, I’ll tell you about that later. I came to find you for your help.” Jian Chen quickly avoided the subject.

“What’s the problem? Speak, Jian Chen, I’ll definitely help you.” Little Fatty immediately stood straight up and pledged.

Taking a few steps back, Jian Chen spoke honestly, “Little Fatty, use your Saint Weapon to strike me.”

“Wha—attack you?” Little Fatty was stunned at the request.

“That’s right. Little Fatty, even if you strike me, you don’t have to worry since it won’t do much damage.” Jian Chen spoke seriously.

Little Fatty began to hesitate for a moment, but when he thought about how Jian Chen was a Heaven Saint Master, his heart began to calm down. “Fine then, but you can’t hit me! I’m not a match for you by any means.” With that, Little Fatty’s Saint Weapon appeared in his hand in the form of a pitch-black battleaxe.

Seeing this, Jian Chen looked at Little Fatty with some surprise, “Little Fatty, don’t tell me you have a dark attributed Saint Force?”

He nodded his head, “That’s right. My father told me that the dark attribute is a rarely seen thing, but my grandfather has the same attribute as well.”

“Elder Xiu is also a dark attribute cultivator?” Jian Chen thought, but he was quickly cut out from his thoughts as Little Fatty spoke, “Jian Chen, be careful, I’m going to strike.” Little Fatty’s battleaxe began to glow a dangerous dark color before he charged straight for Jian Chen.

Because Little Fatty was under the misunderstanding that Jian Chen had wanted to test his own strength, he didn’t hold back his strength at all and swung his axe.

There was only a flash of dark light as Little Fatty’s axe ripped through the sky and smashed against Jian Chen’s shoulder. The

violent amount of Saint Force rippled through his Saint Weapon before ripping apart Jian Chen's clothes at the shoulders, revealing the pale white skin underneath.

Seeing how Jian Chen hadn't dodged at all and received the full blunt of the attack, Little Fatty's face grew white as he cried, "Jian Chen, why didn't you dodge?" In the next moment, his eyes widened as he look on in disbelief. That was because he had noticed that Jian Chen had received no damage at all despite putting up no defense. At the very most, there was a faint impression on his shoulder.

"Just... how is that possible? Am I going blind or something?" Little Fatty couldn't believe his eyes. He had swung with all of his might, but his strike hadn't even managed to break the skin.

"Hahahaha..." Seeing just how he had taken no damage at all, Jian Chen began to laugh with a great smile. His heart had soared with joy at this. A Chaotic Body was extremely strong. His body had become extremely strong after tempering it with just a single wisp of Chaotic Force. If he continued to temper his body like this, an Earth Saint Master or even a Heaven Saint Master would not be able to harm him.



## Chapter 389: The Road Home

---

“Jian Chen, your... your body, just how is it so strong? Are you made of iron or something?” Little Fatty’s eyes grew wide as he looked at the small mark on Jian Chen’s body.

Taking out a new robe from his Space Ring, Jian Chen laughed, “Being made of iron would be a stretch, but my body is definitely stronger than an ordinary person.”

There was some fascination to Little Fatty’s eyes as he spoke, “How did you strengthen it, it’s like you transformed your body.”

Laughing, Jian Chen didn’t give an answer. Looking at the still unfinished field, Jian Chen asked, “Little Fatty, do you need my help?”

“Yes, of course! My dad and grandfather went to plant corn and I’m left with all the vegetables here. You came here just in time, with two people, it’ll take no time at all to finish the rest of the planting.” Little Fatty spoke very casually with Jian Chen and handed several seeds to him. “I’ll plant on this side, you go to that side, with the two of us working, we’ll be able to finish this before dinner!”

Planting the seeds with Little Fatty, Jian Chen spoke, “Little Fatty, it is very possible that I will be leaving this place soon.”

Little Fatty’s hand shook for a brief moment before he continued to silently work in the fields. Not too long after, he finally uttered a

single sentence, “I knew that life here wouldn’t work out for you. Sooner or later, you would have left for the outside world.”

Letting out a long breath of air, Jian Chen spoke, “Little Fatty, I will talk to your grandfather tonight and have him consent to you being able to explore the outside world. You staying here forever is no suitable way of living, with your talent, staying here would just bury it.”

“Jian Chen, just what is the outside world like?” Little Fatty stared at Jian Chen with a fixated gaze as he waited for an answer. He had grown up in this secluded village without ever leaving the valley. Any information he knew from the outside world had been learned from word of mouth. He had never once seen it for himself, not knowing just how large it was.

“The outside world is huge—tremendous even. There are many people with many wondrous things. At the same time, the world is also very cruel and complex. Little Fatty, when you see the outside world for yourself, you will come to understand.” Jian Chen spoke.

“But, my grandfather would never let me leave.” Little Fatty’s face grew a little sad at that.

“I will talk with your grandfather tonight and try to convince him.” Other than talking to his grandfather, Jian Chen had no other solution. Elder Xiu was a person with an immeasurable amount of power, Jian Chen had no wish to offend him.

In a flash, the sun had begun to set to the west and the night

began to overtake the skies. The bright red rays from the sunset could still be seen splashing across the sky as the chimneys in the village bellowed smoke into the air and danced in the wind.

In a hurry, the two men quickly walked back home. After walking to their own rooms, Jian Chen quickly went into his room to check up on the tiger cub. Right now, the tiger cub was sleeping, as the heavenly resources it ate earlier had not yet finished being absorbed.

Seeing how the tiger was safe and sound, Jian Chen left the room in relief before eating dinner with the rest of the family. However, there was one less pair of plates and chopsticks.

Seeing this empty space, Little Fatty asked, “Grandfather, where is father?”

“Little Fatty, your father has some matters to take care of, eat your meal.” Elder Xiu smiled kindly with an affectionate gaze toward the fatty.

“Got it!” Little Fatty replied before growing slightly dark. He knew that with his father had gone to the outside world, the world that he himself yearned to go to.

Jian Chen’s eyes flickered over to elder Xiu for a moment as he hesitated. Then, he finally opened his mouth and spoke, “Elder Xiu, have you never thought about Little Fatty going out to gain some experience?” As he spoke, Jian Chen’s eyes stared heavily at elder Xiu.

As expected, the elder's face began to change in color but Jian Chen quickly spoke up before elder Xiu could reply, "Elder Xiu, allowing Little Fatty to live in this village his entire life would be detrimental to him. If he lives here for his entire life, Little Fatty will miss out on the many pleasures in life. Living here would not truly be growing up; if he doesn't experience the wind and rain of the outside world, he won't experience a true growth. I'm also sure you know of Little Fatty's dislike for this life; if you care for Little Fatty's growth, you shouldn't keep him forever locked up in this village. This is no way to become an adult, in the end, this would only serve to harm him instead of helping."

Hearing this, the elder went quiet for a moment. He had traveled the continent himself for many years and experienced many things so he could understand Little Fatty's desire perfectly clear. The problem was that he truly did not wish for Little Fatty to venture out into the outside world. With his countless experiences, he had seen straight through the very essence of the world and now he only desired for Little Fatty to live safely within the valley. If he stayed in this valley, then Little Fatty would stay as pure and innocent as snow without being polluted by the mortal world.

Jian Chen continued to fire off reason after reason for the elder to hear for the sake of allowing Little Fatty to leave the valley. Wracking his mind for any reason imaginable, Jian Chen tried his best to use them all as an argument.

As if Jian Chen had addressed each of elder Xiu's worries, he was completely silent throughout the meal and ate in a stiff like movement.

“Grandfather, it wouldn’t be right to grow up without seeing the outside world at least once. I really wish to go out just once.” Little Fatty looked at his grandfather almost pathetically.

“Father, Jian Chen speaks the truth. I know that you have reached a realm that we cannot even dream of seeing and seen things we have not seen, but Little Fatty is an inexperienced Great Saint Master who has not experienced many things. He has no idea what goes on in the outside world and the things you’ve seen, he has not. If he does not go travel the world, then he will never mature as an adult. Father, if you truly look look out for Little Fatty’s best interests, let him experience the world for himself and increase his knowledge. If he comes across some trouble in the future, he must learn to face it with his own power.” Little Fatty’s mother spoke out earnestly with a kind yet naturally refined voice. Her words were filled with the bearings of a refined woman, one that came from a wealthy family.

At Jian Chen’s and Little Fatty’s mother’s twin prong assault, elder Xiu finally let out a long sigh, “Forget it, forget it. Your words are not without flaws, I was stubborn for far too long. Little Fatty, if you truly wish to explore the outside world, your grandfather will not stop you.”

“Really? You’ll really let me explore the outside world?” Little Fatty was overjoyed.

Seeing the look of pure joy on Little Fatty’s face, elder Xiu couldn’t help but sigh to himself mentally. Looking into his heart, he concluded that when he made Little Fatty stay here, it was the

wrong choice of action.

Placing another mouthful of food into his mouth, elder Xiu said, “Little Fatty, if you want to leave, then your grandfather won’t stop you, but you must have the strength of an Earth Saint Master before you can go!”

“Alright! Father, I’ll work hard at cultivating and make the breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master!” Little Fatty was not discouraged at all.

Seeing how happy Little Fatty was, even his mother couldn’t help but let out a smile as well.

.....

Three days quickly went by peacefully. On the third day, Jian Chen and Little Fatty were both cutting down timber in order to rebuild the burned down house Jian Chen was in. This was the promise that Jian Chen had made.

After completing the house, Jian Chen had bid farewell after promising that the two would meet a year from now at this spot. When Little Fatty becomes an Earth Saint Master, they would leave together. Until then, Jian Chen would leave with the tiger cub. Before he left however, Jian Chen held a Space Ring, this was given to him by elder Xiu and contained many of the heavenly resources from the nearby mountain ranges. For the sake of the tiger cub, these resources were given to Jian Chen.

With the tiger cub, Jian Chen flew far away from the valley without stopping so that he could find a Space Gate to return to the Gesun Kingdom.

The distance from here to the Gesun Kingdom was far too wide. Even if Jian Chen were to fly the entire distance without stopping, it would take a tremendous amount of time and energy. So, the only solution was to use a Space Gate.

Unfortunately, Space Gates were exceedingly rare throughout the Tian Yuan Continent. Although there was a Space Gate in Mercenary City, he wasn't able to use that one. Other than Mercenary City however, Jian Chen had no idea where the closest Space Gate could be.

“Mrr... mrrr...” The tiger cub suddenly began to growl, breaking Jian Chen out of his thoughts. Looking down, he could only see the cub staring off in the distance at some large piece of land while both of its paws swung wildly in midair.

Jian Chen was unable to figure out just what the cub was trying to do or what it was thinking about.

“Mrr... mrrrr...” The tiger cub's rear paws pressed against Jian Chen's chest as its front two paws scratched in the direction of the forest. The wings on its back began to unfold almost as if it was about to fly out from Jian Chen's embrace.

Holding the cub tightly, Jian Chen gently caressed its head before following the cub's stare and landing on a nearby tree branch.

Transitioning to the ground, the cub leaped down and began to break out into a wild run toward several trees that were hundreds of meters tall.

When Jian Chen arrived, he couldn't help but to laugh out loud. It turns out that this place was filled with spirit mushrooms, they were purple in color and weren't all too large. At the very most, they were twenty centimeters tall and ten centimeters wide. But when the tiger cub saw them, its mouth began to water, allowing Jian Chen to realize these were heavenly resources.

Although the size and age of a spirit mushroom was generally small and young, not every heavenly resource needed to be old in age or big in shape.

Carefully picking some of the spirit mushrooms, he gathered some for the impatient tiger cub and began to feed them to the cub who purred affectionately.

“Come and eat some!” Jian Chen laughed as he fed them one by one into the cub's jaws. With a cheerful purr, the cub continued to swallow the mushrooms before quickly going into hibernation to absorb their energy.



# Chapter 390: Qinhuang Kingdom

---

The road was peaceful once more. Jian Chen never met another flying magical beast as he flew past the mountain ranges.

Once past the mountain ranges, Jian Chen was flying a thousand meters in the air where the cold winds constantly blew against his body. His white robes fluttered in the wind with a flapping sound.

His left hand held the white tiger cub, and his right hand held a map he had gotten from his Space Ring. This map contained details of the surrounding area to a good extent, but the Gesun Kingdom was still too far away so Jian Chen couldn't use the map to travel there.

Jian Chen's eyes scoured the map as he looked at all of the nearby kingdoms in the area around Mercenary City. For a brief moment, his eyes looked back to Mercenary City and gave a small sigh before looking elsewhere. He knew that he had more than enough strength to help the Gesun Kingdom in its time of need, but because he had no idea on the current circumstances of the kingdom, he needed to get back there as soon as possible. If he waited too long, then the Gesun Kingdom would be overrun and his family exterminated. To Jian Chen, the latter was something he was not willing to see nor experience. So, his only goal was to find a Space Gate and then use it to travel to the Gesun Kingdom in the fastest way possible.

Suddenly, the kingdom "Qinghuang" popped up in Jian Chen's eyes. Taking a look, Jian Chen's eyes began to sparkle as he quickly thought back to the friend he made, Qin Ji, during the Gathering

of the Mercenaries.

His hands began to shake as he took out the piece of jade from his Space Ring. On the Jade piece, there was the single word for “Qin” engraved on it; this was the gift that Qin Ji had given to him before the two had parted.

Looking at the considerably expensive piece of jade in his hands, Jian Chen began to hum as he thought to himself, “Qin Ji has a Ruler Armament and a barrier protecting him. That would mean the Qinghuang Kingdom is quite strong, perhaps they would have a Space Gate!” Jian Chen suddenly came to a stop in midair as he hesitated. With a final conclusion, he started to fly toward the Qinghuang Kingdom; whether or not the kingdom had a Space Gate, he would give it a try.

The Qinghuang Kingdom was only 100,000 meters north of Mercenary City, making the distance from where he was to the kingdom approximately 120,000 kilometers. If he wanted to go there, it would take a considerable amount of time.

Using the wind elements in the world to help speed him up, Jian Chen began to travel at a pace that was relatively slower than the time when he had used the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune and the Illusionary Flash combined. However, it still took him two hours in order to travel 1500 kilometers. In this manner, twenty-four hours would be enough for him to travel nearly 20,000 kilometers.

In seven days, Jian Chen had finally arrived at the border of the Qinghuang Kingdom. These seven days had been taxing for Jian Chen. He had very few breaks and the tiger cub constantly ate the

heavenly resources before falling asleep right after. However, the tiger cub was growing at a decent speed now, his body was already a meter long and already weighed close to fifty kilograms. This however made holding the cub to his chest very difficult. Moreover, the cub was already at the level of a Class 2 Magical Beast.

Because of the cub's innate nature of being a Heavenly Tiger God, it could constantly devour the heavenly resources without a problem unlike humans who used monster cores. After a while, a human would come across troubles that would shake their foundation and bring about major damages if they did not regulate their usage of monster cores, but this tiger did not have such a limitation.

In front of him, there was a hundred meter tall ancient wall that stretched beyond the lands like a long dragon, giving anyone the impression that they were looking at a mountain range instead. On top of the ancient gates was a gigantic board that said three words—Qinghuang Kingdom!

This was the stronghold of the Qinghuang Kingdom. As he drew closer, the originally quiet stronghold began to buzz with activity. Floating a thousand meters high in the air, he could see the ant-like people down below flowing in and out of the stronghold, trading their wares.

Jian Chen didn't bother with going through the gates and instead flew overhead without bothering to hide himself either.

Although his movements had not gone unnoticed by several

soldiers, the soldiers did nothing to stop him. Instead, they continued to watch him fly by with envious looks. Heaven Saint Masters were individuals that commanded this privilege of being able to go as they pleased without being stopped.

The Qinhuang Kingdom was extraordinarily large—four or five times larger than the Gesun Kingdom. After traveling for another 10,000 kilometers, he finally reached the capital city—Qinhuang City! This was a King City, a city that was second in rank compared to seven of the continent's Capital Cities, but its grandeur was great nonetheless.

Flying into Qinhuang City, he drew close to the palace and descended onto the ground while holding the tiger cub. Together, the two continued inside.

“Halt, what are you doing!” Several guards at the Great Saint Master level instantly moved forward to obstruct Jian Chen's path.

Jian Chen flashed the jade piece and spoke, “I am looking for Qin Ji!”

“Outrageous, just how dare you call the third prince so casually!” One of the rearguards instantly rebuked.

“Third prince?” At this, Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat, he had no idea that Qin Ji held such an illustrious position within the kingdom.

When one of the vanguards heard Jian Chen callout Qin Ji's name, his eyes narrowed dangerously. However, when he saw Jian Chen hold up the jade piece, he started with a cry, "That is the Qinhuang Jade given from His Majesty!"

At this, the guard that had cursed out from the back instantly clutched at his neck and retreated without a sound.

"My lord, if you would allow me to inspect the jade piece." The vanguard head spoke out courteously—a 180 degree shift from just a moment ago.

Without any complaints, Jian Chen handed over the jade piece to the guard. That guard accepted it with a polite manner and began to carefully turn and rotate the piece in order to inspect it. After ensuring that it was authentic, he gave it back and spoke, "My lord, if you could give us your name, we will report it to the third prince at once."

"Jian Chen!"

"Lord Jian Chen, please wait a moment!" The guard saluted as he called out for a person to come close. Whispering an order into his ear, he sent the man to go running into the palace straight away.

The time Jian Chen had spent waiting was not short. After an hour of waiting, a luxuriously dressed youth came walking out of the palace in a hurry. Right behind him were two beautiful looking women.

“We greet the third prince!” When the youth came out, the dozen Great Saint Master guards all immediately knelt down and cupped their hands in greeting.

This youth was Qin Ji.

“All raise then!” Qin Ji spoke calmly before looking toward Jian Chen. However, when he saw just how he looked, Qin Ji’s face was surprised for a moment before laughing, “Brother Jian Chen, I had no idea that it was really you! You’ve really changed this time, not only is your hair gone, but even your eyebrows and eyelashes too! Did you get roasted by a fire? I could barely recognize you!”

Hearing this, Jian Chen could only chuckle in embarrassment. “The recent weeks have been quite troublesome, so I look rather pitiful right now.”

After exchanging several words, Qin Ji ushered Jian Chen into the palace where a scrumptious feast was laid out in a palace hall made of gold and splendor for his welcome.

During the feast, Jian Chen and Qin Ji both talked joyously about many things as if they were good friends that had not met in years. Every so often, a great big laughter could be heard from one of the two.

After the meal was eaten and the wine was drunk, Jian Chen arrived at the heart of the matter. With a grim face, he asked, “Brother Qin Ji, I came to you today for your help on an important matter.”

Qin Ji had already known Jian Chen was not the type of person to visit a temple without a cause, so he laughed, “Brother Jian Chen, what is it that you need my help on? If I can do it, then I, Qin Ji, will not hesitate to do so.”

With an even more serious expression, he spoke, “Brother Qin Ji, I am in dire need of a Space Gate, would you know whether the Qinhuang Kingdom has one or knows the location of one?”

For a moment, Qin Ji stared blankly, but he quickly began to laugh in relief, “And here I thought it was something major. Brother Jian Chen, you were correct in coming to the Qinhuang Kingdom for a Space Gate, Aside from Mercenary City, Qinghuang City is the only one to have a Space Gate within a hundred thousand kilometers.”

Jian Chen was overjoyed to hear this, “Brother Qin Ji, then I must ask of you, would I be able to have you help me use the Space Gate?”

Continuing to laugh, Qin Ji replied, “Brother Jian Chen, you needn’t worry. Although the Space Gate within the Qinghuang Kingdom isn’t open for foreigners, there are always exceptions to everything. Just let me talk to my father, it shouldn’t be a problem.”

“Is that so? Then I’d like to thank brother Qin Ji.” Jian Chen looked relieved and exhilarated to hear that he would be able to use the Space Gate to return to the Gesun Kingdom.

Qin Ji placed another morsel of food from his chopsticks and began to chew with joy. Speaking with some food still in his mouth, Qin Ji spoke, “However, brother Jian Chen, I suggest you wait three days before using the Space Gate to leave.

“Why is that?” Jian Chen asked.

“In two days of time, it will be my father’s 50th birthday. That day will be extremely lively and many nobles from many clans will come to celebrate. As my friend, I hope that you would celebrate it with me.”



# Chapter 391: Provocation

---

Jian Chen hadn't any desire to decline Qin Ji's request, so he agreed to it quite enthusiastically.

As a result, Jian Chen came to live within the Qinhuang Palace with the lifestyle of an Immortal, but this was not the lifestyle that Jian Chen was accustomed to. At night, he would sleep within one of the guest rooms with several armored guards and even some maids waiting outside. The first were to guard Jian Chen while the latter were to serve him. Even when he walked around the palace, several guards and maids would follow from behind.

If it weren't for the fact that Jian Chen knew that all wealthy men had such a privileged life like this, he would have assumed that they were here to supervise him for any dangerous activity toward the palace.

On the second day, Qin Ji had woken up Jian Chen early in the morning before taking him on a stroll around the palace. On the stroll, he pointed out many of the different types of scenery within the place. Jian Chen never brought the tiger cub with him since he didn't wish for the cub to be subjected to the eyes of a lord. So, to ensure that the cub was safe, he would feed it a large amount of heavenly resources and would wait for it to fall into a deep sleep before walking out.

The palace was extraordinarily large, and even after walking for almost the entire day, they had only managed to travel two thirds of it. Some of the remaining areas were forbidden to outsiders however. In the meanwhile, Qin Ji had introduced Jian Chen to

many different lords and the daughters of the nobles. Their ages weren't all that too far away from the two, but whenever Qin Ji introduced Jian Chen, he only said that Jian Chen was a friend made from a personal friendship. Thus, the lords gave Jian Chen contemptuous looks. Maintaining a look of resoluteness, Jian Chen said nothing. However, the illustrious daughters of the nobles often times gave him strange looks; some of them even spoke to Jian Chen with a friendly manner and exposed their intent to be friends clearly.

However this newfound popularity of Jian Chen had earned the ire of even more nobles. The majority of them had already started to give Jian Chen envious and heated looks.

Straight after Qin Ji and Jian Chen had split ways, many of the nobles had already ordered for someone to inquire about Jian Chen's identity and background. In the end, many of them couldn't help but sigh in relief as they heard that Jian Chen wasn't a part of any political power and was an unknown entity. In accordance to their guesses, even if Jian Chen had some type of background, the party behind him was far too inferior to be talked about in public.

In the evening, Jian Chen had finished the daytime activities and returned to Qin Ji's palace to eat a meal. This was his personal abode and was suited with many different facilities for his every need.

Just as Qin Ji and Jian Chen were enjoying their meal, an armored soldier suddenly came into the palace and knelt to the ground respectfully. "A report for the third prince! Princess Qin

Shuang, princess Qin Yubing and the princess of Funan have arrived at the Flowing Clouds Palace!” The Flowing Clouds Palace was the name of Qin Ji’s palace.

Hearing this, Qin Ji’s eyebrows furrowed together as he muttered, “Strange, what are they up to?” Then, as if coming to a realization, he gave a meaningful look to Jian Chen and laughed, “Then, let them in!”

“Yes, third prince!” The guard spoke before retreating outside.

After the guard had left, Qin Ji toasted a cup with Jian Chen, “Brother Jian Chen, the relationship between the three of them and me is not anything significant. This is the first time they’ve come to my palace, it seems that it’s because of you.”

Jian Chen cleaned off the wine cup with a bitter smile, “Brother Qin Ji, you speak so sarcastically.”

Widening his eyes, Qin Ji spoke sternly, “Sarcasm? I am not. Jian Chen, if you don’t believe me, then just wait and see.”

Very soon, three beautiful flower like women walked into the palace. These three young princesses were the three princesses he had met in the imperial palace during the day.

Princess Qin Shuang gave an unruly wink toward Qin Ji as she spoke, “Elder brother, Qin Shuang has grown so much, and yet you’re not welcoming me into your palace for the first time?”

Laughing, Qin Ji spoke, “Welcome, welcome. How could I not welcome you? Sisters, princess of Funan, please come sit and eat. Maid! Another three sets of dinnerware!”

The two princesses and the princess of Funan were all outspoken women, but their words were filled with noble auras and they spoke of their thanks to Qin Ji.

As the three sat down, Qin Yubing cast a glance toward Jian Chen before speaking to Qin Ji, “Ah, elder brother, you haven’t introduced your sister to your friend here. Your sister is very curious, just how did you two meet?”

Giving a quick wink to Jian Chen, he laughed and explained, “There’s no harm in telling you. Brother Jian Chen and I actually met at the Gathering of the Mercenaries. The two of us became close friends straight away. Furthermore, this brother of mine is actually the King of Mercenaries!”

“Ah, so he is the Jian Chen who won first place at the Gathering of the Mercenaries...” The three princesses looked on in shock. Their opinion of Jian Chen had changed drastically, their eyes shining strangely bright.

Seeing how the princess’s eyes were starting to sparkle, Jian Chen couldn’t help but give a small smile before glaring at Qin Ji. Pretending to not have seen it, Qin Ji’s lips curled into a small smile as he continued to eat the meal on the table with a relished gusto.

“Wah, so you’re really strong, Jian Chen! If you were able to become the first place ranker at the Gathering of the Mercenaries, then that means you’re stronger than our elder brother! Come, I, Situ Yan, toast you!” The princess of Funan immediately raised a glass as she spoke to Jian Chen with a chivalrous tone.

Following Situ Yan’s example, Qin Shuang and Qin Yubing both raised their glasses as well as they toasted Jian Chen.

Unwilling to shirk away from this, Jian Chen stood up and held up his own glass in response to the three princess’ kind words. Touching cups with the there, he was just about to bring it up to his own mouth before a loud cry came out from outside.

“Lord Xiao Han, you can’t go in! Without the permission of the third prince, no one can enter the Flowing Clouds Palace...”

“Lord Xiao Han, please don’t make things difficult for us. Without the third prince’s permission, you cannot enter this place...”

“Step aside! Who do you think I am? Visiting the third prince should warrant no notice!”

All of a sudden, a twenty-five year old youth came bursting into the palace in a grandiose manner. He wore a magnificent cyan robe and his eyebrows were creased into a fierce state, giving everyone the idea that he was the type to treat all those under the heavens as someone to be scorned.

As he entered, two more armored soldiers came running in as an attempt to block him. But because of the high status of the youth, the two soldiers didn't dare use violence in order to stop him.

"Third prince, please forgive us!" The two soldiers cried out helplessly in forgiveness.

Looking expressionlessly at the youth that had just ran in, he waved his hand at the two guards, "You two may leave!"

"Yes, third prince!" The two cried out graciously before retreating away.

Qin Ji looked at the youth hard and spoke, "What business do you have for you to just barge into my Flowing Clouds Palace?"

Laughing, Xiao Han cupped his hands in greeting, "Third prince, tomorrow is His Majesty's 50th birthday. I came here today to discuss of tomorrow's gift to him, if I have disturbed you, then please forgive me for my transgressions." Looking to the side at Qin Shuang, Qin Yubing, and the princess of Funan, his expression grew flabbergasted as he cried, "Ah, the two princesses and the princess of Funan are here too? How coincidental! Dear princesses, what might you three be doing here?" Xiao Han looked at the four cups being raised in the air, but a sight like this didn't require an idiot to figure out the situation.

Xiao Han's eyes held an undisguised amount of envy, but he managed to let out a smile, "Dear princesses, could it be that you

three are giving a toast to the third prince's friend?"

Qin Shuang, Qin Yubing, and the princess of Funan looked at him with a look of utter loathing as if they were all equally disgusted by him.

Qin Yubing didn't even spare him another glance and turned back to Jian Chen with the cup raised, "Let us toast!" Her voice was exceedingly gentle and would cause any male to feel happy to hear it.

After her suggestion, Qin Shuang and the princess of Funan raised their glasses up with a smile.

At this sight, Xiao Han's fury burst with envy as he promptly shouted, "This cannot do! Three princesses worth their weight of gold and all of illustrious backgrounds drinking wine with a stranger? Have you lost your identity?"

Straight away, Qin Ji exploded with anger as well. His previously expressionless eyes grew icy cold as he thundered, "Xiao Han, what is the meaning of your words? Could it be that a friend of I, Qin Ji, is not worthy of drinking with these three princesses?"

Giving an apologetic smile, he spoke with a moderate tone, "Third prince, please quell your anger. What I said is nothing but the truth. These three princesses have such an illustrious background, and while the friend of the third prince is no ordinary status, he is neither anyone with any special relations. Thus, it is inappropriate for them to drink with him."

## Chapter 392: Using Chopsticks As Weapons

---

Xiao Han's words caused Qin Ji's face to instantly grow dangerous. But before he could say anything, Qin Yubing spoke out toward Xiao Han with an icy glow, "Xiao Han, whomever we drink with is of no concern to you."

"That's correct. Xiao Han, you are overstepping your boundaries. Whatever we wish to do has nothing to do with you." Qin Shuang said.

"Xiao Han, you think too highly of yourself. If it were not for your grandfather, you wouldn't even be qualified to step within the Qinhuang palace. You think that you are amazing, or terrific even so that even elder brother is below your station? Your grandfather has wasted all those magical panaceas, but you are only a Great Saint Master, what a waste!" The princess of Funan lashed out verbally, not caring for Xiao Han's honor.

Hearing this, Xiao Han's face began to grow darker and darker and his eyes frosted over. Qin Shuang and Qin Yubing were both princesses of grace and beauty—woman that he had constantly chased after. Once he had even announced his affection for the two, but he had been rejected without mercy. Xiao Han did not give up his pursuit because he believed that with his position within the Qinhuang Kingdom, it was only a matter of time before he and one of the two would be engaged. Having his grandfather propose to His Majesty for this arranged marriage would not be too difficult. He had never thought that the two people he had always chased after would unexpectedly go with a stranger unknown to him and speak such unpleasant words for him to hear. To the boisterous noble, this was an unwashable insult.



The princess of Funan had especially spoke words that were as sharp as a sword before piercing into his heart. It was a deep insult to him, causing him to grow speechless and pale.

Seeing how offended Xiao Han was, Qin Ji began to smile in delight as he spoke, “Xiao Han, right now my brother and the three princesses are eating a meal. I’ve already planned for my father’s present, so there is no need to discuss it. You may leave!” With that, Qin Ji looked outside, “Take Xiao Han back to his place!”

Immediately two maids came forward and courteously brought Xiao Han away from the palace, “Lord Xiao Han, if you please!”

Xiao Han let out a violent snort of air as the anger within his heart combusted. All of his extreme anger and envy was forced straight upon Jian Chen’s head and had already reached the highest point of anger.

“Good, good, good! Princess Funan, you say that I am not equal to the third prince, I, Xiao Han, recognize that. That is because compared to the heaven gifted genius like the third prince, I am inferior, but let me ask you. Could that stranger right there be any more amazing? He has only his looks to fall upon. His status, his position, his power, where does he compare to against me?” Xiao Han spoke, emphasizing each word, his anger and envy had already caused him to lose all reasoning.

The princess of Funan revealed a sneer as she looked at Xiao Han with scorn, “Xiao Han, your position only came to be because of

your grandfather and not your own strength. As for strength...” She paused for a moment as her vibrant eyes turned to look at Jian Chen while ignoring Xiao Han, “As for this man’s strength, if you cannot compare to the third prince, then you cannot even hope to stand against Jian Chen.”

“Hmph, he is nothing. I won’t believe that he is stronger than me.” Xiao Han snorted in anger as he stared at Jian Chen vehemently, “Kid, I, Xiao Han, challenge you. Do you dare to accept?”

Jian Chen’s eyebrows furrowed together. This Xiao Han was not at all pleasant to talk to.

At this moment, Qin Ji spoke, “Xiao Han, the princess of Funan speaks the truth. You are not an opponent for my brother, so save yourself the disgrace. You two take lord Xiao Han back.” Qin Ji spoke flatly toward the maids. He too did not have a favorable impression of Xiao Han and didn’t bother to honor him.

“Yes, third prince. Lord Xiao Han...”

“Scram!”

The two maids tried to lead Xiao Han out of the palace but he immediately pushed them aside and glared dangerously at Jian Chen. A strong amount of Saint Force began to form around his right hand before forming a giant broadsword before pointing the tip at Jian Chen, “Do you dare accept?”

Xiao Han's provocation caused Qin Ji to explode with anger. Slamming the table, he exploded, "Xiao Han, the Flowing Clouds Palace will not accept this behavior. If you continue this behavior, then don't blame Qin Ji for not sparing your face."

Xiao Han had already lost his reasoning to his anger so the third prince's words had gone in one ear and out the other. Pointing his sword at Jian Chen, he repeated, "Do you dare accept!"

"Impudence!" Qin Ji's palm slammed on the table once more in anger as if he was about to prepare to deal with this himself.

Jian Chen lifted his hand to stop Qin Ji as he stared at Xiao Han. "Brother Qin Ji, if this brother here wishes to challenge me, then I will comply."

Qin Ji hesitated for a moment before nodding his head, "Brother Jian Chen, then please do be lenient."

"Please be what? Hah, teach him a good lesson. He annoys us everyday to death almost!" Qin Shuang spoke in discontent.

"That's right, I hate him." Qin Yubing had a look filled with disgust.

Jian Chen looked at Xiao Han, "Make your move then."

"Let's go outside. This palace is too small and I have no desire to destroy the third prince's palace." He snorted.

“No need,” Jian Chen shook his head. “I don’t feel like moving. You may rest assured, we won’t be breaking any part of this place.”

Jian Chen’s casual attitude toward him caused Xiao Han’s anger to explode three times over, “How arrogant, I’ll make sure you pay the price then.” With that, he raised his giant Saint Weapon and charged straight toward Jian Chen.

Qin Shuang, Qin Yubing and the Princess of Funan let out a small cry of alarm as they tried to move back to avoid the energy wave.

With a snort, Jian Chen waved his hand. The chopstick from the table began to float up into the air with an azure and violet glow to it before shooting straight toward Xiao Han.

“Ah!” Following a miserable cry of pain, the chopstick burrowed its way into Xiao Han’s right arm to where the bone was, rendering mobility in it impossible.

“Wa, Jian Chen is quite amazing...”

“Too amazing, just too amazing. Jian Chen, how strong are you if you could use a single chopstick to beat a Great Saint Master?”

“Jian Chen, you absolutely must teach me...”

The three princesses all clapped their hands in adoration of Jian

Chen, their eyes were already seeing stars.

Seeing the wound on Xiao Han's body, Qin Ji had let out a sigh in relief. This was the man that the Shi family and the Jiede clan had their young lords killed by. Because of that, he was worried that Jian Chen would have taken Xiao Han's life in a fit of anger.

“Take Xiao Han to treat his wounds.” Qin Ji waved his hand for the two maids to take him.

Xiao Han was unable to take the pain in his arm and could only stare poisonously at Jian Chen. Without another look back, he walked out from the palace, even his honor would not allow him to stay here.

After Xiao Han had left, Jian Chen looked to Qin Ji, “Brother Qin Ji, just who is this Xiao Han?”

Qin Ji sat back down, “Xiao Han's position is truly quite unique. Within the palace, there are very few that are equal to the stature of the princes. His grandfather is the imperial tutor and has an illustrious position as a result. His grandfather's status could rival even my father's. Xiao Han's father was also the imperial army's captain five years ago. One time when my father had been a target of a raid, it was Xiao Han's father who had taken the blow for an attempt on his life, causing his death. Because of this, my father has come to love Xiao Han dearly, causing his status to rise up to the rank of a prince.”

“So that's the story. What realm has Xiao Han's grandfather

reached?” Jian Chen asked.

“Heaven Saint Master! He is a Fifth Cycle Heaven Saint Master!” Qin Ji spoke seriously.

“A genius that has reached the Fifth Cycle Heaven Saint Master realm.” Jian Chen muttered with a gentle smile.

After the meal, the three princesses finally parted paths with Jian Chen, allowing him to return to his own place to rest. Sitting on top of the bed to think, he knew that it would be the celebration of His Majesty’s birthday. He didn’t know just what type of present to give to a king.

Aside from a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, heavenly resources, and a Class 6 Monster Core, Jian Chen had essentially nothing to give. The Heaven Tier Battle Skill was definitely not an item to be gifted, and a Class 6 Monster Core would not be an item worthy of being gifted to a king of the Qinhuang Kingdom.

At this moment, a light went off in Jian Chen’s mind as his hand blurred, causing a small pill to appear in his hand. This was the second Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill given to him by Elder Xiu. He wasn’t too willing to part with it just yet, so he began to debate on what to do.

“But this Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill is the only item I could give.” Jian Chen muttered. His Radiant Saint Force was far away from being equal to a Class 8 Radiant Saint Force. Plus, with his controlling method, it would be impossible for him to mass

produce them anyways.

# Chapter 393: Birthday Present

---

The next day, the birthday of the Qinghuang Kingdom's king had officially begun. Jian Chen was woken up early by Qin Ji, and the two left together to congratulate him.

The palace was especially lively today. Many influential lords and nobles came to personally congratulate the king on this happy occasion. All sorts of political leaders and major powers came and in short, everyone was of some importance.

The Qinghuang Kingdom held a lot of power and was second only to the Three Great Empires. Within the continent, the Qinghuang Kingdom was already considered one of the highest powers. Thus, every single territory within the kingdom and even the subsiding powers bordering the kingdom had sent men with gifts in order to celebrate this happy occasion. If it were not a lord or princess, it was a prime minister that came, even several Imperial Advisors had come to pay their respects.

Directly walking toward the main palace hall, Jian Chen and Qin Ji both saw well over a thousand people standing around. Each one wore gorgeous robes or were figures that were well known throughout the kingdom.

A wave of maids could be seen walking around the place with small platters of food in order to serve the guests.

“We greet the third prince!”

“We greet the third prince!”



.....

Upon seeing Qin Ji arrive, many of the people there began to cup their hands in salute with extremely respectful greetings.

Greeting them all with a kind smile, Qin Ji responded amiably without any sense of arrogance.

Jian Chen followed behind Qin Ji silently. He was perfectly content not being in the limelight and did not wish for the spotlight to be put onto him.

The nobles within the palace naturally paid very little attention to him. The vast majority only believed that Jian Chen was an attendant to Qin Ji and didn't spare him a second glance. The other part of the crowd took a neutral stance, but some noticed that Jian Chen was not any ordinary person. He was neither servile or overbearing in nature and carried himself with a graceful manner. Despite his age, he walked with a steady step that even a mountain could not attest to. Some of the stronger men in the room could even tell there was a strong pressure coming from him, causing them to look on in shock.

“Strange, why is it that I feel as if I’ve seen that man walking behind the third prince before? Just where did this feeling come from?” One of the more richly dressed men stared suspiciously at Jian Chen as he muttered to himself.

He was not the only person to have this hunch. Several other

men within the palace had this same exact suspicion. They felt that he was a stranger, but they still couldn't shake off this feeling.

“Brother Jian Chen, feel free to go rest somewhere, I still have several people to greet.” Qin Ji spoke apologetically toward Jian Chen.

Today was the 50th birthday of his father so the king could not greet any of the people himself. However, these men were all high ranking people, some from the surrounding kingdoms. They couldn't be received by just anyone, so the children would have to take up the mantle.

Even this was considered to be a good opportunity for the prince to get to know people. It was with that excuse that they could make a foundation for political support when the time came to fight for the throne.

Jian Chen was neither a child nor an ignorant farmer from the thatched villages. He understood clearly just how important this gathering was for Qin Ji and did not argue. Taking a small snack to eat, he began to stroll to the closest corner of the room before enjoying the delicious tasting pastries.

Just then, a cyan robed middle-aged man sat down right next to Jian Chen. Nodding with a smile toward the eating Jian Chen, he spoke, “Fellow brother, have we seen each other somewhere before?”

Jian Chen lifted his head to look at the man. Seeing that the man

was unfamiliar to him, he shook his head, “You must be mistaken. Perhaps I look like someone else?”

Still skeptical, the man nodded his head, “Perhaps so. My name is Tie Muzhuang, what might your name be?”

Jian Chen laughed, “This one is just a nobody and not even a member of the Qinhuang Kingdom. My name won’t be recognizable by sire even if this one speaks of it.” Jian Chen finished off the pastry and left to go get a new one.

After Jian Chen had left, Tie Muzhuang narrowed his eyes in doubt, “An unknown nobody? Is that really the truth? Why do I feel that I’ve seen you from somewhere?” Even with his mutterings, he had been unable to think of an answer, so Tie Muzhuang had no other choice but to leave as well.

“His Majesty the king has arrived!”

At that moment, a long drawn out voice could be heard announcing the arrival of the king. The noise within the palace instantly died out as everyone turned to look in the direction the cry came from.

Everyone could see a golden, purple-dragon robed middle-aged man walking into the palace with an intimidating air. Right behind him was a single elder with a crane styled hairdo.

The king was turning fifty years old, but his appearance made

him look as if he was forty instead. He was smiling widely with eyes that flickered with vigor and wisdom. The Qinhuang Kingdom's king had twelve children. Seven of them were princes and the other five were princesses. The eldest was already thirty years old and the youngest was only six. At this moment, those twelve children were walking right behind him.

“Greet His Majesty and wish him a long life and glory to the Qinhuang Kingdom!”

The entire palace began to speak out the words, “Long live and a thousand years!” Within the Tian Yuan Continent, these were the highest words of celebration that generally only the nobility of countries could hear.

That was because a thousand years was the lifespan of a Heaven Saint Master. Saint Rulers and Saint Kings weren't even able to live past ten thousand years and were generally within the thousands.

Afterward, everyone began to give the gifts they had prepared. The vast majority of the items were all vastly valuable, some of them were even beyond the scope of what money could be. Apart from this, there was plenty of antique pottery and vases from several people as well as plenty of heavenly resources that were aged well over a thousand years.

After the majority of the men had presented their gifts, Jian Chen came walking forward with a purple and gold box. Striding forward, he presented it to the king with a smile, “There is a Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill within this box. I present this to His Majesty in

congratulations on his birthday.” Jian Chen spoke succinctly without any flowery words.

“A Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill? I’ve heard only a Seventh Class Radiant Saint Master would be able to produce such a pill. It is a pill that is fully deserving of being called a true healing catholicon! Not only can it purify any venom, but it could even rescue a person from the jaws of death!”

“A Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill can be rarely seen within the entire continent. This would make even hermits drool at the mouth to have such a life saving treasure.”

.....

Upon hearing the words ‘Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill’, the entire palace began to burst into commotion and admiration at this item. They all looked at the purple and golden box within Jian Chen’s hands. Each one believed that such a high leveled Radiant Spirit Pill had gone extinct since the only Radiant Saint Masters capable of making one were as rare as a phoenix feather. Furthermore, creating just one of these would require a tremendous amount of energy from them.

The Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill had moved even the king. If he wanted to obtain some sort of heavenly resource or any other priceless treasure, it was not at all difficult for him. A Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill was a different matter. That was because items that could save one’s life were far too priceless to be obtained.

Following a stare from the king, a white robed elder immediately came forth from the crowd. Taking the box from Jian Chen's hands, he took out the bottle from within and then began to inspect the thumb sized pill from it.

This elder was a Radiant Saint Master that would be able to tell how rich the Radiant Saint Force was within the pill. After making sure he wasn't wrong, the elder's face lit up in delight as he carefully put the pill back into the box and cupped his hands to the king. "Your Majesty, this is truly a Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill!" The elder's voice held an emotional tone to it since he knew just how rare it was to see such a high leveled pill.

Standing right behind the king, Qin Ji sent an appreciative glance to Jian Chen. Even he knew just how priceless a Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill was. For Jian Chen to unexpectedly gift such a pill to the king, the meaning would be loud and clear, allowing Qin Ji to feel happy.

Even the other people standing by the king's side began to change their opinion of Jian Chen by smiling and nodding. A Class 8 Radiant Spirit Pill couldn't be given by just anyone. This action from Jian Chen had inadvertently solidified his status among everyone in the crowd.

Hearing the confirmation from the elder, the king immediately began to laugh as he regarded Jian Chen in a new light. "Remarkable brother, it only takes one look to know that you are a giant among the men here. I admit to knowing no noble that would relinquish such a priceless gift, but I am truly grateful."

“Father, he is called Jian Chen, a friend I have made from the outside.” Before Jian Chen could even say anything, Qin Ji spoke out respectfully to his father.

As soon as Qin Ji spoke, several other men began to cry out.

“Jian Chen! He’s Jian Chen, it’s no wonder I thought he looked familiar!”

“Could he be that very same Jian Chen who became the King of Mercenaries at the last Gathering of the Mercenaries? His strength was on par with a Heaven Saint Master, it’s no wonder I felt that there was something to him.”

“I’ve got it! He’s that Jian Chen who became the King of Mercenaries! I was there for the event, so no wonder I had thought he was familiar looking! It’s because his hair is nearly gone so that I was unable to recognize him!”

“Even his eyelashes are gone...”

# Chapter 394: Attacks That Influence Even The Nobility

---

Hearing the chatter regarding Jian Chen, the influential officials all had flabbergasted expressions on their faces as they stared at Jian Chen one by one in disbelief.

Everyone knew that the King of Mercenaries was named Jian Chen, but those who had personally seen what Jian Chen had looked like were a small amount. No one could have imagined that Jian Chen was actually very young—even younger than the third prince.

In simple math, Jian Chen spent less time cultivating than the third prince, but he was even stronger than him. This led everyone to believe that Jian Chen was a genius of unsurpassed prowess.

The king of the Qinhuang Kingdom boomed with laughter as he looked at Jian Chen with surprise, “Good! Very good! I did not judge you wrongly then. Jian Chen, you are truly a giant among men if you were able to become the King of Mercenaries at such a young age. Your future has no limits, and my son will benefit greatly from being acquainted with you.”

Xiao Han stood within the crowd of people with a look of utter fury at Jian Chen. Biting his lip, he muttered angrily under his breath, “I didn’t think you would be that nonsensical King of Mercenaries. Hmph, it doesn’t matter who you are, I, Xiao Han, will not let you off easily.”



Hearing the mutters of Xiao Han, a cyan robed middle-aged man asked, “Xiao Han, could this be the one that humiliated and injured you yesterday?”

“Correct, uncle Mu Zhaye, you must help me teach him a lesson. Otherwise, this is something I will never be able to swallow.” Xiao Han spoke. Mu Zhaye was an apprentice to his grandfather and was close to him.

Mu Zhaye’s eyebrows creased together as he thought, “I’m afraid it won’t be easy. I had no idea that he would be the King of Mercenaries. Although I do not know of his strength, he surely has to be stronger than the third prince by a good amount. Furthermore, he has earned the favor His Majesty. If I were to act against him, I would earn the ire of His Majesty in return.”

“Uncle Mu Zhaye, he is only so old. Even if the third prince is no match to him, it doesn’t mean that Jian Chen may have used some sort of way to scrape out an unexpected success to become the King of Mercenaries. You could challenge him in public and then humiliate him. As for His Majesty, I will naturally let my grandfather take care of that.” Xiao Han spoke.

Nodding his head slightly, Mu Zhaye spoke, “Fine, I was wanting to test his strength anyways. I’d like to see just how strong the rumors say the King of Mercenaries is.”

After knowing that Jian Chen was the King of Mercenaries, the king’s attitude toward him was far more friendly. On the contrast, when the other princes had heard that Jian Chen was the friend of the third prince, they had all contorted with annoyance. Only two

of the younger princes had been able to keep their cool as if the matter had nothing to do with them.

Jian Chen and the king managed to exchange several more words before returning to the crowd. However, at this moment, every single noble and major powers had begun to treat Jian Chen vastly different from before. Charging at him, each one of them tried to get within Jian Chen's good graces.

That was because in the past, every single King of the Mercenaries had been at the very least a Heaven Saint Master. At the highest, they had been able to make the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler.

When it came to these people, Jian Chen only politely responded to them without any deeper meaning to his words.

Suddenly, a grand voice could be heard reverberating through the halls, causing all of the noise in the hall to stop instantly.

"Your Majesty, our Qinhuang Kingdom was founded by the military since the ancient past and defended our country with our military might. Today is the birthday of His Majesty, but why is there a shortage of martial might? This humble servant's hand itches and wishes to compare notes with the King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen! At the same time, I wish to use this show of martial prowess to be the gift to His Majesty. Your Majesty, if you could please allow this!"

Everyone's head began to turn as they looked at a cyan robed

man kneel to the ground as he spoke respectfully to the king.

Hearing this, the king had a faint smile as he introduced Jian Chen to him. “Jian Chen, this is the imperial army captain, Mu Zhaye.”

The king had neither denied nor accepted Mu Zhaye’s request and instead gave the right to Jian Chen. In the end, he too wanted to see just how strong Jian Chen was.

Laughing, Jian Chen strode forward and cupped his hands, “If captain Mu Zhaye wishes to compare notes with this one and put on a show for the king, then let us make this a great present to the king.”

Laughing joyously, the king spoke, “Very well! If this is your answer, then let us all cheer you both on.”

With that, the king and an elder walked out of the halls with the entire crowd following after them.

Within a large open space, everyone gathered around to watch Jian Chen and Mu Zhaye fight and were in an extremely jubilant mood. A fight between the imperial army captain and the King of Mercenaries would definitely be a glorious spectacle. And in everyone’s heart, they had wished to see just who would be the winner of the two. Only a few men had seen the King of Mercenaries fight and so they had a profound smile on their faces as they watched.

Mu Zhaye held his cyan colored pike in his hands as he stared at Jian Chen fixedly. Although Jian Chen was quite young, being the King of Mercenaries did not give Mu Zhaye the luxury of underestimating him.

Jian Chen stood thirty meters away with a smile. Staring at the captain, he spoke, “Captain Mu Zhaye, if you would please start it off.”

Seeing how Jian Chen had not yet taken out his Saint Weapon to fight, Mu Zhaye’s eyebrows creased together with a small glint of fury. In his eyes, seeing Jian Chen barehanded was an insult to him.

Casting a cold glare and a snort, his legs stamped across the ground as he flew toward Jian Chen. At the same time, the pike in his hands began to glow with the wind attributed Saint Force as he thrust it forward.

Jian Chen’s face had a slight smile as his right leg stamped on the ground. A thumb sized stone suddenly shot up before being grabbed by Jian Chen with ease. His hand shook for a moment before the pebble then began to glow with an azure and violet light. The pebble shot straight toward the incoming Mu Zhaye.

“Ding!”

A crisp sound could be heard as the thumb sized stone collided against the tip of Mu Zhaye’s pike. Following the inconceivably strong impact, Mu Zhaye’s arm and pike began to tremble from the

force.

Looking greatly shocked, the force of the blow had caused Mu Zhaye to stop for a moment before staggering backward several steps. Both of the hands that were carrying the pike were shaking violently and a small amount of blood could be seen from the web of his hand.

Turning pale with fright, Mu Zhaye turned his head to look at Jian Chen. Despite all of his strength, a pebble thrown by Jian Chen had been able to force him back, this was far too much for Mu Zhaye to accept.

Seeing how a single stone thrown by Jian Chen had caused Mu Zhaye's hand to bleed, the spectators had gone into an uproar. Each one looked on in disbelief, this display of strength had been nearly as great on their hearts as it was for Mu Zhaye.

“Could this be a battle skill of Jian Chen's?” Some people began to ask.

Even the king sighed in admiration. He looked at Jian Chen in disbelief for a moment before turning to give a look to the elder beside him.

A single pebble had been enough for the captain of the imperial army to stagger backward. This was more than enough to let the king know that Jian Chen's strength was far stronger than he initially thought. An Earth Saint Master would not be enough to gauge Jian Chen's true strength, so he planned on bringing out a

stronger person to do so instead.

The elder standing next to the king nodded before walking out, “Jian Chen, allow this old man to try.” Before giving Jian Chen any option, the elder transformed into a blurry image as he charged toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s lips curled up with a faint smile as he pointed outward with a finger, causing an azure and violet Sword Qi to shoot toward the elder.

Knowing that Jian Chen was exceedingly strong, he didn’t dare underestimate him. Forming a fist, he lashed out against the Sword Qi with a rippling amount of fire Saint Force.

The Sword Qi was scattered apart by the elder, but there was an eye catching wound left on top of the elder’s hand.

Looking at the wound on his hand, the elder’s face grew dim. Swiping at the air, the fire element within the world began to congregate around his hand before instantaneously forming a giant sword of fire.

At this sight, Jian Chen revealed a sneer before he raised his right hand as well. The fire elements in the world began to gather in his right hand at a faster rate than the elder and formed a giant sword of fire. No matter if it was color or by temperature, Jian Chen’s sword seemed much stronger than the elder’s.

“He has control of the energy of the world, how surprising is that...?”

“This is the magical power of controlling the energy of the world. Could he have reached the Heaven Saint Master realm...?”

Jian Chen’s act of controlling the energy of the world had caused everyone to turn pale with fright. At this moment, everyone had truly believed that Jian Chen was many times stronger than Mu Zhaye. Even the lords and leaders had their eyes wide open as they look at Jian Chen in silent disbelief.

A Heaven Saint Master wasn’t a new sight to them. However, a Heaven Saint Master this young was something they had never heard of before.

“How... how is this possible? Jian Chen has made the breakthrough to become a Heaven Saint Master?” Even Qin Ji had a look of surprise as he muttered to himself.

The king of the Qinhuang Kingdom let out a breath of air as he slowly calmed his nerves. At this moment, he could feel his heart beating rapidly at this sight. A twenty something year old Heaven Saint Master would surely ripple across the Tian Yuan Continent if news were to get out.

“Is he truly as young as he looks?” The Qinhuang Kingdom’s king spoke with some doubt.

# Chapter 395: Midair Showdown

---

When the elder saw Jian Chen form a sword seemingly out of mid air, his face instantly blanched in shock. But without pause, he condensed his own fire red great sword and went at Jian Chen to try and slash him.

When the elder swung out, so did Jian Chen. Waving his right hand, the sword instantly shot toward the elder.

“Bang!”

When both fire red swords collided against each other, the two swords suddenly exploded with energy, causing an explosive bang to be heard as the entire sky washed over with flames. All around the two combatants, balls of fire could be seen flying everywhere at high speeds and high temperature.

“Run!”

“Get back!”

“Protect His Majesty!”

The surrounding spectators instantly spread out as they flew backward while at the same time, Saint Force of every color appeared to form a protective armor for themselves and anyone of major importance.



Seeing the sudden spread of the fire, even the king of the Qinhuang Kingdom was surprised. But a white figure suddenly shot towards him as a cyan colored man brought both the king and himself into the air by using his wind attributed Saint Force. With a grab of the king's shoulder, the two of them flew away from the fire.

Movement could be seen coming from everywhere as an Earth Saint Master began to spread out his Saint Force all over the palace. Several armored soldiers immediately flew forward in a hurried manner to form a protective line.

At the same time, four elders and two middle-aged men strode forward from the crowd and circled around the ring of fire. Raising their hands, each one used a fierce blast of wind to curb and control the fire.

The sea of flames had already concealed both Jian Chen and the elder he was fighting, but even within the flames, their movements were not hindered in the slightest. Just as the flames sent flying back at them from the six men earlier, it was suddenly stopped by an invisible force just one meter away.

“Allow this old man to fight you from above!” The elder spoke as he flew five hundred meters up into the air, transforming into a speck the size of an ant. The faint element of fire could be seen enveloping his entire body.

Not willing to admit defeat, Jian Chen began to use the wind element in the world and gathered it around his body using his mind. Flying straight into the air, he quickly got within a hundred

meters of the floating elder.

“What! Y-yo-you can control the wind element as well?” The elder spoke thunderstruck as he looked at the wind swivel around Jian Chen’s body.

The cyan colored light surrounding Jian Chen’s body had not gone unnoticed by the audience below. Each one of them cried out in shock, but not as loud as the several hidden Heaven Saint Masters within the crowd. It was almost as if they had seen a monster as their faces contorted in shock.

“How is this possible? He was clearly a fire attributed Saint Force cultivator, just how is he using the wind attribute?”

“Could he be a wind attributed Saint Force user instead of a fire attributed Saint Force user?”

“Impossible, there has never been anyone being able to use two different elements! He must be using some sort of strange method.”

.....

“Jian Chen, could it be that you are able to control both the fire and wind element?” The elder questioned in astonishment.

Smiling, Jian Chen replied honestly, “Correct, I am truly able to control both the fire and wind element.”

“No, that’s not possible! Just how could you control two elements? There has never been a single person who could do the same before on the continent!” The man cried out.

“There has never been anything that cannot be done. There are still many profound mysteries to the world, all that we know are merely the ones we have stepped into and understood.”

Although seeing Jian Chen take control of two elements in the world was extremely surprising, the elder calmed himself down quickly. “You speak correctly, there are still many things unknown to us in the world. It seems this old man has forgotten himself.” Pausing his breath, the fire sword appeared in his hand once more “Today, I shall find out for myself just how strong a wielder of two elements is.”

Smiling, Jian Chen raised both of his hands. Immediately, all of the pebbles within the nearby pond began to fly up as if a strange force was pulling it. Breaking through the water, the pebbles all floated around Jian Chen’s body ominously.

“What is the meaning of this, how did the stones suddenly fly up into the air...?”

“What power is this, how is he doing it?”

At this even stranger sight, everyone could only gasp in surprise.

Behind two Heaven Saint Master guards, the Qinhuang Kingdom king tilted his head to the sky, “This Jian Chen is truly beyond

what I imagined. At such a young age, he has reached the Heaven Saint Master realm. A genius like this comes only once every thousand years.”

One of the Heaven Saint Masters looked surprised at that, “Why stop at a thousand years? A talent like his comes every ten thousand years! If his skill grows without any complication, he will be a Saint Ruler at the very least. Becoming a Saint King would be of no problem to him.”

Hearing this, the king paused in surprise. Even the princes standing behind the king were frightened at this. Struggling to maintain their composure, they looked at Qin Ji with a mixture of admiration and jealousy.

As for Qin Ji, he had personally seen Jian Chen’s amazing prowess with his own eyes before. His mind had already thought of Jian Chen to be stronger than what his own words could say.

By now, the Heaven Saint Master had thrown away all notions of belittling Jian Chen. Mustering all of his strength, the flames on his sword had begun to evaporate even the air around it.

Jian Chen floated in midair as steady as a mountain as the wind blew past his figure ferociously. Both of his hands had already formed a fist right in front of his chest as the pebbles floating around him began to meld into the form of a sword that radiated with azure and violet Sword Qi.

# Chapter 396: Imperial Protector

---

“Watch my sword!” The elder shouted as he brought the giant sword down toward Jian Chen with an inferno replacing the blade.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed with a tint of the azure and violet shades of color. Right in front of him, the giant sword made from pebbles began to glow even brighter with the same color before shooting straight toward the elder.

“Bang!”

Another loud explosion could be heard as the elder’s giant sword and the sword made from the pebbles clashed against each other. The flame like essence from the elder’s sword began to slough off in a substantial amount, each piece transforming into shooting stars that spread out in every direction before exploding like a firework would.

The attack of the elder had caused some of the pebbles to be crushed into dust, but the remaining part of the sword continued its momentum and flew straight for the elder.

With this blocking his forward momentum, the elder suddenly came to a stop as he heard the ear whistling sound of the sword continue to fly. Staring seriously, he brandished his own sword and slashed out three more times with the flame sword, leaving behind an amazing streak of fire from its path as it struck against the pebbles.

Ordinarily, the pebbles flying straight for the elder would have been so weak that they would have disintegrated into dust. However, because of the azure and violet Sword Qi, the pebbles had been hardened beyond their normal durability. So when they crashed against the elder's sword, several explosions could be heard from the resulting strikes.

By now, the elder's body was like the flame and the pebbles the moths. Under Jian Chen's control, the pebbles struck at the elder in every direction possible.

"Just what is this devilish power?" The elder thought to himself. His entire body was already covered with the fire attributed Saint Force as he continued to swat the pebbles away while trying to find a way out. It was not like he had no desire to strike at Jian Chen, but the azure and violet Sword Qi surrounding the pebbles reinforced them so much that it was just too much for him to deal with. Even with the Saint Force covering his body, it was hard to defend against the strikes. With the constant barrage, just moving was difficult enough.

Clenching both hands in midair, all of the nearby fire elements in the world suddenly congregated within Jian Chen's hands. In a flash, they transformed to become two swords with fire as the blade. Right as they formed, they transformed into a single streak of fire as it shot toward the elder with blinding speed and a fiery heat. The heat had been so intense that the surrounding air had turned pink from the distortion.

Staring seriously at the two blades shooting at him, the elder brought his own sword up and slammed down on the both of

them.

Once more, flames burst out from the explosion and plumes of fire washed over the sky like a series of fireworks. The entire sky was replaced with a sea of flames as they spread from the elder. At this moment, the temperature in the surrounding area had already scaled up to a degree where even the king and the spectators felt as if they were in a steamer basket and were being steamed alive.

Jian Chen's eyes continued to glow resplendently with a divine glow as the wind began to pick up in the area as if a howling storm was approaching. The sounds were like the screams of ghosts and blew the flames that were flying toward Jian Chen back toward the elder's position. In an instant, the elder was concealed by the flames.

Jian Chen knew all too well that a flame of this magnitude would do nothing to a Heaven Saint Master class expert. At best, the elder would be worse for wear, but nothing more. Clutching at the sky once more, another sword of fire formed before flying at the elder's position.

In an instant, the sword disappeared within the sea of flames without a trace. In the next, a fierce explosion could be heard as the flames suddenly blew apart.

A white figure could be seen flying out from the fire—it was the elder. There was no serious damage that could be seen on his body, but he looked disheveled and his breathing was ragged while his clothes were already threatening to tear at the seams. In all, the elder no longer looked as refined and calm as he did before the

fight.

Floating in midair, the elder made no move to attack and instead continued to observe Jian Chen. Jian Chen made no move either, he knew that the elder was only testing for his strength and was not actually fighting to kill him in a do or die match.

The flames quickly receded from the skies, causing the temperature to drop as well. At the same time, the elder had a strange look on his face as if hesitating before finally sighing, “This old man admits his loss!”

Smiling, Jian Chen cupped his hands together, “Senior, you must be joking. This was only a test for my strength, your true strength was not even shown completely. If you were to go all out, the conclusion would have been entirely different.”

The elder waved his hands dismissively, “A loss is a loss. This old man is not someone that cannot accept a loss. Although I did not go all out, the amount of strength you’re holding back would be stronger than mine still.”

Continuing to smile, Jian Chen said no more in opposition to the man and slowly descended to the ground.

The two landed on the ground at the same time in front of the crowd, but not a single voice could be heard. Not even the king nor the relatives of the king dared make a sound and instead chose to look at the handsome face of the youngster in front of them.



Not only was Jian Chen the youngest Heaven Saint Master they knew, but his strength was also beyond anyone's imagination. Even one of the imperial advisors had admitted defeat.

At this moment, everyone felt their own strength completely dominated by Jian Chen. At the age of twenty something, he had already become a Heaven Saint Master. By the age of fifty, or even a hundred, just what realm would he step into?

“Wa, Jian Chen, you are truly amazing to be able to reach the Heaven Saint Master realm.” Suddenly from the crowd, the princess of Funan began to clap and speak her praise.

Princess Qin Shuang and Qin Yubing both looked at Jian Chen with a strange look. Aside from those three, the other rich daughters of the other families all began to stare at Jian Chen with a look of adoration and worship. Some of the daughters had even looked utterly entranced by him.

Although Jian Chen's hair had all been burnt away, he still retained his handsome looks. Combined with his young age, power as a Heaven Saint Master, and the honor given to him by the king, he was the Prince Charming to all of the rich daughters here.

“Hahaha, good, good good! Jian Chen's strength has opened everyone's eyes here. Jian Chen, since you are the friend of Qin Ji, there is no need to see you as an outsider. If this king may, would I be so bold to call you a nephew?” The king laughed merrily.

Qin Ji had a gentle smile on his as he stood behind the king. At

this moment, he could feel a strange feeling of happiness along with some shock. Jian Chen being a Heaven Saint Master was something he was shocked by as well. That was because with Jian Chen's actual age, this was a world shaking revelation.

Accepting the goodwill expressed by the king, Jian Chen accepted this without hesitation. This was something that was more beneficial than harmful so he cupped his hands together, "It would be an honor for this one."

Looking pleased, the king spoke with a great smile, "Now that this battle is finished, let us all go back. Nephew Jian Chen, let us return to the palace." With that, he led Jian Chen with a friendly wave back toward the palace. On the way, he asked about Jian Chen's wellbeing and constantly treated him well.

Hidden within the crowd, Xiao Han could only look at Jian Chen blankly. After a while, his entire face suddenly slackened.

"N... no way! There's no way! Just how... how is he a Heaven Saint Master? This has to be an illusion." Xiao Han sputtered as he muttered to himself, he was just in too much disbelief.

At that moment, the still pale Mu Zhaye walked up to Xiao Han. Seeing the slackened face of surprise, Mu Zhaye sighed with some blame to his voice, "You've offended a person—someone you cannot afford to offend. Even imperial advisor Pu Ta wasn't his opponent; it seems that even your grandfather would not be able to win against him. This won't do, I must report this situation to your grandfather."

Hearing this, Xiao Han's face blanched as he pulled on Mu Zhaye's arm hopefully, "Uncle Mu Zhaye, do you think grandfather will try and get justice for me?"

Hearing this, Mu Zhaye whipped around to look at Xiao Han fiercely, "How could you be so muddle headed? Don't bring up this again and be careful of what you say. Jian Chen is a Heaven Saint Master with unparalleled skill. He has curried favor with His Majesty and wouldn't be threatened by your grandfather at all. If you don't know what it means to repent, then even your grandfather will be hurt by this."

Turning white, Xiao Han asked with a trembling voice, "Uncle Mu Zhaye, what do you think I should do then?"

Sighing, Mu Zhaye spoke, "You should go apologize to Jian Chen. I must report this matter to your grandfather. By the end, I hope we transform this major problem into no problem."

.....

Quickly, everyone returned to the previous palace hall. The king led Jian Chen to the front before sitting on the imperial throne. Ordering the maid to bring a luxurious chair for Jian Chen to sit on, he began to treat him as if Jian Chen was a treasured son.

This conduct toward Jian Chen had not gone unnoticed by the other princes. Each one began to smile and express their goodwill toward him as if it was only right that Jian Chen should have been

treated like this to begin with.

Unable to conceal his glee, the king of the Qinhuang Kingdom looked around before clearing his throat. “Now that everyone is here, your king would like to order a decree. As of now, I appoint Jian Chen to be the Imperial Protector, does anyone object?”

# Chapter 397: Status

---

Unable to conceal his glee, the king of the Qinhuang Kingdom looked around before clearing his throat. “Now that everyone is here, your king would like to order a decree. As of now, I appoint Jian Chen to be the Imperial Protector, does anyone object?”

As the king gave his decree, the entire hall descended into a quiet calm. Each one looked at the king in a mixture of astonishment and disbelief.

An Imperial Protector and Imperial Advisor were two different ranks. An Imperial Protector was higher in power and authority than an Imperial Advisor. An Imperial Protector could mobilize the army at a whim and even order the Imperial Advisors to manage any affair. Another terrifying power that an Imperial Protector had was the ability to behead an incapable ruler or any incompetent official. This was to say that their power was even above that of the nobility of the kingdom.

The king of the Qinhuang Kingdom had seen what potential Jian Chen had, so he appointed him to be the Imperial Protector.

The decree of the king not only stunned the audience, but even Qin Ji who was standing next to him. There was a look of utter shock on his face and a blankness had entered his mind.

Half a moment later, the silence was broken as a white haired elder came forward with his hands cupped together, “You majesty, this cannot do. Jian Chen is deserving of a spot as an Imperial

Advisor, but an Imperial Protector is not appropriate.”

Prime minister Kirill speaks correctly. The title of an Imperial Protector is far too high for a decision to be made this quickly. It would be more proper for Jian Chen to take the title as an Imperial Advisor for now.” Another elder spoke.

“Your Majesty, the title of an Imperial Protector cannot be made too rashly. This should be talked with the entire Imperial Advisors or perhaps even some of the revered Imperial Protectors to see if he is qualified.” Another simply dressed person spoke. This man exuded a large amount of air and was a general that commanded plenty of power himself.

“Your Majesty...”

A countless stream of opposition could be heard from the audience. Although Jian Chen was a genius they had never seen before, the title of an Imperial Protector was truly far too great of a position. Many of the nobles were especially vocal, with Jian Chen’s age, they didn’t dare let him be an Imperial Protector. At the same time, there were also a large amount of supporters of the king.

At that moment, twenty people suddenly appeared in the palace. The majority of them were elders, but some were middle-aged and three were thirty year old women.

These people quietly walked up to the back of the palace without a word or anyone noticing them.

When the king saw the group of people standing behind the crowd, he revealed a small smile, “That’s correct, the title of an Imperial Protector is not something a King could appoint. This power goes to the Imperial Advisors and four Imperial Protectors themselves.” With that, the king stood up from his throne, “With that, I would like to invite the Imperial Advisors to investigate. Does Jian Chen have the ability to be one?”

“I agree to appoint Jian Chen to be an Imperial Protector.” One of the elders spoke out in agreement. Smiling, he cupped his hands together in salute to Jian Chen, “I pay my respects to the Imperial Protector!”

“Your Majesty, with just a few Imperial Advisors agreeing, it will be hard to convince the crowd. If His Majesty wishes for Jian Chen to be an Imperial Protector, then all of us Imperial Advisors need to consent.” An elder spoke.

Smiling, the king replied, “Commander Shu speaks the truth. Now then, Imperial Advisors, what do you think?”

“We all give our consent to allow Jian Chen to be an Imperial Protector!” An elderly voice called out from the back, causing everyone to turn around. When the crowd saw just who these twenty people were, they all looked at them with shocked eyes and open mouths.

Each one of these people held influential positions and were all Imperial Advisors in their own rights. At this current moment, all

of the Imperial Advisors were already gathered here.

The group of twenty Imperial Advisors began to walk forward, the entire crowd splitting apart to form a road for them. In a quick moment, they arrived right in front of Jian Chen before everyone cupped their hands, “We pay our respects to the Imperial Protector!”

At this sight, the king of the Qinhuang Kingdom began to laugh without holding back. On the contrary, the crowd contained to look on in shock as if trying to comprehend what had just happened.

One of the Imperial Advisors spoke out loud, “Everyone doesn’t need to worry. The appointment of Jian Chen to become an Imperial Protector was also approved by the four Imperial Protectors as well. The twenty of us just recently made contact with those four before we gathered here. If anyone has any suspicions, they can go to any of the Imperial Protectors for proof.”

With that, the entire audience began to grow noisy once more.

The Imperial Advisors of the Qinhuang Kingdom were all Heaven Saint Masters, so when they saluted Jian Chen, he was knocked in for a loop. At a loss for what to do, Jian Chen didn’t know what to think—in no time at all, he had been inducted to become one of the Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom.

“Your Majesty, this one’s experience is still quite lacking, I’m



afraid that I may fail to please.” Jian Chen bowed to the king.

Laughing, the king replied, “Nephew Jian Chen, appointing you as the Imperial Protector is something that the four Imperial Protectors have consented to. With this, this king cannot make any decision.”

There was some hesitation on his face, becoming an Imperial Protector for the Qinhuang Kingdom was no small matter. However, because of how fast this situation had developed, Jian Chen had no time to figure the benefits and detriments and could not come to a resolution.

Seeing the look of hesitation on Jian Chen’s face, Qin Ji’s own face had a minute amount of worry to it. He and Jian Chen had only a regular relationship for now, but he was absolutely willing to have Jian Chen be an Imperial Protector since it would be a tremendously good thing for him.

But this expression from Qin Ji had gone unnoticed by Jian Chen since he was currently stuck in a dilemma. Although the title of an Imperial Protector was indeed high, but he didn’t wish to be tied down by it.

The entire palace began to grow in noise as everyone looked toward Jian Chen. Xiao Han on the other hand had gone as white as paper before shaking all over.

The authority of an Imperial Protector far outstripped the powers of his grandfather. It could even be said his grandfather

would be a subordinate to Jian Chen.

Qin Ji's face grew more and more panicked as he feared that Jian Chen would not accept the title of an Imperial Protector. In the end, he couldn't hold it in anymore and spoke, "Jian Chen, being an Imperial Protector of our Qinhuang Kingdom means that you would be able to use the Space Gate of our kingdom without any limitations and our resources. Even your authority would be comparable to the king!"

Upon hearing the ability of being able to use the Space Gate, Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat before he spoke, "Your Majesty, if I were to become an Imperial Protector, would I have to limit my movements?"

"Of course not. Nephew Jian Chen, you will not be limited in your travels as our Imperial Protector. We only wish that in our moment of need, you will come to help us and to not work against us." The king smiled.

With that, Jian Chen came to a conclusion. This was a deal that was almost all benefit with no detriment. With the Qinhuang Kingdom's strength, the chance of it being in danger was practically nil.

With that thought in mind, Jian Chen no longer hesitated and agreed to be an Imperial Protector.

"We pay our respects to the Imperial Protector!"

After Jian Chen's consent, every single person within the audience began to swoop in to give their respects. The title of an Imperial Protector was extremely illustrious and was far more powerful than even the lord and sometimes even the king of the kingdom. With at least half of the Imperial Protectors agreement, a noble could be removed from his position without even the king being able to overturn it or risk a large war.

From this, it could be seen that an Imperial Protector was a powerful entity.

Afterward, the nobles and the Imperial Advisors began to congratulate and pull Jian Chen into their good graces. Although Jian Chen's young age had caused everyone to belittle him at first, his potential was not ignorable to anyone. His future was something no one would be able to predict, and even the four Imperial Protectors were astounded by him.

Jian Chen becoming an Imperial Protector made Qin Ji extremely happy. His smile could illuminate the night and could not be masked.

Jian Chen's appearance had truly taken the spotlight for the events of today. It was originally a day of celebration for the king's 50th birthday, but instead of the king being the main character, the great winds had been stolen by Jian Chen. However, the king wasn't sad in the very least, the smile on his face could not be said to be unhappy at all.

For the king to be able to make a great genius become their Imperial Protector, this was a great honor for the Qinhuang

Kingdom. In the future, it could be possible that the Qinhuang Kingdom would be able to stand alongside the Three Great Empires of the Tian Yuan Continent.

## Chapter 398: A Gorgeous Exit

---

The 50th birthday celebration for the king of the Qinhuang Kingdom quickly came to the end. When the nobles and officials had all bade their farewells to Jian Chen, he immediately went for his own room.

Now that Jian Chen was an Imperial Protector for the Qinhuang Kingdom, his status was far different than from when he first came. He had been given a splendid new palace to live in called the “Qin Heaven Palace”. The Qin Heaven Palace was where only Imperial Protectors were permitted to live in. Not only was it grand in scale, but even the interior furnishing and arrangements were superior to Qin Ji’s Flowing Cloud Palace.

Carrying the still sleeping Heavenly Tiger God, Jian Chen followed the palace maid to the Qin Heaven Palace. Looking all around at the splendor of the palace, Jian Chen was momentarily speechless. The Qin Heaven Palace was so splendid that Jian Chen could swear that he had never seen such a grand palace before.

“Great Imperial Protector, allow this servant to help you bathe and your other needs!” The beautiful maids accompanying Jian Chen spoke with expectant faces. The female maids were all carefully selected by the king and were around the age of twenty as well. Not only were they extremely beautiful, but they were also virgins.

Still looking around the resplendent palace, he waved a hand toward the maids behind him, “You may leave!”

“Great Imperial Master, could it be this servant is not suitable for your needs?” The maids cried out miserably to Jian Chen, their faces were a mixture of desire and misery. Not only was Jian Chen very handsome, but with a glorious title of an Imperial Protector, it would be a great honor to spend time with him.

“You can go, I am not used to being served on. If I have something to ask for, I will call for one of you.” Jian Chen spoke calmly before walking with the tiger cub.

Seeing Jian Chen disappear, all of the carefully selected beautiful women had disappointed looks on their faces and walked out with sorrow seen clearly on their faces.

On the outside of the palace, five hundred armored soldiers stood quietly as if they were statues. With solemn expressions on their faces, they looked extremely impressive as befitting their positions as the guards of an Imperial Protector. To them, this was the greatest honor they could receive, no other guard would be as well respected as them. Aside from the other guards protecting the other Imperial Protectors, no other palace guard could compare to them, or even the army.

All of these palace guards were Great Saint Masters at the very least with five Earth Saint Masters captains led by a Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master. All of this could be said to be Jian Chen’s personal army that served only the Imperial Protector and even the king wouldn’t be able to command them.

The night quickly passed without incident, and by the next morning, one of the palace captain assembled outside, “A report for the Imperial Protector, the third prince wishes to see you!”

Once he had made the leap to become an Imperial Protector, Jian Chen’s status had suddenly surpassed Qin Ji’s own status. Now, if Qin Ji wished to enter the Qin Heaven Palace, he would need to ask for Jian Chen’s permission.

Quickly, Jian Chen walked out to greet Qin Ji and personally led him in. Touched by this gesture, Qin Ji followed Jian Chen in with some joy.

Within the palace, Jian Chen had commanded the servants to move away so the two could have a talk in private. Congratulating Jian Chen on his promotion to become an Imperial Protector, Qin Ji had truly felt happy to see Jian Chen’s status go up.

Talking cordially with Qin Ji, Jian Chen felt that despite the sudden winds of change blowing in his favor, his friendship with Qin Ji should remain unaffected. He should treat him as he had before this, since if it were not for Qin Ji, then Jian Chen wouldn’t have this honor in the first place.

“Jian Chen, now that you are the Imperial Protector of our Qinhuang Kingdom, the Space Gate is open for you to use at any time. However, I hope that you could stay here for a little longer.” Qin Ji smiled.

Jian Chen shook his head gravely, “I’m sorry, but I must hurry

on over. Now that I can use the Space Gate at any time, I must go now. The longer I wait, the more anxious I feel.”

“Jian Chen, could you tell me just what matter has gotten you so anxious? Would I be able to help you in any way?” Qin Ji asked in concern. Now that Jian Chen’s status had changed, he was even more prepared to help him.

Hesitating for a small moment, Jian Chen relented, “My homeland is on the verge of a war, I must hurry on over there or else I’m afraid something terrible may happen.”

Growing serious, Qin Ji asked about the nature of the war and the finer details of the situation. After listening to everything, his face dropped in seriousness and smiled, “A small matter then, with such a small region declaring war, our Qinhuang Kingdom will be able to resolve it without question. Jian Chen, you can mobilize any of the elite masters in our army, do you wish to use them?”

“That won’t be necessary, my homeland is still quite some distance away even after the Space Gate. With my speed, it should take two or three months to arrive, but with an army, the speed would be drastically slower. By the time the army gets there, it would take at least a year.” Jian Chen replied.

“Then take some of the Imperial Advisors at the very least. With your position, you could take all of the Imperial Advisors without opposition or question. Don’t worry, our Qinhuang Kingdom has four unbelievably strong Imperial Protectors to remain here to defend the place without worry.”



Jian Chen hesitated as he listened, he knew that the Gesun Kingdom had a dozen Heaven Saint Masters at the most, and the other four Great Kingdoms had at least twenty-three of them. This difference in strength was far too great.

Seeing the look of hesitation on Jian Chen's face, Qin Ji knew of the conundrum within his mind. Encouraging him, Qin Ji spoke, "Jian Chen, don't hesitate and don't forget your power, you have the authority to mobilize such a force."

After some consideration, Jian Chen had finally consented to Qin Ji's proposal. For the sake of insurance, Jin Chen would bring some of the Imperial Advisors with him.

"Jian Chen, you need not worry about the limits. With your command, you needn't even report this to the king personally. Have the palace guards gather some of the Imperial Advisors and convene here." Qin Ji spoke since he knew Jian Chen wasn't as knowledgeable about his newfound authority yet.

Afterward, Jian Chen had followed Qin Ji's proposal and had the palace guards gather up the Imperial Advisors. In a flash, twenty varying aged Imperial Advisors had convened at the Qin Heaven Palace. Although Jian Chen was quite young, his strength had already earned the respect of all the Imperial Advisors. Despite the position between them and Jian Chen wasn't too far apart, they wished to become friends with Jian Chen. In their hearts, they knew that not only was Jian Chen accepted by the four Imperial Protectors, Jian Chen would sooner or later step into the realm of the Saint Rulers and even the Saint King realm. By then, they

would want to be in his good graces, so this was the time to increase their connections.

Once Jian Chen had explained his reason and plan to the twenty Imperial Advisors, each one of them had readily agreed to go with him. Seeing just how enthusiastic they were in replying, Jian Chen had doubted the space in power between an Imperial Advisor and Imperial Protector. In fact, he had begun to question whether or not if it was him being asked for help from the Imperial Advisors instead.

Just then, a refined looking elder walked forward with his hands cupped in salute, “Great Imperial Protector, this one is Xiao Tian, the grandfather of Xiao Han. I’ve heard yesterday that my dunce grandchild has offended you, I can only hope that you will forgive my unworthy grandchild. I’ve already taught him a lesson and locked him in as punishment. This journey with you will serve as a part my atonement for my grandchild. I hope that you will forgive him.”

Jian Chen looked at Xiao Tian as if to study him. Xiao Tian was wearing a white robe in a refined manner and his white hair was tied up around his head. There was a heroic spirit to him, and justice could easily be used to describe his aura.

“Is this the Fifth Cycle Heaven Saint Master Qin Ji told me about?” Jian Chen thought. Knowing who Xiao Tian was was completely different from actually meeting him. After seeing him just once however, Jian Chen had a feeling that Xiao Tian was an extremely righteous person.

This type of open and straightforward person was a clear cut contrast to his grandchild Xiao Han.

After some quick thinking, Jian Chen cupped his hands with a smile, “Mister Xiao Han, you must be joking. The matter with your grandchild I have already forgotten about. If mister Xiao Han wishes to come with me, then I have no objections. Nonetheless, I am grateful for your support.”

Smiling widely, Xiao Tian spoke, “You are too modest, to be able to accompany an Imperial Protector is a great honor to me.”

Then after selecting the four strongest and most reliable individuals, he began to prepare to leave for the Gesun Kingdom from the Qin Heaven palace and soon headed toward the Space Gate with Qin Ji leading the way.

Leading the five Imperial Advisors with Xiao Tian as the strongest one there, the other four Imperial Advisors were two Fourth Cycles and two Third Cycle Heaven Saint Masters. Although they weren’t the strongest of the Imperial Advisors, Jian Chen had faith in them.

The Space Gate was in the center of the palace, and with Jian Chen’s status, he didn’t require notifying anyone before using it. Taking the five Imperial Advisors to it, he handed several Class 5 Monster Cores and began to locate the desired destination. Then, in a single line, they crossed through the Space Gate.

# Chapter 399: Return Of A King

---

In a single stride, Jian Chen traveled countless of miles away from the Qinhuang Kingdom. For the five Imperial Advisors, they had traveled into a strange new area.

The Space Gate they had traveled from slowly disappeared from view as Jian Chen took the tiger cub ahead and started to scout the area out. No matter where he turned his head to, he could see no signs of plant life or anything else, the entire place was a barren land.

“Great Imperial Protector, where is this place?” One of the Imperial Advisors spoke with a questioning look as if trying to figure out what place this was.

“Qing Shaofan, you should stay behind the Imperial Protector and speak less rubbish.” Another Imperial Advisor spoke.

Forcing out a smile, Qing Shaofan laughed in embarrassment, “I’m just very curious.”

From the five Imperial Advisors that followed Jian Chen, there was Xiao Tian, Qing Shaofan, Dongyi Junbai, Cao Keqin, and Tian Luo. Two of the elders were Qing Shaofan and Dongyi Junbai who were both Fourth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters. Cao Keqin and Tian Luo were both Third Cycle Heaven Saint Masters, but all five of these men were already over a hundred years old.

It was at this moment the tiger cub had suddenly awoke by

opening its bright eyes in curiosity at the strange new place it was in.

Taking notice of the cub, Jian Chen placed it on the ground. The cub was already decently big and was already the size of a mature dog. By this point, it wasn't suitable for the tiger to be around Jian Chen's chest.

On the ground, the tiger cub started to run around merrily while everyone watched it revolve in a circle. From time to time, it would sniff each one of the five Imperial Advisors.

Taking out a map from his Space Ring, Jian Chen scoured over it before looking dejected as he glanced around. "I don't have a map of this area, so I have no idea where we are. Let us find a nearby road." Jian Chen didn't have the most accurate coordinates of the Gesun Kingdom, so the Space Gate had only sent them to an approximate area near it. Right now, Jian Chen didn't even know if he was in the Gesun Kingdom or not.

Qing Shaofan cupped his hands together, "Then please guide us well, Imperial Protector."

"Well then, let's leave this place." Jian Chen waved his hand, causing a large bubble of wind to envelop the tiger cub and levitated it into the air.

"Mrrr... mrrrrr..." The cub began to growl in discontent as it flew into the air. It was as if it wanted to be held by Jian Chen instead. Both of its eyes looked pitifully toward Jian Chen as tears

began to well up in them.

“Haha, Imperial Protector, this magical beast of yours is quite intelligent. It has to be a high leveled magical beast.” Qing Shaofan spoke.

Laughing, Jian Chen chose not to explain anything and instead patted the cub’s head with his hand. “You’ve grown far too big for me to carry anymore, allow me to bring you through the air with my wind element instead. Don’t worry, I won’t let you fall.”

As if the tiger cub understood Jian Chen’s words, it continued to shake its head as tears continued to roll down its face as if wanting to be put down on the ground. In the next moment, its entire body began to shrink at a rapid pace before turning into the size of a tiny cat. It looked adorable.

“Eh? This magical beast can manipulate its body size? How extraordinary.” One of the five Imperial Advisors looked beyond surprised at the cub.

Even Jian Chen had a surprised look on his face, but he knew of the tigers identity already and so he quickly calmed down. Shooting a glance at the five Imperial Advisors to his side, he smiled, “This white tiger is vastly different from the other ones, being able to change its body size is its innate ability.”

“That sounds about right. This tiger like magical beast even has wings on its back. This must be a Variant. Some of the magical beast Variants have unknown abilities that can allow a good

amount of the magical beasts to be able to transform their body.” Dongyi Junbai spoke up. He was the oldest out of everyone here and so his experience wasn’t lacking.

After that, no one had bothered to investigate the tiger’s identity, allowing Jian Chen to breathe out a breath in relief. Holding the tiger to his chest, Jian Chen began to fly through the air.

An hour later, the group of travelers had already flew for a long distance. At this moment, a tiny city suddenly came into view.

With his eyes shining brightly, Jian Chen hastened his way over there with the group of men behind him shooting along into the city with him.

This was a Second Class City so it wasn’t too large. The moment Jian Chen walked in with the other five Imperial Advisors, the cat sized tiger c\*cked its head all around as it took in the sights.

Walking into the largest store in the city, Jian Chen bought the most expansive and detailed map of the surrounding area. In a quick moment, he had located the coordinates of the Gesun Kingdom in comparison to where he was. Right now, there was 15,000 kilometers of distance to travel and two kingdoms to go through.

“Shopkeeper, might I ask, do you know if there is a war or anything happening within the Gesun Kingdom?” Jian Chen asked.

“The current state of the Gesun Kingdom is a mystery to me since it’s too far away. However, some news did travel here that a war had broken out three months ago. I believe there were four kingdoms that united against the Gesun Kingdom, ai, that kingdom is finished.” The shopkeeper sighed.

Paling, Jian Chen quickly tossed a purple coin onto the table and walked out with the map. After distinguishing the way, Jian Chen flew into the air in the direction of the Gesun Kingdom.

Straight away, the five other Imperial Advisors flew into the air in pursuit, leaving the rest of the streets in silent awe at the six figures. In half a day, the entire streets exploded with gossip relating to them.

Within a Second Class City, an Earth Saint Master was already hard to spot, but a single Heaven Saint Master was even more rare. With six of them suddenly appearing out of nowhere, it would lead to a huge uproar for everyone.

For the rest of the day and night, Jian Chen continued to fly without stopping. Finally on the morning of the second day, they finally arrived at the bordering kingdom of Qiangnan Kingdom’s stronghold, stopping there in order to obtain some information. He had to make sure of the current state of affairs and make a contingency plan.



# Chapter 400: Seething Anger

---

During the peak hours to eat breakfast, Jian Chen had taken the tiger cub and the five Imperial Advisors from the Qinhuang Kingdom into the best restaurant in a city. The six men crowded around a table and began to enjoy the best meals the place had to offer.

The tiger cub on the other hand, was voraciously eating a special plate of delicious smelling barbequed beef. With a content purr, it continued to swallow the pieces of meat one after another while the rest of the inn gave the table a strange look.

Jian Chen sat at the table and listened around for the nearby chatter without eating a bite.

The Qiang Kingdom was especially close to the Gesun Kingdom so Jian Chen was able to make discreet inquiries about the current state of the Gesun Kingdom. As for information that was spread by mercenaries, the information they told would be both fast in spreading and reliable in truth.

“The Gesun Kingdom is done for. The four kingdoms combined have well over two million people at the moment while the Gesun Kingdom has only several hundred thousands men. How could they stop that?”

“The Gesun Kingdom has the most fertile territory out of every kingdom nearby, so the other kingdoms have long since been eyeing it like candy.”

“Right now, the Gesun Kingdom is relying on the strongholds to buy them some time, but their army will break down after some time. I heard that the Gesun Kingdom had originally six million people, but now they were below a million. By now, the kingdom surely must be recruiting soldiers in a frenzy.”

“There’s only two hundred Middle Tier Magical Crystal Cannons supporting them, but their supply of monster cores are already at an all time low. Even the national treasury is nearly empty so the major and minor powers of the kingdom are supplying the monster cores.”

“Half a month ago ten of the cannons had exploded after being used too frequently. I heard they had blown up one stronghold and caused thousands to die.”

“The difference between the Gesun Kingdom and the four allied kingdoms is far too much. Even if they were to convene all the soldiers and employ mercenaries, their fighting power wouldn’t exceed three million. The four allied kingdoms have well over triple that amount if they wanted to. Furthermore, the Gesun Kingdom doesn’t have half the amount of experts the other side has, this time, the Gesun Kingdom will fall.”

“I’ve heard that two Heaven Saint Masters from the Gesun Kingdom have already died and another three sustained serious injuries. The four allied kingdoms on the other hand, have a single Heaven Saint Master on the verge of dying. But rumors say a Radiant Saint Master brought him back to full health and healed the others, that means they suffered virtually no damages.”

After hearing these bits of information, Jian Chen grew even more pale in the face. Although things had not yet reached the worst case scenario, the situation was looking bleak for the entire kingdom with the difference in military might.

“You guys won’t know this but three days ago, I came back from the Yanyan Kingdom. From there, I heard rumors about a terrifying Heaven Saint Master from the Gesun Kingdom. Going against six other Heaven Saint Masters by himself and sustaining serious injuries, he used some sort of supernatural Heaven Tier Battle Skill to kill two of the Heaven Saint Masters and heavily injuring another three. The remaining survivors lost their courage and fled from him!”

“Ah, I heard about that too. People say that even among the Gesun Kingdom, he was a Heaven Saint Master that was extremely low profiled. Not being counted in the top ten experts and with even fewer people knowing his existence, it is only now that people have started to notice him. I think his name is...Chang Wuji?”

Then, another one of the travel weary mercenaries spoke out to the previous person that spoke, “So what? That Chang Wuji must be an expert at the very pinnacle of his realm, otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to employ such a strength. Let me tell you an even more shocking piece of information. From the battle three days ago, an Earth Saint Master was able to severely injure one of the Heaven Saint Masters from the Blue Wind Kingdom.”

“Impossible, just how could an Earth Saint Master be a match for

a Heaven Saint Master?”

“I don’t believe it, why don’t you go and trick a demon before trying us?”

The entire inn began to burst into chatter without anyone believing what the mercenary had said.

“Ha, I wouldn’t lie. They say that the Earth Saint Master used some sort of Heaven Tier Battle Skill and heavily injured the Heaven Saint Master. If not for the intervention of another Heaven Saint Master, the Earth Saint Master would have killed the Heaven Saint Master. Tsk tsk, that battlefield was a spectacular sight. When a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was used, the sky would turn a different color and black clouds would roll in. With the sands and stones flying through the air, it would be difficult to see anything and hear nothing but the Earth Saint Master using his Heaven Tier Battle Skill. Each time he did, the earth shook, including the Gesun Kingdom’s stronghold. At that point, everyone had been scared witless.”

“No wonder I felt something was amiss three days ago, but could this really be true? That’d be terrifying! The Gesun Kingdom’s stronghold is only a thousand kilometers away from this place, that’s not far away at all.”

“For the tremors caused by a Heaven Tier Battle Skill to be felt here? That’s impossible.”

The man continued to speak, “That’s not all. People say that this

Earth Saint Master was a wind attributed Saint Force user with an impeccably fast speed. Even after contending with the Heaven Saint Master for half the day, the two Heaven Saint Masters did not manage to chase him down and kill him.”

“That’s pretty amazing, is he even an Earth Saint Master?”

Several people from the inn began to murmur in surprise at this supposed Earth Saint Master’s strength.

Hearing this, Jian Chen had a slight smile on his face, he had already guessed that this speed could only belong to the Heaven Tier Battle Skill wielder Ming Dong who was also an Earth Saint Master.

But the man hadn’t finished saying all that he knew on the subject. “The fall of two Heaven Saint Masters hadn’t gone unnoticed by the four allied kingdoms. Two days later, the four kingdoms employed two million soldiers to the northern stronghold to engage in a day and night battle. The sounds of the war had deafened the ears of everyone and the blood of the fallen dyed the ground a permanent red with the bodies stacked up on top of a mountain. By that point, the northern stronghold of the Gesun Kingdom could not longer keep up with the battle. Even the reinforced tempered steel gate had been broken down with both sides nursing heavy losses. I heard a Heaven Saint Master from the Pingyang Kingdom had even captured a high ranking officer. Cutting off both arms and legs, the Pingyang Kingdom then had him strung up on top of the walls of the Pingyang Kingdom’s stronghold.”

“How savage! Did the Pingyang Kingdom have some sort of intense grudge with that officer? Even with the advantage they had, did they have to act in such a manner?”

“For both his arms and legs to be severed, that person must be an illustrious general then.”

The inn started to chatter once more with this new piece of information with an interested fervor.

Smiling, the man shook his head, “You guess wrongly. That person was no illustrious general, he was just some nobody called Changyang Hu, I believe. He was merely just a frontline commander.”

Seated from not too far away, Jian Chen’s entire body froze up as his face suddenly turned pale to a terrifying degree. In an instant, he had disappeared and reappeared right in front of the man who spoke. Both of his hands grabbed onto the clothes of the speaker and lifted him straight out of his stool as Jian Chen thundered, “What did you just say? Who was the person that had their limbs amputated and strung up on the walls?” Jian Chen’s eyes grew extremely red and a killing intent could be felt from him.

“Bastard, are you trying to die?!” The elder exploded in rage as he grabbed at Jian Chen’s neck with his own hands.

“Speak!” Jian Chen roared like how a furious lion would. His voice had caused the entire inn to shake as his eyes grew even colder. The spark in his eyes was almost like a sharp sword that

could pierce into the man's own eyes, terrifying him so much he couldn't look at Jian Chen directly.

At the same time, an extremely formidable amount of killing intent exuded from Jian Chen's body, causing everyone in the inn to feel like they had been dropped into a vat of icy cold water, chilling them down to their very bones.

The previously noisy inn had instantly turned quiet. Everyone's eyes turned toward the furious Jian Chen with their bodies trembling in fear. Not a single one of them had dared to move since from the youngster's aura, they could all feel a terrifying amount of power within him.

Even the man that Jian Chen had grabbed hold of had been stunned into silence. Without another outburst, his face had turned pale and his entire body began to tremble fiercely. Jian Chen's entire killing aura had covered the place, but it had affected him the most. With the aura, the man felt himself unable to breathe and slowly suffocating to death.

"D... don't... don't kill me. Wh... what di... did you want to know? I... I... I've... I've already said everything... I know..." The man stuttered in fear. By now, he had begun to treat Jian Chen as a terrifying death god that caused even his soul to quake.

Jian Chen's eyes grew in ferocity as he stared at the man with unconcealed bloodlust. "Who had his arms and legs amputated before being strung up on the wall? You better not lie to me, or I'll let you die a pauper's death." With his last sentence, Jian Chen's words had already devolved into a primal growl that combined

scarily with his bloodshot eyes.

“I... I said... tha... that person was... Changyang... Changyang Hu. He... he was captured by a Heaven... Heaven Saint Master in the Pingyang Kingdom. Al... All four limbs were cut... cut off... and then... and then strung up on the wall... for an entire da... day.” The man stammered.